

THE PASTOR'S MANUAL

By
Gwin Turner
&
Norma Turner

**Bible quotations are from both
The King James Version, marked (KJV)
and *The Heritage Bible*, marked HB.**

**The Cathedral University Publishers
5918 Shenandoah Avenue
Los Angeles, California 90056, USA**

**International Copyright 2001
By Gwin and Norma Turner
The Cathedral University For Pastors
Los Angeles, California, USA**

See page 446 for instructions on how to receive a **Certificate of Pastoral Ministry** when you complete the *Pastor's Manual*.

2 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

**International Copyright 2001
All rights reserved
By Gwin and Norma Turner
The Cathedral University For Pastors
Los Angeles, California, USA**

We dedicate

The Pastor's Manual to:

the faithful members of *The Marina Cathedral* who have received our teaching, ministry, and leadership, and who have shared in this great calling to bless the pastors and wives of the body of Christ around the world, and to:

Pastor and Madam Roi Savaiinaea, ministers of *The Marina Cathedral*, serving in Haiti, West Indies, to train pastors in *The Cathedral University For Pastors*.

To the glory of God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, our Savior.

Amen!

4 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

An Honest and Sincere Pledge:

“I pledge myself, as honestly and sincerely as I know how to diligently study each chapter, and do my very best to master the principles taught in The Pastor’s Manual. I want to be the very best pastor I can be for our Lord.”

Signature and Date

Special Note on your use of *The Pastor's Manual*.

Not only is *The Pastor's Manual* written to build faith, knowledge, wisdom, and love into the pastor, you can take the truths that are written in it, and simply change the application to the believers, and preach these messages to your people. Practically every paragraph is so referenced to the Bible that you can make a full message out of each paragraph. By using *The Pastor's Manual* in this way it will furnish you a guide for years and years of preaching. For example you can take the following paragraph, and preach one or more full length messages on the outline in this paragraph:

Jesus defeated the devil in the Temptation [Matthew 4:1-11], in His life [John 14:30], and in His death on the cross [Revelation 1:18]. When He rose from the dead, and ascended to the right hand of the Father, He stripped the demons of their power [Colossians 2:14-15]. In His death and resurrection Jesus forever destroyed the devil's power over us [Hebrews 2:14-15]. He gave this authority over the devil to His disciples when He was here in earth, and we still have that authority today [Luke 10:17-21]. When we resist the devil he has to flee from us [James 4:7].

You can give the message the title, **Jesus' Defeat Of The Devil**, and you have the points listed in the rest of the paragraph. This is only one example of what is found on almost every page in this *Manual*.

SPECIAL NOTE: My wife and I wrote this Manual. Therefore we know it better than anyone else. Yet it is so packed with Bible truth and inspiration that I read it regularly to build up myself, and cause these truths to be fruitful in my life. You cannot read these messages too often. The more I read them the more powerful their truth becomes inside of me.

See page 446 for instructions on how to receive a Certificate of Pastoral Ministry for completing the Pastor's Manual.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

The Dedication.....	3
An Honest and Sincere Pledge.....	4
A Special Note on the Use of <i>The Pastor's Manual</i>	5
Love and Harmony In the Body of Christ.....	8
Introduction.....	9
Special Message To The Pastor.....	14
<u>Section One – Your Goals.....</u>	15
1. Goals For God's Pastors.....	16
<u>Section Two – Your Calling.....</u>	27
2. My Personal Testimony, Gwin Turner	27
3. My Personal Testimony, Norma Turner.....	38
4. You must know that you have been born from above.....	44
5. God's call on your life.....	55
6. The requirements for pastors and assistants.....	62
7. The downfall of preachers - Sex and Money.....	84
8. The Greatest Pastor in the World.....	87
<u>Section Three – Your Education.....</u>	97
9. God's Call to Excellence.....	97
<u>Section Four - Your Character.....</u>	113
10. The Blood of Jesus has delivered my entire life.....	114
11. I Am Righteous in Christ.....	119
12. The Crucifixion of the Soul Life.....	141
13. Receiving the Mind of Christ	151
14. What to do when your faith seems weak.....	164
15. The man in charge.....	179
<u>Section Five - Receiving God's Direction.....</u>	191
16. The importance of reading the Bible.....	193
17. Hearing God's voice.....	201
18. How to receive and fulfill God's visions and dreams.....	205
19. The principles of logos and rhema.....	218

Section Six – Your Warfare.....	230
20. The battle for planet earth.....	231
21. Exercising delegated authority.....	243
22. Spiritual Warfare.....	252
23. The power of the Holy Spirit.....	260
24. How to pray.....	265
25. The principles of early morning prayer.....	273
26. Angels are our servants.....	281
27. Heaven on earth established in my domain.....	284
Section Seven - Your Words.....	295
28. The power of the spoken word.....	296
29. Speak to your need.....	309
30. Predicting your future with the promises of God.....	319
31. Five steps to power.....	322
Section Eight -Your Prosperity.....	333
32. God wants you to prosper.....	335
33. God is my source.....	350
34. Pastor, you must tithe if you expect God to bless you.....	362
Section Nine Your Ministry.....	364
35. Exercising spiritual gifts.....	365
36. How to receive God's messages from week to week.....	377
37. Do the work of an evangelist.....	384
38. Minister healing to the sick.....	389
39. A Marriage Ceremony.....	392
40. A Baby Dedication Prayer.....	399
41. A Funeral Message.....	401
42. Baptism and the Lord's Supper.....	410
43. Leadership, Doctrine, and Control.....	415
44. Unity in the body of Christ.....	418
Section Ten - Your Attitude.....	420
45. Seedtime and harvest.....	421
46. Listening to the right headlines.....	435
Certificate of Pastoral Ministry Request.....	446

Love And Harmony In The Body Of Christ Fulfilling The Prayer of Jesus That We Be One!

The Great Commission has been so extremely important to us all of our lives. We knew that the last command Jesus gave was for us to go into all the world and make disciples of all people. We knew that His last promise was to send the Holy Spirit.

After many years of our ministry, the Holy Spirit convicted us that the Lord wants John 17 fulfilled more than anything else. He prayed that all that the Father had given Him would receive eternal life and be one with the Father, with Himself, and with one another. He prayed that people be won to love, harmony, and unity in the body of Christ.

Why has the body of Christ almost everywhere failed to give attention to what Jesus prayed for? Why have we preachers neglected the one thing Jesus asked the Father and us to do? Why have we ignored the one long prayer that the Holy Spirit caused the Apostle to record for us? Why have most Christians been more interested in making disciples for themselves, instead of making disciples for Jesus?

God convicted our hearts that we have neglected the one thing the Lord desired more than anything else - eternal life with love and harmony in the body of Christ. We have determined that we will do everything we possibly can to win people to JESUS, and to love, to harmony, and to unity in the body of Christ.

Introduction

The Pastor's Manual is about faith and attitude. The main purpose God laid upon our hearts was to give you the faith way of thinking, speaking, and doing. Jesus declared very plainly that all things are possible to him who believes. The weakness of our flesh fights our faith constantly. The devil fights our faith every day. The world of unbelievers, and even the traditions of Christians fight our faith every day of our lives.

The thing that determines everything in your life is your philosophy - the way you think, your attitude, your faith. *The Pastor's Manual* is to help establish in you what we perceive to be the biblical way of thinking. Your words flow from your thinking, and your deeds flow from your words. You must get God's way of thinking from His Word.

We have furnished to you a *Manual* that will establish within your heart the faith way of thinking if you will only receive it. The world, the flesh, and the devil will fight you every step of the way. You will be tempted again and again to surrender to defeat. Even your friends will tell you that you really cannot expect faith in the Word of God to work for you. Please believe Jesus. All things are possible to him who believes, and it definitely will be unto you according to your faith.

Make an honest and sincere pledge to do everything you can to master every lesson in this *Manual*. We do not require you to commit yourself to believe and practice everything in this *Manual*. You cannot commit yourself to believe and practice something before you have read it and know what it is. No one can do that. I would never commit myself to believe and practice a book before I read it, and knew it was the right thing to do. We asked you to commit yourself to study and master each lesson to know what is in it. After you have diligently studied each lesson, and prayed over it, God will show you in your heart if it is true or not.

Sinful Human Nature Fights Faith

No one can receive anything unless it is given to him from heaven. The religious leaders of Jesus' day read the same Bible that you and I read today, Genesis to Malachi. Yet when Jesus came, they hated Him, and crucified Him. After He rose from the dead the majority still did not believe Him, even though they continued to read that same Bible. This proves that many people read the Bible, and do not understand it. Jesus lived the Bible in front of their eyes, and yet they could not see it nor under-

10 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

stand it. They fought Him every step of the way. He was the living Bible walking in front of their eyes, word for word, and yet they could not recognize Him. They were very religious, but spiritually blind. There are many religious people in the same condition today. This ought to tell you that your flesh apart from Holy Spirit-given revelation cannot understand the Bible.

Often you will have to close your mind to the opinions of those around you. Do not isolate yourself from the good people around you, but do not allow good friends to stop you from believing what the Bible says. Just love them. Ignore their opinions that are contrary to the Bible. Continue to obey the Word of God.

Some Guidelines On How To Use The Pastor's Manual

Please value *The Pastor's Manual* very highly. We do not ask you to do this because we wrote it. Our fame or recognition are of no importance whatever. We ask you to value it highly because the truths in this *Manual* will bring great deliverance and blessing to the body of Christ and to you personally. What we have placed in these lessons are the clear statements of Holy Scripture.

Also, what we have included are the precious lessons God has taught us in over fifty years of ministry. These are not lessons quickly written by novices. These are lessons that were given to us over many years of God-given experience and through fires of testing. You can avoid many heartaches and defeats if you will only faithfully follow these lessons on faith.

1. Study the lessons in the order that the Holy Spirit leads you.

We have arranged *The Pastor's Manual* in the order that seems right to us. If you can study straight through it, we believe you will understand it better, but we also know that you cannot receive a truth until you are prepared for it. You may not be able to receive certain lessons into your thinking at first because you are not ready for them, whereas you can receive other lessons with no problem because your heart is already prepared.

Therefore, study the lessons that speak to your heart now. If you have difficulty understanding a lesson, or you are unable yet to believe it is true, just let that lesson wait. Study the lessons that speak to your heart now, and study the difficult ones in the months ahead when you are more prepared to receive them.

2. Spend much time reading the Bible as you study each lesson.

The Pastor's Manual is a good and godly book, but the Bible is **THE BOOK** that will change your life. If you study *The Pastor's Manual*, and it does not lead you to master the Bible, we will have failed in our purpose. Our purpose in *The Pastor's Manual* is to lead every pastor to follow God absolutely, and not be controlled by the traditions of men. If you take *The Pastor's Manual* as your guide, and fail to make **the Bible the Number One Authority in your life**, you have done exactly opposite to what we intended. Therefore, use *The Pastor's Manual* to motivate you and give you guidance in how to study the Bible, but make **the Bible the Number One Book in your life**. Study it and obey it day and night. Master the thoughts in each chapter, then study the Bible references to prove the truths to your own heart, as well as go on to discover truths that we have not mentioned.

3. Study each lesson over and over until you know that lesson by memory.

There are many ways to study and master truth. You may want to read through the entire *Manual*, chapter after chapter, until you have read it all as rapidly as you can. This is fine, but realize that you must go back and study each chapter slowly and thoroughly for many days. No one can absorb all that is in one of these chapters in one day's reading. You will need to study each chapter thoroughly. You need to read all the verses referred to in the Bible. You need to spend time praying over each chapter, asking God to help you understand it and make it real to you. In many instances you will need to memorize the outline of each chapter so it will become a permanent part of your thinking. Every chapter is filled with eternal principles that will grow in your knowledge and experience over the years.

4. If you have a tape recorder, record a chapter, and listen to it.

Listen to it until you have it permanently recorded in your own heart. Listen to the same chapter over and over. Nothing is learned until you can remember it and use it automatically any time you need it. The Holy Spirit cannot use knowledge in you until that knowledge is thoroughly established in your mind. Once your mind has thoroughly received it, it can get down into your spirit. Then the Holy Spirit can begin to make it real in your life. Use your tape recorder to saturate yourself with it. Remember, thinking and attitude determine everything in your life.

As you
**KEEP THE GATE TO YOUR HEART,
SO ARE YOU.**

5. Receive *The Pastor's Manual* as a guide to a lifetime of education.

Please do not race through the *Manual*, and then lay it aside. The *Manual* does not contain everything you will need to know. Only the Bible contains everything you will ever need to know, but the *Manual* contains essential lessons it will take years for you to learn.

Many people read a good book, they are excited about it at the time, but then they lay it aside. The book never did them any permanent good, because they considered that they had read it, and that was that. You need to adopt a program of spiritual development, and systematically follow that program over the years. *The Pastor's Manual* is a good spiritual development program that will benefit you year after year if you will continue to learn and re-learn its truths over the years.

Make for yourself a plan to study certain chapters over the next weeks, then other chapters after that, until you have gone through the entire *Manual* in a year. Then the next year start over. Each year you can adopt a different plan of study, but you need to study *The Pastor's Manual* and use it as a guide and motivation to your Bible study and ministry for the rest of your life.

6. Consciously and deliberately adopt the principles of logos and rhema to practice for the rest of your life. [Logos and rhema are explained in chapter 19.]

Choose a chapter that the Holy Spirit wants to make real in your life now. Begin the **Intellectual Process**. Read and study that chapter until you are mentally acquainted with it. Be sure you understand what the lesson teaches.

Then start the **Saturation Process**. Read it again and again. Read every reference in your Bible used in that chapter. Listen to it on your tape recorder. Pray over it and meditate on it in your prayer time. Read other Bible verses on that subject that you find in your Bible study.

Then believe God for the **Revelation Process**. Expect God to make it real in your spirit. Exercise faith that He will fulfill the truths in that lesson in your life. Thank Him constantly that He has made the truth of this lesson real in your life. Tell

others that God is making this truth real in you.

7. Believe God.

Jesus constantly rebuked the disciples for not believing God as they should. Without faith it is impossible to please God. Unless you use the faith the Lord has given you, you are sinning. Whatever is not of faith is sin. We must be filled with faith and love. Faith works by love. The more you are filled with the love of God, the more you can exercise your faith.

The Pastor's Manual is a book to help instill in you the great faith of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. God bless you.

Gwin and Norma Turner
Los Angeles, California USA

“I want to be the best pastor I can be for Him!”

SPECIAL MESSAGE TO THE PASTOR

Dear Pastor,

The following messages are designed by the Lord for you personally, to help you in your personal relationship with God, yourself, your family, your congregation, and to everyone else in this world.

Once you have digested these messages for yourself, you can change the wording slightly, and they are messages that every person in your congregation needs. Here are some forty plus lengthy messages that would take you one to five years to preach to your congregation. Of course you must ask the Holy Spirit what you are to preach, and when, and follow His leadership, but here is a source for message material that is the best teaching that anyone has anywhere. I know because I preached everyone of these messages to my congregation over more than fifty years.

I simply call this to your attention for your prayerful consideration.

Section One – Your Goals

This first section includes only one message, and that message sets forth the basic goals of a good pastor.

God wants you to equip yourself to be the very best pastor you can be for His glory. You must win souls to Jesus, and you must care for those souls in your church. You are not only responsible for your local church, God requires you to build up the body of Christ everywhere. To do that you must build up yourself in love and faith, and have the mighty outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon your life and ministry constantly.

God gave us *The Pastor's Manual* to bless and help every pastor everywhere in every language who is willing to be blessed by it. If you use it to serve the Lord Christ and His people, we shall forever be grateful to God. Our rewards will be overflowing when we see the whole body of Christ come to that perfect unity for which Jesus prayed in John 17, and which Saint Paul saw in Ephesians 4:8-16.

Chapter 1

GOALS for GOD'S PASTORS

The Pastor's Manual is a special manual for pastors. We ask you to use *The Pastor's Manual* in whatever way God leads you.

Here are some goals that are set forth in the Bible as priorities for God's pastors.

OUTLINE OF THIS MESSAGE

- 1. Equip yourself to be the very best pastor you can possibly be.**
- 2. Win people to Jesus Christ.**
- 3. Care for God's sheep in your local church.**
- 4. Build up the body of Christ everywhere in love and harmony.**
- 5. Develop yourself in love and faith.**
- 6. Have the constant outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon your ministry.**

We do not ask you to join our organization. We have no organization for you to join. We are a local church. I am the Pastor. Jesus loved His church, and gave Himself for it. That is what we are doing. That is what God wants you to do. God has put it in our hearts to help equip you to be the very best pastor you can be. Jesus loved the church, and gave Himself to sanctify and cleanse the church, and to present it to Himself a glorious church, without spot or wrinkle. He is coming soon.

We are helping you prepare His church for His Second Coming. Please receive *The Pastor's Manual* in a genuine, unselfish Christian love.

- 1. Equip yourself to be the very best Pastor you can possibly be.**

2 Tim 3:16-17

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.
(KJV)

2 Timothy 3:16-17. HB

16 All Scripture is God-breathed, and is profitable for teaching, for conviction, for setting upright, for child training in righteousness,

17 That the man of God may be fresh, thoroughly furnished for all good works.

God loves you. You are special to God. In His all wise love, He has called you to be a pastor. You must not be simply a **wage earner** (John 10:12-13). You must not value yourself so cheaply that you can be bought with money. Yes, you need money. God wants you to have money, but you must not compromise for money. You must not be led by money. You must be led by God.

**You have been bought by the
blood of Jesus.**

1 Pet 1:18-20

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you, (KJV)

1 Peter 1:18-20 HB

18 Seeing that you were absolutely not redeemed with decaying things, silver or gold, out of your empty behavior received by tradition from your fathers,

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb unblemished and unspotted,

20 Who truly was foreknown before the foundation of the world, and was manifest in these last times because of you,

Your calling is too high and too holy to be controlled by lust for money. You are equipping yourself to exercise the highest and holiest call of all - to be a minister of the most High God. You are called to be a shepherd of God's sheep. You are called to

18 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

serve under the Great Shepherd, the Lord Jesus. You must not offer Him less than your best.

You must walk with the Great Shepherd. You must watch the Great Shepherd, and listen to the Great Shepherd. You must love and care for the sheep exactly as the Great Shepherd. You must become the best under-Shepherd you possibly can become. He gave His life for you. He honored you by calling you to become a pastor. You must equip yourself the very best you can. Use *The Pastor's Manual* to help you get into the Word of God. You must become the very best pastor you can be for the Lord.

Do not compete with other pastors. Do not be jealous of other pastors. Do not let yourself think, "I am better than other pastors, "or," I am not as good as other pastors." You must say, "God has called me to be the best pastor I can be for Him. I will learn from other pastors. I will love all of God's pastors. I will encourage other pastors. But, most of all, I will do everything I can to be like the Great Pastor, the Lord Jesus. I want Him to be pleased with me. I am equipping myself to be like Jesus. Amen!"

2. Equip yourself to win people to Jesus Christ.

2 Tim 4:5

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

(KJV)

2 Timothy 4:5 HB

And you, be sober in all things, endure hardships, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of your ministry.

Thoroughly learn God's plan of salvation.

Learn from someone who knows how to lead people to Jesus. Constantly pray that God will prepare people's hearts to take Jesus, and then bring you across their path. Learn how to bring up the subject of how to be saved. Learn how to be sensitive to people and their needs. Genuinely love people. Learn how to sense when the Holy Spirit has them ready to take Christ.

Learn how to perceive what they understand, and what they do not understand. Learn how to ask the right questions until you know what you need to explain to them. Ask questions, and let them talk until you can see what they know and what they do not know.

Learn how to explain to them what they need to understand. And finally, learn how to lead them to pray and take Jesus in their hearts. Equip yourself to win people to Jesus Christ.

3. Equip yourself to care for God's Sheep.

Jesus said, "Feed my Sheep. Shepherd my Sheep." John 21:15-17

Only a shepherd can have a shepherd's heart. When God called you to be a pastor, He gave you a pastor's heart. But like all things, it must be developed.

To develop a pastor's heart, do three things:

(1) Walk with the Great Shepherd, the Lord Jesus.

You must learn what I mean when I say, "Follow The Great Shepherd, and walk and talk with Him."

Read the life of Jesus. Read it over and over, in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John. Study what Jesus did. Pattern your life after Him. See how He loved the sheep. See how He loved and cared for people. See how He touched people with tenderness and love. See how He fed them the precious words from God. See how He forgave their sins, healed their broken hearts, and healed their bodies.

Walk with the Great Shepherd, and develop a shepherd's heart like His.

(2) Be with and learn from other great pastors.

Learn from pastors who have been pastors much longer than you. Ask God to guide you in selecting a pastor to follow. Some pastors do not follow the Great Shepherd. They do not have a genuine pastor's heart. You do not want to learn their deceptive ways. If you perceive that the man you are following is not honestly following God, love him and pray for him, but do not pattern your life after him. Find someone else to follow. Find another pastor to learn from.

Find a pastor who is genuinely following the Great Shepherd, and learn from Him. You can learn from many pastors, but you must have one main pastor you learn from, especially in the early years of your ministry. If you try to follow many pastors you will become confused. When they contradict one another you can become confused. Make one good pastor your main example. Follow him until you are mature and thoroughly established in your ministry.

20 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

(3) Listen to your sheep.

Stay close to your sheep. Listen to your people. Stay close to your people. Please understand what I mean when I say, “Listen to your people.” I do not mean, “Let your people tell you what to do or what to preach.” The sheep do not tell the shepherd what to do. You must not be arrogant, egotistical, and stubborn. You must be humble and kind hearted toward your people, but they are not your boss. They are sheep. Sheep do not lead the shepherd. The shepherd leads the sheep. You must always get your direction from God. The sheep belong to God. The sheep need direction. They do not know the way they are to go. That is why they need a shepherd to lead them in paths of righteousness. The sheep can request the pastor to do things to meet their needs, but you must ask God if you should or should not do the thing they request.

When I say, “Listen to your sheep,” I mean, “Listen to their cries, so you will know where the sheep are.” Listen to what they say, so you will know if they are thinking right or not. Look at what they do, so you will know if they are doing right. Remember, you are not their judge. God is their Judge. You are their under-shepherd. Look at their faces, and listen to their cries so you will know where they are hurting, and what is hurting them. Know what they are thinking so you will know what they need to be taught. Watch what they do, so you will know how to guide them in the Lord’s way, when they have lost their way. Watch what they do, so you can encourage them when they are doing right.

Do not listen to their gossip.

Let all of them know from the pulpit that God hates gossip, and that you will not listen to gossip. Do not allow them to criticize one another, and constantly find fault, especially to you.

You as pastor must listen to your members and their needs, so God can give you His messages for them. In this way you will be a good pastor.

4. Build up the Body of Christ everywhere in Love and Harmony.

Teach your people to love all Christians everywhere. Do not teach them to love only those that belong to your denomination, or your group. Do everything you can, in love, to break down religious barriers that divide the body of Christ. Do not fight denominations. Do not fight other Christians. Fight the devil. Fight unbelief. Fight false teaching, but do not fight Christians.

There are some “Christians” who are so far from what the Bible teaches, I do

not believe they are saved. But you will never get them born from above fighting them. In this section I am speaking about people in other churches, not in your own. If they are so far from what the Bible teaches that you cannot conscientiously have fellowship with them, simply separate yourself from them. Pray for them. Separate yourself from them, but do not waste your time fighting them.

Please hear these words. Let God speak to your heart about this, and I will say it as kindly as I know how:

**Do not allow missionaries and preachers
to give you their divisions.**

Love the missionaries for loving you enough to come to your country, and help you. Be grateful to them. Show proper respect and loyalty, but do not receive their denominational differences. Read the Bible. Follow Jesus. Love all those who know the Lord Jesus personally in their hearts. Be grateful for the good things that each denomination or independent group has done and does for you. But do not accept their divisions. Promote love and harmony with all those who preach the Lord Jesus as the only way of salvation, and make a genuine effort to practice the Bible.

Read the Bible. Study thoroughly what others have taught you. Ask the Holy Spirit to guide you. Be a Bible believing Christian. Do not promote divisions in the body of Christ. Promote love for all pastors, and all Christians everywhere. We know some have not been born from above. Although they are "members" of a church, they do not know Jesus in their hearts. But you cannot judge a person's heart, so love as brothers and sisters in Christ all those who say they have taken the Lord Jesus. Keep on preaching the new birth, and pray that all those who have not been born from above, will be.

5. Develop yourself in love and faith.

1 Cor 13:13

And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity. (KJV)

1 Cor 13: 13 HB

And now abides faith, hope, love, these three, and *the* greatest of these is love.

Make the Great Commandment the Number One priority in your life.

Matt 22:36-40

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as

20 Equippping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
(KJV)

Matthew 22:36-40 HB

37 And Jesus said to him, You shall love the Lord your God in all your heart, and in all your soul, and in all the exercise of your mind.

38 This is the first, and great commandment.

39 And the second is like it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself.

40 In these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Luke 10:26-27

26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself.

(KJV)

Luke 10 HB

26 He said to him, What is written in the law? How do you read it?

27 And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God out of all your heart, and out of all your soul, and out of all your strength, and out of all the exercise of your mind, and your neighbor as yourself.

In Deuteronomy 6:5 the word “love” in the Great Commandment means to stir your coals of fire into a burning flame. God has placed the coals of fire of His love in your heart. God commands us to stir those coals into a roaring flame. Our love for God must be an all consuming fire. That fire of God’s love in us must burn out all hate and unforgiveness. The fire of God’s love must burn out all cravings for anything that is not in harmony with God. Our flame of love for God must be so strong that nothing the devil can do will put out our fire. We must love God with all our heart, all our soul, all our mind, and all our strength. We must love God with our spirit on fire. We must love God with our soul on fire. We must love God with our minds on fire. We must love God with the total force of our being on fire- on fire with the love of God.

Develop your love and faith. You must not only love God, you must love your neighbor as yourself. You know from the story of the good Samaritan that your neighbor is anyone and everyone you meet along the way (Luke 10:30-37).

You must love people. People are created in the image of God. God gave His only begotten Son for people, all people. You must love people. You must love the saved and the lost. You must love the good and the bad. You must love the rich and the poor. You must also love yourself. You shall love your neighbor as yourself. To love

someone is to desire for them what is best, and do for them what is best. You must believe that God loves you as much as He loves any human on earth. Indeed, you must believe He loves you just like He loves His only Son. And you must love yourself the same way. You must desire for yourself the best. You must work for what is best for you. If you do not know how to love yourself, you do not know how to love others. If you do not know how to work in your own self's best interest, you do not know how to work for the best interest of others. You must love your neighbor, and you must love your neighbor as you love yourself. Develop yourself in love.

Develop yourself in faith. Faith works by love (Galatians 5:6). You cannot please God without faith. (Hebrews 11:6). The one main thing you must understand about faith is that you have received **the faith of Jesus Christ**. His faith is now in your heart. You do not need to get more faith. You have Jesus' faith. You do not need a greater faith. You already have the greatest faith in the world. You have Jesus' faith. All you need to do is learn how to use His great faith.

True faith is not something that originates in your heart. You did not manufacture your faith. Your faith is the gift of God. God gave you Jesus' faith. When you took Jesus, you received His life. You now live by the faith of the Son of God who loved you, and gave Himself for you, Gal 2:20.

Perfect faith is the only thing that pleases God. The only man that ever lived that had a perfect faith was Jesus. From the cradle in Bethlehem, to the cross and grave outside of Jerusalem, Jesus lived a perfect faith. He is the Chief Leader and Perfector of faith (Heb. 12:2). He completed a perfect package of faith. When we took Jesus we took His perfect package of faith. We now have perfect faith. We are pleasing to God because we have a perfect faith. We have a perfect faith because we have Jesus' faith. The only thing you have to do is learn how to use Jesus' faith which is now inside of you. Never again say, "My faith is such a weak faith." Never again say, "I do not have much faith." You have all the faith there is. You have Jesus' faith. You have the strongest faith there is. You have Jesus' faith.

Your only need is to learn how to use that faith. You must develop yourself in how to use that perfect faith of Jesus in your heart. Develop yourself in love and faith.

6. Have the constant outpouring of the Holy Spirit on your Ministry,

Acts 1:8

But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. (KJV)

24 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Acts 1:8. HB

But you will take power, the Holy Spirit coming upon you, and you shall be witnesses to me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and Samaria, and until the last *place* on earth.

The power of God in your life is the Holy Spirit. You cannot serve God without the power of God. You cannot have the power of God without the Holy Spirit.

When you were born from above the Holy Spirit came in to give you the new birth. He made you a member of the body of Christ. He came to live in your heart. He will live in you forever. You were baptized by the Holy Spirit into the body of Christ, 1 Cor. 12:13. After you are born from above, you must take the power of the Holy Spirit. In the Bible this experience after the new birth is called, being baptized in the Holy Spirit, being filled with the Holy Spirit, taking the Holy Spirit, and being seized upon by the Holy Spirit.

What I want you to understand now is, that as a pastor you must have the Holy Spirit to come upon you in power in order to properly do God's work. You must have the outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon your life and your ministry constantly in order to do God's work. To have God's power on you in your life and work, you must hear His voice and obey His voice. God talks to you through His Holy Spirit. God empowers you by His Holy Spirit. You must take the fullness of His power. You must take the baptism of His power. You must learn to move in the power of the Holy Spirit.

You are:

- (1) What you think,**
- (2) What you say, and**
- (3) What you do.**

You control what you become by what you think, by what you say, and by what you do. To become like Jesus, you must think His thoughts, speak His words, and do His deeds.

MEMORIZE AND SPEAK THESE WORDS DAILY.

"I think Jesus' thoughts after Him."

"I speak His words from the Holy Bible."

"I do His deeds in the power of the Holy Spirit."

"My human, selfish mind and thoughts are crucified with Christ on the cross. My mouth and words are totally obedient to Jesus the Lord, so that I do not speak selfishly, carelessly, or hurtfully. My body and my deeds are a living sacrifice so that I

do nothing out of selfishness, pride, or hypocrisy.

“In my thoughts, Jesus is Lord. In my words, Jesus is Lord. In my deeds, Jesus is Lord. In my thoughts, the Holy Spirit leads me. In my Words, the Holy Spirit leads me. In my deeds, the Holy Spirit leads me.

“Daily, I am writing His words, from the Bible, in my heart.

“Daily, I am speaking His words, from the Bible, with my mouth.

“Daily, I am doing His words, from the Bible, in my body.

1. “Daily, I am becoming a good pastor.

“God is making me like Jesus. God is conforming me to the image of Christ.

“The Lord Jesus is making me like Himself.

“The Holy Spirit is making me like the Great Shepherd, the Lord Jesus.

2. “God is equipping me to win people to Jesus Christ.

“The Lord Jesus has called me to be a fisher of men. The Holy Spirit is equipping me to lead people to personally take Jesus into their hearts. The Holy Spirit has given me the gift of evangelist. He is making me skillful in leading people to enter the kingdom of God, and be born of the Holy Spirit. Daily, I am becoming more skilled in winning people to Jesus Christ.

3. “Daily, God is showing me how to care for His sheep.

“The Lord Jesus is giving me His tender heart. He has given me a real love for His sheep.

“The Holy Spirit is giving me the skills I need to protect, feed, and guide His sheep. I am a good shepherd, like my Lord. He gave His life for these sheep. I give my life for the sheep. I am caring for His sheep.

4. “God is leading me to build up the body of Christ everywhere.

“God has given me a special love for all those who love the Lord Jesus. I pray for all pastors, and all believers everywhere. I pray for love and harmony in the body of Christ.

26 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

“I do not gossip about other pastors and churches. I do not criticize and find fault with others. I will not compromise the plain statements of Holy Scripture. I do not agree with doctrine that is not clearly taught in the Bible, but I love all those who have taken the Lord Jesus. I do not spread ill will toward those who do not believe exactly as I do.

“In my church I always preach the truth as I believe the Bible teaches it. I do not waste time and energy calling people names and fighting those outside my church I believe are wrong.

“I promote love and harmony everywhere. I pray that all pastors and all believers come to a perfect knowledge of the Lord Jesus as revealed in the Bible. I pray that we all love one another.

5. “I develop myself in love and faith.

“I practice the Great Commandment. I love the Lord with all my heart, with all my soul, with all my mind, and with all my strength. And I love and respect all human beings as I love and respect myself. God has poured out in my heart the love of God by His Holy Spirit. The miracle of divine love has entered my heart. God has made me able to love all people, even my enemies. I am filled with the fruit of the Holy Spirit. I am filled with love. God has filled me with faith. I cannot do these things in my own strength. God has given me the faith of Jesus. Jesus authored and finished faith. God gave me His faith. The Holy Spirit by a miracle of grace implanted Jesus faith in my heart. I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me. I have His great faith. I have faith to complete my ministry. I have faith to be a good pastor. I praise you, blessed Father.

6. “I am serving God under the constant outpouring of the Holy Spirit.

“When I was born from above the Holy Spirit came to live within me. I am a temple of the Holy Spirit.

“Right here and now, by faith in You, Father, in the name of Jesus, I take the fullness of the Holy Spirit. Heavenly father, in the name of Jesus, I take the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Blessed Holy Spirit, I take you in power, now! I do not deserve You in myself. I cannot do enough to deserve your power. I do not have to. Jesus lived the perfect life for me. By His righteous life I have the right to the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Fill me with Yourself. I am yours, and you are mine. Thank you, Heavenly Father. In the name of Jesus, I now have taken the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Everywhere I go, I deliberately trust the power of the Holy Spirit. He pours out His power on

me always. I always minister in the power of the Holy Spirit.

“The Father pours out His Holy Spirit on the people as I minister to them the words God gives me. I praise You, Blessed Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. In Jesus’ Name. Amen!”

Section Two – Your Calling

Chapter 2

MY PERSONAL TESTIMONY

by Gwin Turner

I tell you my personal story for two reasons:

[1] So you can learn how God has led one pastor and his wife to fulfill the ministry God gave them.

[2] So you will have a feeling of closeness to me, my wife, so you can more readily receive the blessings that God wants to give you through The Pastor’s Manual.

This will make it easier for you to receive the blessings from the instructions God has given me to give to you. Our testimony will help you see how God can work in your life, as God has worked in our lives.

I am very precious to God. You are very precious to God. You are just as precious to God, as the most famous minister on earth. Every child of God is just as precious to Him as His only begotten Son, the Lord Jesus. Please believe that.

Given To God Before I Was Born

My father and mother, Doyle and Lucy Ann [McGregor] Turner, were brought

28 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

up by Christian parents. They attended church, prayed, and read the Bible. My father and mother were farmers. My father was a singer in church, and my mother played the piano. They met, and married.

My father and mother had difficulty having a baby. Each time my mother became pregnant, she miscarried, and lost the baby after 2, 3, or 4 months of pregnancy. So, she was not able to give birth to a baby.

When she conceived me, she was afraid she would lose this baby also. After she had carried me five months, she began to feel pain. She thought she was going to lose this baby. She began to pray. She said to God, "God, if You will let this baby be born healthy, I here and now give him to You to be a preacher." It was only by revelation that she knew she was carrying a boy. God accepted her prayer, and I was given to God to become a preacher before I was born.

I was born December 3, 1931, in Pontotoc County, Mississippi. After I was born, she did not tell me that she had given me to God to be a preacher. She and my father raised me knowing that they were raising a preacher for God, but I did not know that. They knew that God would have to call me at the right time and place. They did not interfere with God's voice.

They served God constantly in the church. They farmed. They grew cotton, corn, soybeans, and cattle on a little farm in northeast Mississippi. That was their income. In the summer between spring planting and the fall harvest, they led music in church revivals. They also taught schools of music in churches.

My Pastor

When I was four years old my father and mother met an evangelist, Dr. Percy Ray. Wherever this young evangelist went, he labored in prayer until the power of God was poured out, and many people were saved. My father and mother began to lead the music for his evangelistic crusades and church revivals. I rode in his car with him and stayed with him many days each year from the time I was four years old.

My father and mother taught me music. So I sang with them in church services and music conventions from that early age. We were always in church services, in revivals in church buildings, and in evangelistic crusades in tents. As a child my days were filled with hearing sermons and seeing large crowds of people come to Jesus when Brother Ray gave the invitation.

Bro. Ray taught that you must know when and where you were saved. He taught

that being brought up in a Christian home did not save you. Attending church does not save you. Being baptized does not save you. After you are old enough to understand for yourself, you have to have the Holy Spirit to convict you of your sin, and you have to deliberately take Jesus in a definite decision, and know absolutely for sure that you are born from above.

He taught that children who join the church because their parents thought it was time for them to join the church, were not saved. You have to know God called you in your own heart to be saved, not because your parents said, "I think you are old enough to join the church."

We saw multitudes of church members realize that they were never born of the Holy Spirit, but had only joined the church because someone told them they were old enough. They repented of their unbelief, and took Jesus into their hearts. Then they knew they were saved, not because they had joined the church. They knew they were saved because now they knew for real that they had taken Jesus. They now knew when and where they were saved.

As I became nine, ten, and eleven years of age, I knew I needed to be saved. I also knew that I did not want to join the church, and not really be saved in my heart. So I waited, until I knew I was ready.

My Salvation Experience

When I was thirteen years old, during the summer, my father was teaching a school of music in a public school building. There were about one hundred youth in this two week school of music. During the same week a nearby church held revival services. My father took all of us young people from the music school to the revival services each morning at ten o'clock. In the last morning service that week the preacher made a special appeal for us to be saved. There were many my age who attended church, but who were not yet saved. The preacher felt that he had to pull us into the church. A few went forward. I felt no urging in my heart to get saved. I was not under the conviction of the Holy Spirit. I was not interested at that time.

The preacher became very forceful. He asked everyone who did not want to go to hell to come forward. A few more went forward. Finally he said, "If you do not come forward, you are saying to the whole world that you want to go to hell." I knew I did not want to say to the whole world, "I want to go to hell," so I decided to go forward.

I was trapped. The Holy Spirit was not dealing with me to get saved. Or at least I was not allowing the Holy Spirit to deal with me at that time. But the preacher was determined to force me to make a decision.

30 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

He talked with each child individually. This was better than they did in some churches in those days. In many churches when they asked you to come forward, they never counseled with you individually. They never talked to you to determine if you knew what you were doing or not. They simply assumed that if you walked forward in the invitation, you were saved. At least, this preacher did ask you questions. He did not pray with anyone. He did not lead us in the sinner's prayer. He only asked us questions.

He asked me, "Do you believe that Jesus is the Son of God?" I said, "Yes, sir." He said, "Do you believe that you are a sinner and need to be saved?" I said, "Yes, sir." He said, "Will you receive Jesus in your heart now?" I did not answer him. I knew that if I said, "Yes," he would join me to the church, and baptize me. I knew I would still be lost. I knew there was nothing happening in my heart. I knew I had to talk to God to get saved, and I knew I was not talking to God. I was trying to answer the man's questions, and get out of that trap as soon as I could.

Since the preacher did all the talking with me, my father did not interfere. Finally, the preacher turned to my father, and asked him if I could join the church. I never did answer the man that I had taken Jesus, yet he wanted to join me to the church. My father was very wise. He said I could wait. He told the preacher that he would talk to me after I arrived home. Then we would decide.

When we arrived home, my father asked me, "Son, were you saved in that service this morning?" I said, "No, sir. The preacher trapped me into going to the front. I was not ready to be saved. Nothing happened in my heart." My father prayed with me. He asked God to save me at the right time and place. Then he said to me, "Son, when God speaks to your heart, obey Him. When He calls you, receive Him, and be saved. When the time is right, you will know, and you will be saved." I said, "Yes, sir," and went on my way.

During the next twelve months Bro. Ray, my father, and my future wife's father, organized a new church. We did not have a church building. They held services in the large hallway of our house on Sunday afternoons. It was my responsibility each evening to go to the pasture, and bring the cows to the barn, and help milk them.

Often in church on Sunday afternoons Bro. Ray would include this statement in his invitation: "If you know that you need to be saved, and you want us to pray for you that you will be saved soon, come and give me your hand, and go back to your seat. We will remember you in our prayers. You will be saved at the right time and place."

Sometimes when the services were real long, I wanted him to come to that part of the service so I could give him my hand. The reason was that it was getting late, and

I needed to go and get the cows, and begin to milk them. I went forward and gave the pastor my hand for prayer many times during that year.

The following August we had a church revival. On Monday night Bro. Ray preached to the church to be totally dedicated to God during the revival. He asked every church member who would be totally committed during this revival to come forward. Then he asked everyone who was totally committed to hold hands, and stand in a circle. Then he said, "If you are lost, and you want to be saved sometime during this revival week, come and kneel inside the circle, and let us pray for you. Then you will be saved later in the week as you feel led of the Holy Spirit."

I felt in my heart I wanted to be saved that week. I knelt inside the circle. As they prayed, I did not want to wait until later that week. I wanted to be saved that night. I prayed, and I wept. I tried to trust God to be saved, but I did not know how. I had seen people get saved all my life, but when it was my time to be saved, I did not know how to do it. I had heard hundreds of messages on how to be saved. I knew it all in my mind, but I did not know how to get it in my heart. This was the first time in my life [I was 14] that I really craved to be saved, and somehow it was not happening. I kept waiting for some kind of great feeling to hit me, then I would believe. It did not work like that.

After what seemed to me a very long time, I was still praying, and I was still not saved. Bro. Ray up to this moment had been praying and counseling with others. He came to me. He prayed with me. He knew I had been praying a long time. He also knew what I was thinking. I had been with him and my father and mother in meeting after meeting where people had great emotional experiences when they were saved. He knew I was expecting a great emotional experience.

So he said to me, "Son, you are making this too hard and too complicated. You know you are a sinner, and you want to be saved. Right?" I said, "Yes, sir. I know that, and really want to be saved. For the first time in my life, I really want to be saved." He said, "You believe that Jesus, the Son of God, died on the cross for you, and rose from the dead, don't you?" I said, "Yes, sir. You know I believe that. I have always believed that. My father and mother, and you, and the Word of God have taught me to believe that."

He said, "All right. Stop waiting for a feeling. [I was on the floor on my knees.] Give me your hand. Get up from your knees. Let God have your life." I said, "You mean it is that simple?" He said, "Yes. It is that simple. Just do it right now!" I said, "I will do it." I gave him my hand. I stood up. Immediately I realized I was saved. I

32 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

stopped weeping. I did not have any great burst of emotions in my heart. I simply felt relief. I relaxed. I was at peace. I knew I was saved.

A few days later, along with about a dozen others, I was baptized in Skoona River. I have had eternal life from that moment on. Praise the Lord!

My Call To The Ministry

I graduated from high school at age 17 [1949]. My parents insisted that I attend college. I enrolled in the state Baptist College, Mississippi College. I came home from college the last week in October to attend a weekend Bible conference at our church. In the Saturday morning service as the guest preacher gave the invitation, the Spirit of God came upon me. I began to weep. I had to be seated I was weeping so hard. I did not know what God was saying to me. I felt that I was responsible for every lost person in the world. I felt I had to pray for all the unsaved all over the world. So I interceded for the world.

Between services I felt that God was telling me something, but I did not know what. I talked with Bro. Ray a few moments. I remember that in the conversation I said to him, "Do you think God is calling me to preach?" I do not know why I said that. I do not remember before that moment ever thinking that I would be a preacher. As a youth I thought about many different careers. Being a preacher never came across my mind.

Bro. Ray did not answer my question. He just looked at me, which was not unusual. He would often do that. He was giving you time to answer your own question. I had heard him preach that many preachers were not God-called preachers. I heard him say that there were mother-called preachers, self-called preachers, and even devil-called preachers. So those thoughts came to my mind. I said, "But I do not want to become a preacher, and then discover later that the devil called me to preach to ruin my life."

He knew God was calling me to preach, but he could not tell me. He looked me right in the eye, and said, "Gwin, you don't believe the devil would call you to preach, do you?" He turned, walked away, and left me without saying another word. As he walked away, I called after him, "No, I don't believe the devil would call me to preach, because if I become a preacher, I will fight the devil with everything I have." I said further, "If that same feeling comes on me in the next service, I will come forward." He never looked back, or responded.

He knew what God was doing. He knew I would obey God. He knew my mother gave me to God to be a preacher before I was born, which I did not know. He knew the

prayers he and my parents had prayed for God to bring it all about at God's perfect time, and in God's perfect way. He was letting God and me work it out. He would not interfere.

In the next service, I enjoyed the sermon. When he gave the invitation, I began to weep. I felt I was responsible for the whole world. I went forward, and I said, "God is calling me to preach. I surrender."

He prayed with me. He asked me if I had peace. I assured him that I did. He announced my calling to the congregation. Without asking me, and to my total surprise, he announced, "Next Sunday I will be gone in revival. Gwin will be preaching all the services in both churches next Sunday." [He was pastor of two churches. One church had regular services on Sunday morning and Sunday night. The other church had only Sunday afternoon services.]

I was seventeen years old. He did me that way from then on. He never let me know ahead of time when I was to preach. If we were in a Bible conference, with different preachers preaching at different times, he never let me know ahead of time when I was to preach. He followed the Holy Spirit. When God told him that I was to be the next preacher, he would come over to me, and whisper, "God wants you to preach after this song."

I knew to be ready. I knew that it was too late to talk to God then. I had to stay in touch with God. I had to have God's message. I had to be ready any time. God never failed me. I always had God's message at the right time and place.

I continued in college. I worked in various jobs after hours to pay my living and college expenses. My father and mother helped with some tuition money. An aunt and uncle gave me some money from time to time. Almost every Sunday some church asked me to preach, and gave me a small offering. One year later a rural church called me to be their pastor. I traveled two weekends each month from college to this rural church. I traveled by what we called in those days, "hitch-hiking." That meant you "hitched" a ride with anyone who would let you ride in their car, when you could. When you could not, you "hiked," you walked on foot. That is the way I went the two hundred miles each time I went to my church. They barely paid me enough to pay for cleaning the suits I wore.

My Baptism In The Holy Spirit

When the first church called me as pastor, they requested my home church to ordain me. So in August of 1950, my pastor, my father, and the presbytery in my local church, along with guest pastors and missionaries to various countries, laid hands on

34 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

my head, and ordained me “a minister of the gospel.” I was eighteen years of age. It was not until I was ordained a minister of the gospel that my mother revealed to me that she had given me to God to be a preacher before I was born.

It was in my ordination service that the Holy Spirit descended upon me in power. I melted under the impact. I felt that God had touched me with His hand, and I could not stand up under His presence. I was no longer conscious of what was taking place in the service. I was totally occupied just with God. I wept uncontrollably. I felt completely enveloped in God. His Holy Spirit touched me with the finger of fire, and burned through me like a cleansing flame. The consciousness of His baptism of power upon me has grown through the years. I have had many infillings since then, but nothing to compare with that initial baptism of fire.

One evening in 1954, my mother was sitting in the bedroom floor by the bed interceding for her church and the pastors’ Bible Conference which Bro. Ray held two and three times each year at their home church. Suddenly a vision of God came upon her, and she had to stop praying because the vision was so strong. She saw someone knelt down on the side of a hill in the open country. The person she saw was kneeling down on one knee, and he held the Bible on his other knee. Then she saw literally thousands of common people of every color and race of people coming to this person who was kneeling there holding the Bible. She saw this person handing out the bread of life to all these thousands of people. She kept looking, trying to see past all the people who were crowded around him receiving the bread of life. Finally she was able to see his face. She was startled, when she saw his face, and she screamed, “Oh Lord, that is Gwin Terrell* [*my middle name].” My mother did not tell us about this vision until many years later. *The Pastor’s Manual* available to you in your language is a part of the fulfillment of this vision God gave my mother.

My Wife, Norma

I must now tell you how God gave me my wife. It is so extremely important that the pastor and his wife be in total harmony. The first time I saw my wife I was nine, and she was five. I am four and one half years older than my wife. Her grandfather was a preacher, and her father was a deacon in a church twenty miles from where we lived. Her father invited my father to come and make plans to teach a school of music in their church. I went with my father to her father’s house for this discussion.

She had a brother, Paul, a few months younger than I. We went to the back yard of the house to play. Norma [That is my wife’s name] was five years old. She and one or two other little girls were playing “house.” They had a toy stove, and toy dishes. They were making mud pies from the dirt and water. They were playing that they were cooking them on the stove. I was a big boy. I was nine years old. I helped these little kids with their playthings. I helped Norma make a mud pie. Little did I know I was

helping my future wife.

My father and mother taught the school of music in that church. The next year we moved to that area. My parents and her parents purchased farms side by side. Our families started the new church where I was saved, and called to preach. My wife and I grew up in the same church. We lived on farms that joined one another. When she turned eleven years of age, and began to look like a beautiful little girl, I fell in love with her. I was fifteen. I was able to be with her only when I went to see her brother, and at church, because her father would not let me date her at that young age. [She never did get old enough for me to date her.]

In my second year of college, I decided it was too lonely being there all by myself. I knew she was the one God chose for me. She knew it also. So when I was nineteen, and she was fifteen, we married. We have had heaven on earth ever since. We have grown in the Lord together over the years. I am so thankful for God's chosen spouse for me.

Our Education

We continued in school. I received the Bachelor of Arts Degree in history and languages in 1953. She graduated from business college with secretarial and business skills. I received my Master of Arts Degree in history in 1954. We both graduated from Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary in 1958. I received the Bachelor of Divinity Degree. She received the two year Diploma in Theology.

During the eight years of our college and seminary training, we both worked evening and night employment to pay our own bills. I was a pastor of a church during all this time. We drove to the church field on the weekends, and returned to college or seminary on Mondays. Most of the time she and I both worked forty hour work weeks while we carried a full load in school. I worked in an aircraft factory, 3:00 to 11:00 pm. During one period I managed a restaurant on the midnight shift. She worked as the emergency admittance clerk at a hospital. Our two small children stayed in a nursery school which costs we had to pay. Like the Apostle Paul, we paid our own expenses.

We were appointed as missionaries to Argentina in 1959, and spent 1960 in La Escuela de Idiomas in San Jose, Costa Rica. We never made it to Argentina. There begins another story, so important for pastors.

Sickness And My Healing

As a baby I had colitis, and almost died. As a child and teenager I had asthma. I was brought up on farm vegetables, meat, milk, and bread. What I did not know was that the sugar and flour, refined carbohydrates, I was eating caused arthritis. I know that now. I did not know that then. We ate too much bread made from white flour. We ate too much sugar. And we drank bottle after bottle of soda pop loaded with sugar. And we ate all sorts of junk foods such as potato chips and candy.

After I left the farm at age 17, immediately I became overweight. At the end of 1960 when we graduated from La Escuela de Idiomas, at age 29, before we left Costa Rica to come back to the United States, I had arthritis so badly I could hardly walk. My hands, my feet, and other joints in my body were swollen. My flesh around the joints was red and puffy. I was in constant pain. I was shocked to say the least, at age twenty-nine to hear the doctor say, "You have advanced arthritis."

I entered a hospital in Memphis, Tennessee, where doctors confirmed the diagnosis. They told me that there is no cure for arthritis. They could only give me medication to relieve the pain. For ten years I took the medication. I found no cure for the arthritis. I prayed for a miracle of healing, but never received one.

In 1969 we became pastor of our church in Los Angeles. I was preaching a series of services in Glendora, just east of Los Angeles. I went with the pastor to a shopping center. He went to the market for some items. I wandered along the street, window shopping. I went into a health food store, and began to browse through the books on the shelves. I had never seen books of this nature. I saw a book titled, *Fasting Can Save Your Life*.

I had never read anything on fasting. I knew it was in the Bible. I knew my pastor had fasted forty days one time when I was a child. The book caught my attention. I bought it, and began to read it. Soon I was consumed with a desire for the knowledge of fasting and health I found in this book. It was a book written by a medical doctor on the healing power of fasting. I immediately began a fast. I did not eat one bite of food of any kind for twelve days. I drank water only. I immediately stopped taking the medication for pain. What was so amazing to me was that after the third day, pain from my arthritis left, and never returned.

I learned from the book that what I was eating was causing my sickness. I immediately stopped eating beef and pork, because at the time I believed it was the meat that was causing the arthritis. I discovered later that it was not the meat but the refined carbohydrates. I stopped eating sugar, or anything with sugar in it. I stopped eating refined flour, and milk. I began to eat only fresh raw or steamed vegetables, raw fruits,

and nuts. Sometimes I ate fish and chicken.

During this process, I read through the entire Bible on what to eat, and what not to eat. I discovered, that what God commanded in the Bible is the correct way to eat. Pastors, do not eat the pre-packaged and refined foods that you buy in the store. Eat what grows naturally in your country. Eat the fresh vegetables and fruits that are available around you. Eat all the good meat you want. Simply avoid the refined carbohydrates. Especially sugar, and white flour. Believe God for a healthy body. You will live either until Jesus comes, or to one hundred and twenty. Praise the Lord.

God Leads Us

God will lead you, if you will only ask Him, and honestly follow the best you know how. Many times my mother said to me, "Son, if you will simply follow God as sincerely as you know how, and believe Him, He will put you in the right place at the right time to do what He wants you to do." Her words have always proven true for me.

When we returned from Costa Rica in 1960, and realized that because of my health, we could not go on to the mission field, we were content to find a church to pastor here in the United States. [I did not discover health until ten years later.] We accepted a church in Texas.

Then I began to pray about our future ministry. I said to God, "Father, at the right time and place, I ask you to call us to a church in a metropolitan area, where we can pastor in the same church for the remainder of our lives." Shortly after that a church in Vicksburg, Mississippi, called us to be their pastor. It was a city of about 40,000 population. I told them, "I will be your pastor as long as God tells me to stay, but at the right time and place we will be moving to a large city, where we will pastor in the same church for the rest of our lives."

We remained with that church for seven years. Then God called us to our present church in Los Angeles, California, in 1969. When we accepted the church, God said to me, "You will serve Me in this church for the remainder of your earthly life." And that is where we have been all these years.

I trust that my testimony will give you Holy-Spirit-anointed insight into how one pastor and his wife have followed the Lord to fulfill God's calling in their lives. God bless you! We have three married children, and grandchildren. My wife's testimony will tell you more about our children and family life.

Chapter 3

MY PERSONAL TESTIMONY

by Norma Turner

MY PARENTS AND CHILDHOOD

My parents, Winfred and Dorothy [Adams] Brasher, were happy, caring, fun-loving, and protective parents. Friends always liked to come to our house. My parents took time with us and made life fun. Daddy loved to tease and play jokes. I was very sheltered and loved.

They were also very strict. Our church was our life. We were not allowed to go to movies or dances, or play cards in our home. All of our activities centered around the church.

I grew up with two sets of very loving grandparents, whom I loved very much. I have many sweet childhood memories of going to my grandparent's house. My Grandpa Brasher was a preacher. There was always a big crowd of people at Grandpa and Grandma Brasher's. Regardless of who or how many people were there Grandpa always went to church whether anyone else did or not. Most of the time the whole family went to church, but sometimes on special occasions, I remember Grandpa going by himself. Grandma Brasher was full of life, fun-loving, and very family oriented, [she gave birth to seven boys and two girls]. There were always lots of aunts, uncles, and cousins at their house to play with. My Grandpa Brasher pastored the same country church for over 50 years.

My mother's parents, Grandpa and Grandma Adams were not as faithful in church attendance, but were godly, sweet, moral, loving people. They loved their family, and I loved going there. I especially loved spending the night at Grandma Adams'

house and having her tuck me in on cold, rainy, winter nights. She had big, fluffy feather mattresses on top of the regular mattress in the winter time. Sleeping on Grandma's feather bed was indeed a treat. You just literally sunk down in it, so cozy, warm and protected. It was wonderful.

Grandpa and Grandma Adams had an old Victrola Console record player. It was the first one I had ever seen. That was special. Not many people had such a luxury! It was always a treat for the grandchildren to get to play the Victrola and listen to the beautiful music coming from it as we turned the crank-handle on the side. But the biggest treat of all was when we would play the record with "Turkey In The Straw," and Grandpa Adams would come in and whistle that tune along with the record and dance for us! What fun!! Grandma Adams was a small, neat, little lady. She always wore a long dress with an apron on top, her hair combed back neatly in a bun on the back of her head. She dipped snuff from the neatest little box that was tucked neatly away in her apron pocket.

I grew up with so much love it is hard for me to identify with those who did not have it. The blessings of God upon my life are so evident, even from babyhood. I know His hand has guided my life from before the time of my birth. He chose where I was born, to whom, and all the circumstances surrounding my life. I praise Him and thank Him for His protective providence.

MY MARRIAGE

I met my future husband when I was five years of age. He was a good friend of my older brother, and was at our house often. I really had not thought about him romantically until one Sunday at church he told me how pretty I looked. I had on a new dress. My mother had made the dress. She is a professional seamstress, and made all of my clothes. I never had a ready-made dress until after I was married and away from home, but always had more pretty clothes than anyone else. This particular Sunday he came up to me, and told me how pretty I looked. My heart went "pitty-patter."

We fell in love when I was eleven. We tried to date, but having the strict father that I did - that was out of the question. We saw each other at church, and he became an even better friend to my brother so he could come often to our house. Gwin is four and one-half years older than I. He finished high school in three years, so when he was a senior, I was a seventh grader. He was quite popular in high school, and received many honors. In his junior-senior year, he was voted the most handsome boy, the most talented boy, the friendliest boy, the boy most likely to succeed, and the best athlete. And... he was in love with a seventh grader. I was the envy of all the junior and senior girls. Several of them had 'crushes' on him. Several came and told me that since I was young they did not want to see me get hurt. They warned me that I was in

40 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

for a big fall, he was nothing but a heart-breaker! To which I very smugly replied, "I will take my chances." [Little did they know I had this guy wrapped around my little finger. ha].

Gwin and I were married August 7, 1951. We kept it a secret for two months, but then my parents became suspicious. My father went and looked on the official records. There it was recorded that we were married. The next Sunday, he went to Gwin and told him he knew, and since that was the case, he would rather we let it be known.

It wasn't that my parents did not like Gwin. It was because their daughter was only fifteen years of age! [And believe me, as a parent myself now, I marvel they took it so well!!].

Even though we were very young, Gwin and I knew we were meant for each other. Our almost 50 years together have been wonderful and get better all the time. [Later note: We celebrated our fiftieth wedding Anniversary on Aug 7, 2001.]

MY SALVATION AND BAPTISM

Now that you know something of my background, you will understand my salvation experience better. All of my life I had loving, protective, supportive people around me. I really never had to make a big decision for myself and stand on it. While I was at home, daddy and mother made the big decisions for me. After I got married at 15, Gwin made the big decisions for me when I needed help. Therefore, making a decision to trust Christ and be sure that I was really saved was hard for me. I grew up in church - that is all I have known all of my life. My Grandfather Brasher was a preacher, and later in life my father became a preacher. I cannot remember a time when I was not in Sunday School. I was always learning Scripture verses. I was in Bible Sword Drills, and youth missionary groups. I knew the plan of salvation intellectually.

When I was twelve years of age, in a revival meeting, a cousin and some friends of mine went forward during the invitation and gave their lives to Jesus. I began to feel pressure from others that I should do the same. I did and was baptized, but even at the time I knew I did not have real peace with Jesus. In fact, at the time I had a sick feeling in the pit of my stomach that nothing had changed or was different. I now know that I went two-thirds of the way, but did not go the whole three-thirds of the way! Intellectually, with my mind, I knew that I was old enough to be saved. I knew that I had sinned and come short of the glory of God. That is one-third of the way. Also I felt my need to be saved with my emotions. I wanted to be saved. I knew that the wages of sin are death, and I knew that I did not want that. That was two-thirds of the way. But the last third was missing. My will was not committed.

Gwin and I were married, had finished college, already had two children and were in seminary when I really got saved. One day in my New Testament Seminary class we were discussing the plan of salvation. The professor asked several people to give their salvation experiences. My heart sank in fear and dread that he might call on me to give my testimony!

From time to time doubts rose up in me very strong. Sometimes I was frightened that I might die, knowing I was not saved. Always I was afraid during a storm, or on a long trip in the car. I was afraid we might have a wreck and be killed before I got this all straightened out. I was afraid the Lord might return and I knew I wasn't ready. But then Satan would assure me I was alright. After all, I was a pastor's wife. I was a Sunday School teacher. I worked in Woman's Missionary Union, I worked with the various children's groups. I did anything and everything there was to do in the church. I worked - worked - worked, mostly trying to ease my conscience, and work my way to heaven. But then those times of reality would come when deep down in my inmost being I knew I was not saved.

But this particular day in seminary, I determined if I got out of that class without being called on and embarrassed, I was going to go to the Lord. I was going to get this situation straightened out once and for all. Immediately when the bell rang, I headed for the chapel. I cried and prayed, but nothing happened.

We were staying in a little motel at night. Four nights a week we were in seminary. We traveled to our church field on the weekends. So I picked up my two children from nursery school, and went to the motel room. I told Gwin I had to have peace. I was lost, and I had to get saved. He was very sympathetic. He prayed with me while I cried, prayed, and agonized. He went over the Roman plan several times and other Scriptures. I finally replied, "I know those Scriptures as well as you do. I know all of that. I have told it to others many times. Don't tell me that again. Tell me HOW to trust the Lord." He did to the best of his ability. We still got nowhere!

Finally I told him to just go on and leave me alone. This was something I had to settle between me and the Lord. So, I cried and prayed some more. Finally, out of sheer desperation, I said, "Lord, I can't do this. I can't save myself, I do not know how. If I am ever saved, You will have to do it. I quit! I am not going to try anymore." And with that I got up. I wiped my tears. I went into the bathroom to wash my face. When I looked at myself in the mirror, I said, "I did it, I'm saved."

42 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

With that, joy unspeakable flooded my soul. Assurance came in, and has never left from that day to this. Praise God!! I was so happy and relieved I was ready to tell the world. My mind and heart were clear for the first time in years. I finally had the peace of Jesus! I had an Old Testament semester test the next day. I was not ready for that test. But after receiving Jesus in my heart, studying was easy. It is amazing how clearly you can think and concentrate and how things just fall into place when we have the peace of Jesus in our hearts. I made 99.5 on the Old Testament test the next day!

However, Satan never gives up. By the time we got back to the church field for the weekend he had already begun to work on me. He caused me to worry about what the people of the church would think of the pastor's wife getting saved. How was I going to get up in front of those church people and tell them I had just gotten saved. I was the pastor's wife and their leader, what would they think?

So, for the next two years I battled whether or not I would tell the church and release my joy. In the meantime, we were preparing for appointment as foreign missionaries to Argentina. We were writing our biographies, going for physical examinations, having psychiatric tests, to meet all the requirements of the Board. By this time I resented the whole routine. I resented it because I was wrestling with what I should tell. Should I let them know, I was saved just two years before, and had not yet been baptized? Should I be honest? If I did tell it, would they still accept us as missionaries? Or should I tell I was saved when I joined the church at twelve years of age? I knew that experience meant nothing! I would be lying. I could not do that.

Finally, I decided. It hit me one day that if I went so far as to be appointed as a foreign missionary, and go to the mission field in that condition without telling the real story and getting baptized, I probably would never get it straight. I decided I had had enough misery. So in December, 1959, before we went to Richmond, Virginia, for the appointment service, I took the Sunday morning service at our church. I gave my salvation testimony, the whole story. I asked for baptism that day. My husband baptized me at the end of that service. I was baptized in water, and filled with the Holy Spirit at the same time. It was a glorious experience! The act of being obedient and following the Lord in baptism after two years of struggle was almost as joyous as the night I turned my life over to Christ. It is amazing how the devil uses our pride to keep us from experiencing the full joy that is ours in Christ Jesus. We have to be careful that we do not let him defeat us through his lies and our pride.

MISSIONARY CAREER

We spent the year, 1960, in San Jose, Costa Rica, in language school learning Spanish in preparation for service in Argentina. Gwin and I experienced many problems in our health that year. I was pregnant when we went to Costa Rica. I had diffi-

culty throughout the pregnancy, and passed out a couple of times on the streets with low blood pressure. I carried the baby the full nine months to the projected day. It was a very difficult delivery that almost took my life. Our baby boy was born dead. He had died two or three days before birth because of blood clots in the umbilical cord.

Our two other children, a precious little girl - Renae, and a precious little boy - Terry, were 6 and 5 years of age at this time. They were real troopers in helping me recover physically and emotionally. They learned Spanish with no difficulty. They interpreted for me on many occasions when out shopping or riding the bus from place to place. After such a year of sickness and the death of our baby, we decided it was not God's will for us to continue as Foreign Missionaries to Argentina. We took a small church in Seagoville, Texas for a short time before going to the Bowmar Avenue Baptist Church in Vicksburg, Mississippi.

OUR FAMILY

During our seven year stay in Vicksburg, the Lord blessed us with another child. This time another precious little girl, Kimberly. Since coming to California in 1969, our family has doubled. Our oldest daughter, Renae, was married in 1973 to a wonderful young man, Paul Welford. Paul is a Culver City Policeman. He was ordained as a deacon in our church. Renae sings and plays the piano and organ. They have given us two beautiful granddaughters, Kristie and Nicole.

Terry was married in 1975 to a beautiful young lady named Sharon Westbrook. Terry and Sharon now live in Marietta, Georgia, where Terry is in a managerial position with corporate accounts for a computer software company. They are very active in their church. Terry is a deacon, on the finance committee and teaches Sunday School in the College and Career Department. Sharon also teaches Sunday School in the College and Career Department and teaches a neighborhood Bible Study in their home. They have given us a beautiful little granddaughter named Kelly, and a handsome grandson named Kevin. This grandmother is extremely proud of her grandchildren. They are just the sweetest, smartest and most beautiful in the whole world. And if you are a grandmother, you should feel the same about yours!

Kim was married in 1987 to an outstanding young man, Shane Walpole. Shane also has been selected to be a deacon in our church. Kim is our bouncy, full-of-life, joyous free spirit that keeps us all intact and going. Their children are Jamie and Tiffani.

Our children and our grandchildren are our heritage, our special blessings from the Lord. We are so blessed through ours and so very proud of each one of them!

CHAPTER 4

YOU MUST KNOW THAT YOU HAVE BEEN BORN FROM ABOVE

OUTLINE OF THIS MESSAGE

1. We are sinners by nature and sinners by choice.
2. Understand how to be saved.
 - (1) Innocent children are safe.
 - (2) But you are no longer an innocent child.
3. The Nine Different Functions of the Human Being.
 - A. The functions of your spirit
 - (1) Intuition
 - (2) Conscience
 - (3) Communion
 - B. The functions of your soul
 - (4) Your mind to think
 - (5) Your emotions to feel
 - (6) Your will to decide
 - C. The functions your body
 - (7) Production of goods and services
 - (8) Reproduction of children
 - (9) Defense to protect yourself.
4. The power to make a decision
5. Exactly how to be saved
 - (1) You must understand two things
 - a. that you are a sinner
 - b. Jesus died and rose for me
 - (2) You must feel your need to be saved.
 - (3) You must decide with your will to take Jesus as your Savior.

The Sinner's Prayer.

To know that you are saved, and to know that you know you are saved, is the most important thing in the world.

The pastor must have a very precise knowledge of the salvation experience. You must know exactly what it means to be born of the Holy Spirit.

The devil does not care how religious you are, as long as you do not get born from above. It pleases the devil greatly when unsaved people think they are saved. As long as they think they are saved, there is no likelihood that they will get saved. The devil does not care how much you attend church, or how much you sing in church, or do other religious things, as long as you do not get born from above. As long as he can take you to hell when you die, he does not care how religious you are.

It makes no difference what church you belong to, as long as you do not personally take Jesus into your heart.

The pastor's salvation experience must be definite, and clear, or he cannot help his members know for sure that they are saved.

When I ask church members, including ministers, "When did you take Jesus as your Savior and Lord?" I often get answers like this: "I was born in a Christian home." "I have always been a Christian." When people say these things I know they do not understand salvation. They do not understand what it means to be born from above. They are like Nicodemus. They have always been religious, and they think being religious is salvation. Many very religious people are not saved. They will die, and go to hell, because in their ignorance, they never took Jesus. They never were born from above.

1. WE ARE SINNERS BY NATURE AND SINNERS BY CHOICE.

Read Romans 7:9. Every child is in a state of innocence when he is born, and until he reaches the age of accountability. Although the child is born with original sin, that is something for which he is not responsible. He did not sin. He inherited it from his parents. Nevertheless, he has sin in him, and that sin nature cannot enter heaven. Jesus made provision at the cross for every child who dies before he or she reaches the age of responsibility or accountability to wash away the nature of sin.

Look at Romans 7:9. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. (KJV)

Rom 7:9 HB **And I was alive separate from law at one time, and when the commandment came sin revived, and I died.**

Paul says, **I was alive separate from the law at one time.** What he means is that as an innocent child he was alive to God.

Let me give you an

Illustration.

One of the Ten Commandments says, **You shall not steal.** A very small child does not understand what it means to steal. Let us say that your three year old, Susie, has gone with you to a neighbor's house. That neighbor friend also has a little girl, and her name is Annie. You get ready to go home. Susie starts out the door with Annie's doll. You say to Susie, "No, Susie. You cannot take that doll home with you. That belongs to Annie." She begins to cry and say, "But I want it." You try to explain that she cannot take the doll home with her, because that is stealing. She does not understand stealing. All she knows is that she wants to take the doll home with her. You have to take the doll away from her, and possibly even spank her to stop her from throwing a fit. She is in a state of innocence. She does not know that it is wrong. She is alive to God. She is **separate from the law.**

We do not know at what age a child reaches the age of accountability or responsibility. It is different in different children. But we feel assured that all normal children reach the age of accountability by the age of 12. So years have gone by, and now Susie and Annie are 13 years old. Susie goes to Annie's house. Annie has a beautiful new wristwatch. It is on the dresser in the bedroom. Susie now knows what stealing is. She knows if she takes that watch, that is stealing. It is wrong. But she yields to the temptation. Susie looks to be sure no one sees her. She hides the wristwatch in her pocket, and takes it home. She will not let anyone see her take the watch. She knows it is wrong. She hides it.

That means that the last part of this verse has come true in Susie's heart: **And when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.** She knew the commandment, **You shall not steal.** But she took it anyway. Sin revived, and she died to God. She is old enough to know right from wrong. She needs to be born from above. She needs to be saved.

Every person has original sin. It is inevitable that a person will become a sinner by choice. God does not make you do wrong when you reach the age of accountability, but the sin nature does. Every human being is enslaved to his sin nature. He does not

want to do wrong, but he will. Every child upon reaching the age of accountability is pulled by his sin nature into an act of sin. There is no way to be delivered from this sin nature and these sinful acts except through the death and resurrection of Jesus. You have to be saved - after you are old enough to understand and choose for yourself.

2. UNDERSTAND HOW TO BE SAVED

(1) INNOCENT CHILDREN ARE SAFE

Each child is born in original sin. God cannot allow sin to enter heaven. How can innocent children infected with original sin who die before they are old enough to choose Jesus, go to heaven? Jesus' death on the cross automatically takes care of all innocent children. Their original sin is cleansed away by the blood of Jesus, and they enter heaven. They did not choose sin. They did not choose Jesus. Jesus takes care of them because they cannot choose for themselves.

Some may say that the parents have to give or dedicate them to God for them to be saved. There is nothing in the Bible that teaches this, and look how unfair that would be to infants who die in the homes of unbelievers.

Always remember this: In the New Covenant baptism is reserved for those who are old enough to choose Jesus for themselves. Once a person has taken Jesus for the forgiveness of his sins and eternal life, then he is to be baptized in water. A child does not need to be baptized, because a child cannot choose Jesus. Baptism means that you have deliberately taken Jesus as your Savior. A child cannot do that. You should dedicate your children to God, but reserve baptism for them when they take Jesus by their own choice.

Read 2 Samuel 12.

David committed adultery with Bathsheba. A child was born. David asked God's forgiveness. He was obligated to take Bathsheba as his wife, and provide for the child. A few days after the child was born, the child became seriously ill. David fasted and prayed for God to spare the child's life. For seven days his servants tried to persuade him to eat, but he would not. On the seventh day the child died. His servants were afraid to tell him.

When David saw them whispering he sensed that the child had died. When he knew the child was dead, immediately he rose from prayer, washed his face, changed his clothing, went to the Temple and worshipped God, then went to his own house and

48 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

ate. His servants did not understand. They said,

2 Sam 12:21-23

21 Then said his servants unto him, What thing is this that thou hast done? thou didst fast and weep for the child, while it was alive; but when the child was dead, thou didst rise and eat bread.

22 And he said, While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept: for I said, Who can tell whether GOD will be gracious to me, that the child may live?

23 But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me. (KJV)

2 Samuel 12:21HB What word is this that you have done? When the child was alive you fasted and wept, and when the child has died you rise and eat food.

22 And he said, While the child was alive, I fasted and wept, because I said, Who can know by seeing - and Jehovah may stoop down in grace to me, and the child may live?

23 And now he has died; why should I fast? Am I able to bring him back again? I shall walk to him, and he shall not return to me.

David went to heaven. We know the baby went to heaven, for they went to the same place. This is a clear Scripture that states pointedly that babies go to heaven when they die.

(2) BUT YOU ARE NO LONGER AN INNOCENT CHILD

You are no longer an innocent child. You have passed the age of accountability. You are not innocent any longer. You have sinned, and lack the glory of God, Romans 3:23.

3. THE NINE DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS OF THE HUMAN BEING

You have three parts to your being, and each part has three functions. This makes a total of nine functions. The three basic parts of the human being are: Spirit, soul, and body, 2 Thes. 5:23. Each one of these three parts also has three basic functions.

A. THE FUNCTIONS OF THE HUMAN SPIRIT

In your spirit the functions are:

- (1) Intuition**
- (2) Conscience**
- (3) Communion**

The function of your intuition is to receive thoughts from God. It is your spiritual radio receiver. Your conscience gives you the basic consciousness of right and wrong. Your communion is your transmitter, your capacity to talk to God.

B. THE FUNCTIONS OF YOUR SOUL

- (4) Your Mind to think**
- (5) Your Emotions to feel**
- (6) Your Will to decide**

The three functions of your soul are to think, to feel, and to decide.

C. THE FUNCTIONS OF YOUR BODY

Then the three functions of the body are:

- (7) Production of goods and services**
- (8) Reproduction of children**
- (9) Defense to protect yourself.**

You use your body to produce goods and services, which you exchange with others to obtain the goods and services that you need. Reproduction is your ability to reproduce children. Defense is your ability to protect yourself.

In all of these areas we are sinners. Our spirit has died to God. We do not hear the voice of God in our spirit. Our conscience is defiled and overactive. It does not guide us in right and wrong, yet we feel constantly guilty. We do not commune with God. [I am speaking of unbelievers, not the saved].

Our minds are proud and haughty. We think what we want to think, and we pay little attention to God's thoughts. Our feelings are not controlled by the fruit of the

50 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Spirit. We feel very little love and a lot of hate. We are depressed, guilty, discouraged, bitter, lustful, out of control. Our emotions are defiled by sin. Our will is enslaved. When we want to do what is right, we find that we cannot. We crave what we do not have, and what we have does not satisfy us.

Our production is not good. We are ignorant, lazy, and unproductive. Our reproduction is immoral. We commit fornication. We marry, and remarry. We bring children into the world that we do not take care of. Our bodies are filled with disease and bloodshed. Our entire lives are defiled with sin.

4. THE POWER TO MAKE A DECISION

God has given you the power and authority to make decisions. God created man to rule. God made man like Himself with the power to think, feel, and to decide.

A Decision

Now I want to explain to you how decisions are made. All decisions involve

**your mind,
your emotions, and
your will.**

If someone came right now to your door, and screamed, “Your house is on fire,” here is what would happen inside of you. Your mind will immediately investigate. Your eyes will look for fire and smoke. Your nose will try to smell smoke. If your mind sees evidence that your house is on fire, your mind will immediately alarm your emotions. You will feel a strong feeling to call the fire department and get out of the house. Your feelings will move your will to make a decision. Your will then makes a decision, and you get out of the house.

All decisions are made in the same way. Many decisions are not made that fast, but they are made in the same way.

**You mentally receive the information.
Your emotions respond with specific feelings.
Your will decides to take action.**

Let us illustrate a decision over a longer period of time.

Marriage.

You meet someone. You are mentally acquainted with that lady. You mentally know her. She mentally knows you, but nothing else is involved. After a time of seeing and talking to her, you begin to feel love for one another. You fall in love. Your emotions are involved, but you are not yet married. The decision is not yet complete. Finally your will acts. You stand before the minister, you are married, and you experience one another. The decision is complete, but it was not complete until your will acted.

It is the same with salvation. In your mind you can know that you are a sinner, and that Jesus died to save you, and still you are not saved. Just like you can know the house is on fire, and not do anything about it. You can be mentally acquainted with many ladies and not be married to any of them. Many people know about the Lord, but they are not saved.

Also your emotions can be troubled that you need to be saved, and still you are not saved. Just as you can be frightened that the house is on fire, and sit in the house, and be burned to death. You can be in love with someone, and not married. You are not saved until your will acts. After you know you are a sinner, after you know Jesus died for you, after you feel your need to be saved - then your will has to act. You have to make a decision to deliberately take Him. You have to talk to Him, and say, "Lord, I will. I take You as my Lord, now!" When you make that decision He saves you. At that moment you experience Him. You are not saved until your will acts. When your will acts you are saved.

5. EXACTLY HOW TO BE SAVED

Romans 10:9. Read it.

Rom 10:9-10

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. (KJV)

Rom 10:9 HB That if you will confess in your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in your heart that God raised him out of the dead, you will be saved

10 Because in the heart one believes into righteousness, and in the mouth confession is made into salvation,

It says that

you must confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead.

Your heart is you on the inside. Your heart includes your mind, your emotions, and your will.

You must know something. You must feel something. And you must decide something.

First, in order to make a decision to be saved, you must understand something.

There are basically just two things that you must understand:

(3) **“I am a sinner.”**

(4) **“Jesus died and rose for me.”**

If you understand these two things, you know enough to be saved. You probably know more than this, but that is all that is necessary to be saved. Anything else you know beyond that is good, but this is all you have to know. But, just knowing this is not enough to save you.

Second, you must feel your need to be saved.

You must want to be saved. You must desire to be saved. This is Holy Spirit conviction. The Holy Spirit is moving you toward God, and giving you a desire to be saved. You cannot be saved until the Holy Spirit draws you toward the Father. Your heart must be disturbed that you do not have the Lord in your heart. The Holy Spirit makes you conscious that you need Jesus. But again, knowing that you are a sinner, knowing that Jesus died and rose again to save you, and even feeling your need to be saved, is not enough to save you.

Remember, a decision is not complete until you take action, until your will acts.

Third, your will must decide to take Jesus as your Savior.

Now read Romans 10:13.

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (KJV)

Rom 10:13 HB Because whoever calls upon the name of the Lord will be saved.

It says that if you call upon the name of the Lord, that is, pray, and ask Him to save you, you will be saved. Your will acts when you call upon the Lord. Your will acts when you confess Jesus as Lord with your mouth, and believe God raised Him from the dead in your heart. Right now, if you do not have a time in your past when you know you deliberately and willfully, with understanding, gave your life to Jesus Christ, and took Jesus as your Lord and Savior, do it now by praying this simple prayer:

The Sinner's Prayer

"God forgive me.

I repent of my sins.

I believe Jesus died for me.

I believe He rose for me.

I take Jesus as my Lord and Savior.

I receive His eternal life.

Holy Spirit, give me the new birth, right now.

From this day forward my life is Yours.

Thank You, God, for saving me. In Jesus' name, Amen."

You said that prayer as sincerely as you knew how. Right?

Right!

Now, look at Romans 10:9. It says, "If you will confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus...."

"You confessed with your mouth the Lord Jesus in that prayer. Right?"

"Yes."

"It says that you must believe with your heart.

"You believed with your heart. You understood with your mind that you were a sinner and that Jesus died for you. You felt your need for Him, and you deliberately asked Him to come into your heart, and be your Savior. Right?"

"Yes."

"It says that if you do that you shall be what?"

"Saved!"

54 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

“Can God lie?”

“No.”

“Then what did He do for you when you prayed?”

“He saved me”.

“Look at verse 13.

It says that if you call upon the name of the Lord you shall be what?”

“Saved.”

“Can God lie?”

“No.”

“Then what did He do for you?”

“He saved me”.

“Then it is settled. You have made a decision. God has kept His Word. You are born from above.”

Faith is taking God’s word as true, letting it be a settled conclusion in your heart, and then acting in agreement with that decision. Faith is not feeling. Faith is resting upon the Word of God. You know you are saved because you made a genuine decision to take the Lord Jesus, and God’s Word says you are now saved. Praise God!

Chapter 5

GOD'S CALL UPON YOUR LIFE

OUTLINE OF THIS MESSAGE

- 1. Reasons why you should not be a pastor**
 - (5) You want to make a living.**
 - (6) You love to be in front of people**
 - (7) Others tell you that you should be a pastor.**
- 2. Good men, but not God-called pastors.**
- 3. Wolves in sheep's clothing.**
- 4. Five ministry gifts.**
- 5. A God-called pastor**
- 6. An important word of explanation**
- 7. Is God speaking to your heart now?**

You should not be a pastor, unless you know absolutely in your heart God has called you to be a pastor.

1. REASONS WHY YOU SHOULD NOT BE A PASTOR

(1) Some have become pastors because they thought it was a good way to make a living.

They decided to become pastors just like some people decide to become doctors or lawyers or mechanics, to make money. Some saw that pastors get paid, so they

56 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

wanted to be pastors so they would be paid. Some people see that medical doctors make money. So they decide to become doctors to make a lot of money. Others see that you can make money manufacturing shoes. Others see that they can make money growing vegetables. Some see that they can make money buying and selling jewelry. So some decide to become pastors to make money.

It is God's will for people to see money making opportunities, and go into those businesses, but this is not God's way to become a pastor. It is God's will for pastors to receive money, but this is not the reason to become a pastor.

If you became a pastor because you thought it would be a good business, you should no longer be a pastor. God did not call you to be a pastor. You made yourself a pastor. You should immediately resign from your church, and get other employment.

God does not approve your ministry. You are hurting the body of Christ. You cannot minister in the power of the Holy Spirit, because God can only use those He personally calls to be pastors.

(2) Some have become pastors because they love to be in front of people, and tell people what to do.

Some people just love to be in front of people. They love speaking to crowds of people. They enjoy being the center of attention. They enjoy being on the platform wherever there is a crowd. They love to do things in front of people. They love the applause of people. They enjoy entertaining people. They like to tell people what to do. They love for people to follow them.

This is a natural personality characteristic which some people have. If used right it is a gift of God. Actors have to have this ability. Political leaders have to be like this. Good business people need this type of personality. So do school teachers, tour guides, and sales people. A pastor has to have this ability, but it is not the right reason to become a pastor.

If you became a pastor simply because you enjoy being a leader, you are not a God-called pastor. You should resign from your Church, and no longer be a pastor. You should get a job in some other type of work. God does not want you to be a pastor. You became a pastor out of your own thoughts. You are not a God-called pastor.

Before we go further in these extremely important thoughts, I want you to understand this: I am not trying to create doubts in the hearts of those God has called to be pastors. You may have never heard anyone talk about these things before. You may

suddenly doubt that God has called you to be a pastor. Do not worry. If God has really called you to be a pastor, He will show you in your heart. You will know that God called you. Keep on reading this *Pastor's Manual*. Continue to study your Bible. You will know. If you are not called to be a pastor, you will be happy to know that. You will go and find the work God wants you to have, and you will be very happy.

If you are called, God will speak to your heart. You will hear His voice. You will know that you know that you know God has called you to be a pastor. You will be very happy. You will please God.

(3) Some have become pastors because their parents, or a pastor, or some good person told them that they should be a pastor.

Every Christian ought to be busy serving God. They should be studying their Bible, praying privately and publicly, tithing and giving offerings, witnessing to the lost, and praying for the sick. This is what every Christian should do. But so few do it. Often when a believer gets the power of God in His life, and starts acting like normal Christians should act, people think he ought to be a pastor. Good people see him doing all these good things, and they say to him, "You ought to be a pastor." Since he enjoys serving God, he thinks what they are saying is right. So, he decides to become a pastor.

But God did not tell him to be a pastor. People told him to be a pastor. God is the only one who appoints pastors. God is the only one that has the right to set a man in the church to be a pastor. People do not have that right. People cannot call pastors, and give them the power of the Holy Spirit. Only God can call a pastor, and give him the power of the Holy Spirit. You cannot call yourself to be a pastor. You cannot give yourself the power of the Holy Spirit. If you realize that people put you in the ministry, resign, and do not be a pastor. Do something else. Let God bless you as a faithful Christian, but do not try to be a pastor when God has not called you to be a pastor.

2. GOOD MEN, BUT NOT GOD-CALLED PASTORS

What I have described so far are good men who became pastors because they honestly thought they should. Their hearts are not evil. They are simply mistaken. They have not committed some horrible sin. They simply are not where God wants them to be. They should change employment, because they are not in the will of God. If this is your case, ask God. He will show you where you should be.

3. Wolves In Sheep's Clothing

There is another kind of pastor. He is a wolf in sheep's clothing. He became a pastor because he has an evil heart. He lusts for money and power over people.

I write these words for two reasons:

First, to warn you, and call you to repent, if you are a wolf in sheep's clothing.

A wolf does not love the Shepherd, nor does he love the sheep. He wants one thing - to steal everything he can from the sheep. He cares not if the sheep suffer sickness and poverty, as long as he can take everything for himself. A wolf-pastor is a liar. He sends letters to people where he thinks he cannot be detected, asking them to send money for the sheep. When people send him money for the sheep, he takes it all for himself. He writes lies to those who give. He tells them about all the great things he is doing for the sheep. But he never does anything for the sheep.

He takes pictures of little children in the community, and writes to people that these are the orphans their money is feeding. Yet these children belong to their parents, and this wolf-pastor does not feed anyone but himself and his family.

Some pastors (and missionaries) use money to "buy" pastors and churches. They hire pastors who are willing to be loyal to anyone who will pay them. They send pictures of these pastors and churches to Christians in other countries. They use these pastors and churches, or orphan children, to raise money for themselves. They lie and deceive. They use God's work to cover up their hypocrisy. They are wolves in sheep's clothing. They are destroying God's work. They are starving God's sheep. They are giving God a bad reputation. Sinners laugh at them, and despise them, because they are using religion the same way the sinner uses drugs, alcohol, and prostitution.

If you are caught in this trap, if you are not too far-gone for this message to touch your heart, repent now. Stop using the Lord's church as your covering for lies and deception.

Second, if you are a God-called pastor, do not become involved with pastors and missionaries who do this.

If you discover that your pastors or missionaries are doing this, warn them, and have no part in what they are doing. Pray for them, but separate yourself from them.

There are many pastors and missionaries who are not saved. They do not know God, Mat. 7:22-23. Some who are saved get involved in deception and lies.

Do not approve of these things. Do not participate with them. Do not associate with them. Love them and pray for them, but do not take part in their sins.

Do not go around judging everyone. Do not listen to rumors, and accuse pastors of doing wrong when you do not know the facts. Do not falsely accuse your brothers in the ministry. Do not appoint yourself the holy investigator to see if everyone is as righteous as you are. Stay out of other people's business. But in your work where you are responsible, do not allow it to continue. Separate yourself from it.

4. THE FIVE MINISTRY GIFTS

**There are five main areas where God calls ministers.
They are:**

- (1) Apostles,**
- (2) Prophets,**
- (3) Evangelists,**
- (4) Pastors, and**
- (5) Teachers.**

All five of these God-called ministries are extremely important to the local church body, to the entire body of Christ on earth, and to unbelievers. This *Manual* is specifically for pastors, but since it deals primarily with character, faith, and knowledge, it will benefit any minister of God. God gave us *The Pastor's Manual* to train pastors around the world. That is where my special gift has been for over forty years. God has also thrust me into exercising the gift of apostleship, plus the gift of evangelist. I have exercised the gift of pastor and teacher since 1950. This is not a "how to" book on growing and directing a church. *The Pastor's Manual* is about the personal faith, knowledge, and character of the pastor.

Any apostle, or prophet, or evangelist, or teacher who reads *The Pastor's Manual* under the anointing of the Holy Spirit will receive help to develop their Holy Spirit-given gift.

5. A GOD-CALLED PASTOR

How do you know God has called you to be a minister? There is only one answer. There are various things that will help confirm in your heart that you are called, but there is only one way to know. There are other proofs that will help confirm to others that God called you to be a minister, but still there is only one way for you to know for sure that God wants you to be a minister. You can read the Bible from beginning to end, and you will never find but one way to know that God wants you to be a minister. Read the stories of all of God's ministers from Genesis forward. You will find that they all came to know that God wanted them to be ministers the same way.

Here is the one and only way to know:

**God speaks to you personally,
and tells you that He wants you to be a minister.**

This is what He did in the Bible. God spoke to each one personally and directly, and told him He was calling him to be His special minister. You will find no other way to know. A minister (apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor, teacher) is someone God speaks to directly, and gives him messages to give to His church and the world (in total harmony with the Bible which disciplines our ears to recognize His voice).

If you have not heard God's voice, you have no message for His church or the world. If you have not heard His voice calling you to preach, you have no message to preach. From Sunday to Sunday and day to day you have nothing to give except your own opinions.

Do not be among those ministers who never claim to hear God's voice on anything. They stand in God's church week after week, and give their own opinion. They give the opinions that men have taught them. They pass on to their flock, Sunday after Sunday, the traditions of men. They do not even claim that God has spoken to them. They are not God called. They do not know His voice. Sometimes they do not even believe that God spoke to men and women in the Bible, as the Bible says.

The church would be greatly benefited if all such ministers would either get out of the ministry, or get on their face before God until they know they have heard His voice. They should not preach again until they know that they have a message from God.

6. AN IMPORTANT WORD OF EXPLANATION

You can hear God's voice, and know God has called you to be a minister before you know whether or not you are to be an apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor, or teacher. Since God needs more pastors than any other type of minister, God will lead most of his ministers to become pastors. That does not mean God wants you to be a pastor.

Again: the only way for you to know is for God to tell you. You must hear His voice. He will speak to you in your heart. He will tell you He wants you as one of his ministers. If you obey His voice, and begin to train under another God-called minister, at the right time and place God will tell you what kind of minister He wants you to be. In the process of your lifetime you may move from one ministry gift into another, but God will tell you. He will prepare you, and He will tell you. You may operate in more than one ministry gift, but God will tell you. This is the only way to know.

7. IS GOD SPEAKING TO YOUR HEART NOW?

After you have read this chapter, what is God saying to your heart? Are you confused, in doubt, and do not know what to think or say? Is this message strange to your ears? Do you need to talk with someone who knows for sure that they know God's voice? If you do, seek out a true man of God. Get that man to talk with you and pray with you until you know what God is telling you to do.

If you have truly heard God's voice, then God's Spirit is witnessing with your spirit that I speak the truth. You know in your "knower" that God has called you. God is confirming this message in your heart. Your commitment to God and His calling is now going deeper than you have ever gone. Nothing can shake your call from God. People, money, lack of money, hardships, discouragement - nothing can shake your call from God. It is not "for sale" at any price. You know you were bought by the precious blood of Jesus. You know He set you apart as His special minister. You heard His voice. You know Him. He talks to you. You know you are called to be His minister.

Chapter 6

THE REQUIREMENTS FOR PASTORS AND ASSISTANTS

OUTLINE OF THIS MESSAGE

1. God calls the pastor to perfection
2. The husband of one wife.
 - (1) Never change what the Word of God says.
 - (2) Allowing the divorced and remarried to be pastors
3. When husband and wife agree
4. Making your wife what God wants her to be
 - A. Instructions for husbands
 - (1) Stop nagging.
 - (2) Start loving her.
 - (3) Compliment her.
 - (4) Find specific Scripture verses that describe how you want her to be.
 - (5) Read those Scriptures privately and pray.
 - (6) Concentrate on enjoying life with her.
 - (7) Sincerely believe God.
 - B. Instructions for wives.
 - (1) Stop nagging.
 - (2) Start loving him.
 - (3) Compliment him.
 - (4) Find specific Scripture verses that describe how you want him to be.
 - (5) Read those Scriptures privately and pray.
 - (6) Concentrate on enjoying life with him.
 - (7) Sincerely believe God.
 - C. Instructions for parents
 - (1) Stop nagging.
 - (2) Make a few good rules and enforce them.
 - (3) Make discipline painful enough for them to want to obey the rules.
 - (4) Compliment them every way you can.
 - (5) Love them genuinely.
 - (6) Find Scripture verses that describe how you want your children to be.

- (7) Have family devotions with your children.
- (8) Sincerely believe God.

D. Instructions for young people

- (1) Stop criticizing your parents.
- (2) Start loving your parents.
- (3) Compliment your parents.
- (4) Find specific Bible verse that give you wisdom and self control.
- (5) Read and pray over those Bible verses.
- (6) Concentrate on all the good your parents do.
- (7) Sincerely believe God.

5. Pray for your spouse.

6. The importance of the husband's prayers.

7. A special word to wives whose husbands are not spiritual.

A. A list of don'ts

- (1) Do not tell him he is not spiritual.
- (2) Do not tell others he is not spiritual.
- (3) Do not refuse to consult him on spiritual matters.
- (4) Do not tell him he needs to become spiritual.

B. Some do's

- (1) Start thanking God for your husband.
- (2) Privately pray Bible verses for him.
- (3) Do everything you can to please him.
- (4) Concentrate on your own self-improvement.
- (5) Get discipline over yourself.
- (6) Parents are to correct their children, not their spouse.
- (7) Get discipline over yourself and you can discipline your children.

8. A prayer for yourself

9. A prayer for your wife.

10. A prayer for your children

11. Husband and wife submitting to one another

12. Good will toward your spouse

13. Total faithfulness and total harmony

God gave us the requirements for pastors and assistant ministers in 1 Timothy 3. These are extremely important. I will not deal in detail with all the requirements listed here. I have dealt with most of them in principle in other chapters. God wants me to speak to you about some great principles in these verses.

1. God Calls The Pastor To Perfection

God's requirement in this chapter for pastors and assistant ministers is perfection. This is what Jesus said to His disciples in

Matt 5:48

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.
(KJV)

Matthew 5:48 HB

You therefore be perfect, even as your Father in heaven is perfect.

The pastors and assistant ministers are God's leaders for His people. No church can reach any higher than its pastor. If the pastor is a bad example in his life, the church will be greatly hindered. The sheep cannot lead the shepherd. The shepherd must lead the sheep. That means he must be closer to God than his flock. He must be more like Jesus than his church members. He must live a life more obedient to the Word of God than his members.

He must be an outstanding example for his members to follow. He must set the example in his personal life, in his home with his family, in his self-control, in his attitude and treatment of others, in his knowledge of the Word of God, in his ability to teach the Word of God, in control over the appetites of his body, and in obedience to God in his finances, and in his health.

God makes special requirements upon the pastor in being the godly leader of his wife and family. He must be experienced, and more knowledgeable than his members. And he must have a good reputation in the community, both with the unbelievers as well as the believers.

The same list of perfect character traits are listed for the deacons, because deacons are actually God-called assistant ministers corresponding to the Levites who assisted the priests. They are not lay people drafted for the job, but this is another question which you will have to address in your own way. See special notes in *The Heritage Bible* on 2 Corinthians 3:6 and 1 Timothy 3:8.

The pastor must preach the Word of God. The pastor must live the Word of God. Church members will not follow a pastor who preaches one thing, and lives another. You must consistently live what you preach, and what you preach must be the Word of God.

2. The Husband of One Wife

At this point I want to deal with a very complicated issue. This is the requirement that the pastor be the husband of one wife. Since *The Pastor's Manual* is used in many different groups around the world, I do not propose to tell each group how to solve the problem. What I want to do is state some Bible principles that will help you make the best decision you can make.

(1) Never change what the Word of God says.

The Bible says he must be the husband of one wife. Some think that means he must not have but one wife at a time. That is not what the text says. Polygamy was not practiced in Jesus' day in Israel. This is not a command against polygamy or concubinage.

Saint Paul does not mean that a pastor must have a wife. Paul did not have a wife. We reason that Paul had a wife at one time because all members of the Sanhedrin had to be married, and Paul was a member of the Sanhedrin. What happened to his wife we do not know. She may have left him when he met Jesus and became a Christian minister, or she may have died. We do not know.

Paul is declaring the ideal for the pastor. The ideal is that the pastor fulfill the perfect plan Jesus laid down in His words in Matthew 19:3-9. Although Moses gave Israel permission to divorce and remarry, this was never God's perfect will for anyone. No one can interpret Jesus' words in Matthew 19 to allow divorce and remarriage except because of fornication. Divorce and remarriage for other reasons may be allowed on other Scriptures or other principles, but not on these verses. The words in 1 Timothy 3:2 do not allow for divorce and remarriage of the pastor.

Do not try to make the Bible say something it does not say. You must be absolutely honest in dealing with Holy Scripture. The pastor, of all people, is the one who must have integrity of heart. Do not twist Scripture, trying to make it say what you want it to say, here, nor anywhere else.

If you allow men who have been divorced and remarried to be ordained pastors in your church, this is between you and God, but do not try to twist these passages of the Bible to say something they do not say.

(2) Allowing The Divorced and Remarried to Be Pastors

I personally have struggled with this question over the years as I have dealt with men who felt called to minister, but who had been divorced and remarried. I do not have the question solved, but I have ordained men who were divorced and remarried.

One approach that some groups take is that it is a sin that is forgiven like all other sins. Once it is forgiven, it is past, and the man may be a minister. If you take that position, justify it on the basis of the Scriptures that teach forgiveness. Do not twist Matthew 19, or 1 Timothy 3.

You can take the position that 1 Timothy 3 sets the perfect standard for pastors. Since even the best pastors are not perfect in other areas, yet we use them, they do not have to be perfect in this area also. 1 Timothy 3 requires that the pastor be an expert teacher. Some pastors definitely are not great teachers, yet we allow them to be pastors. Many pastors do not have their finances under control, yet we allow them to be pastors. We can take the same position with divorce and remarriage. It is not the ideal, but we have to allow people to answer God's call as they are, not as we would like them to be. This is the position that I follow.

The point I urge upon you is integrity of heart. Do not twist the Scriptures to please your needs. If you do not live up to a command of the Lord, be honest in how you handle it. People see right through hypocrisy, and God hates hypocrisy. Let us have integrity of heart. This is the greatest requirement God has for pastors. This is the one absolute evidence of the baptism of the Holy Spirit -integrity of heart. Amen!

3. When Husband and Wife Agree

Pastor, besides your personal relationship with the Lord Jesus, your relationship with your wife is the most important relationship in the world. Wonders can be done when a husband and wife are in total agreement with God and with one another. Here follows some very practical instructions on what the Bible teaches about your relationship with your wife.

4. Making Your Wife What God Wants Her To Be

Pastor, if you want to see your wife change into the person you want her to be, follow these top priority steps immediately:

A. INSTRUCTION FOR HUSBANDS

(1) Stop nagging, stop criticizing, stop pointing out her faults. Say nothing about them.

(2) Start loving her every way you can. Look for things to do to please her.

(3) Compliment her on everything where you can make a sincere, genuine compliment.

(4) Find specific Scripture verses that describe exactly how you want her to be.

(5) Begin to read those Scriptures privately, between you and the Lord, asking God to make your wife exactly as these Scripture verses describe how a woman should be.

(6) Concentrate on enjoying life, and being happy with her.

(7) Sincerely believe God will answer your prayers.

B. INSTRUCTION FOR WIVES

(1) Stop nagging, stop criticizing, stop pointing out his faults. Say nothing about them.

(2) Start loving him every way you can. Look for things to do to please him.

(3) Compliment him on everything where you can make a sincere, genuine compliment.

(4) Find specific, Scripture verses that describe exactly how you want him to be.

(5) Begin to read those Scriptures privately, between you and the Lord, asking God to make your husband exactly as these Scripture verses describe how a man should be.

(6) Concentrate on enjoying life, and being happy with him.

(7) Sincerely believe God will answer your prayers.

C. INSTRUCTION FOR PARENTS

With children the top priority steps vary only slightly from the steps for a spouse. The one element you must add with children, which you cannot add with spouses is:

Make a few good rules and enforce them with firmness and love.

So here are the top priority steps to follow for changing your children into the beautiful and good children you want them to be.

(1) Stop nagging, stop criticizing, and stop pointing out their faults.

(2) Make a few good rules you know are right and good, and enforce them with firmness and love.

(3) When they break the rules, make the discipline painful enough to make breaking the rules very undesirable.

(4) Compliment them on every good thing they do, and reward them to make doing right and doing good very desirable.

(5) Love them genuinely, and live before them exactly as you want them to live.

(6) Find Bible verses that describe obedient and godly children, and read those Scriptures privately, between you and the Lord, asking God to make them exactly as these verses describe how children should be.

(7) Have family devotions with your children.

(8) Begin to Sincerely believe that God will answer your prayers.

D. INSTRUCTION FOR YOUNG PEOPLE

(1) Stop criticizing and finding fault with your parents. Right or wrong, they are your parents, and God has placed them over you for your protection. Do not make their job harder by constantly criticizing them.

(2) Start loving your parents every way you can. Be obedient. Do everything you can to please them and make life enjoyable for them.

(3) Compliment your parents on everything where you can make a sincere compliment. Be grateful, and thank them for all the work they do to pay your bills, and provide for you.

(4) Find specific Scripture verses about wisdom, self control, and love, verses that describe how parents and adults should be.

(5) Begin to read those verses between you and the Lord, and pray that your parents will be filled with wisdom in giving you direction.

(6) Concentrate on all the good things your parents provide you, and enjoy all the good things of life that God has given you through your parents.

(7) Sincerely believe that God will answer your prayers, that your parents will understand your needs, and make life wonderful for you.

Pastor, it is your responsibility to teach these principles, first to your own children, and then to the children and youth of the congregation. They will not have this *Manual* to read. Parents have to teach their children how the children are to treat their parents.

5. Pray For Your Spouse

Gen 25:21

21 And Isaac intreated the LORD for his wife, because she was barren: and the LORD was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. (KJV)

Genesis 25:21 HB

And Isaac ignited a prayer as incense to Jehovah for his wife, because she was barren, and Jehovah received his prayer, and Rebekah, his wife, conceived.

I want to emphasize again the complete futility of either husband or wife trying to change the other by constantly telling your spouse what you want them to do and be like. It is totally useless. Once you have established a real good relationship, you may request your spouse to do certain things, and get a positive response, but without mutual respect and appreciation, and a strong desire already present in each heart, even a request will go unheeded. If you want to see your spouse change for the better, do two things:

[1] Do everything you possibly can to please your spouse, and

[2] constantly pray to God with Scripture verses that describe how you want your spouse to be.

6. THE IMPORTANCE OF THE HUSBAND'S PRAYERS

The husband is the head of the wife; not her boss, but her head. He is her leader and provider. When she needs something, the husband is to provide it. If the husband does not have it, he is to ask God for it for his wife. This is what Isaac did for Rebekah. The Bible says Isaac prayed to God for his wife, and God gave him what he asked. We know that they both wanted a baby. They had to have children for God's promise to be fulfilled in their lives. It does not say that Rebekah prayed for a child, and God heard her prayer, and gave her a child. I am sure she prayed, but God placed the responsibility on Isaac. His wife had a need, and it was Isaac's responsibility to provide for that need. It was a need beyond his resources. For some reason she lacked the physical ability to conceive. The Bible says she was barren. She needed to be healed.

It was Isaac's responsibility to pray for his wife to be healed. Isaac prayed, and God healed her, and she conceived. From that conception ultimately came the Lord Jesus. Because Isaac prayed for Rebekah to be healed, you and I have a Savior. Every husband's praying for his wife may not affect such worldwide importance, but his prayers will certainly affect their immediate world. The husband's prayers will make their home a better world to live in, and will certainly make their relationship so much more enjoyable. Husbands, pray for your wives. It will make all the difference in your world.

Read

Four Holy Principles for Fathers in The Heritage Bible, Genesis 2:17, and Joseph, The Greatest Father In The World, Matthew 1:19.

7. A SPECIAL WORD TO WIVES WHOSE HUSBANDS ARE NOT SPIRITUAL

Pastor, let me give you advice about how to counsel women in your church whose husbands are not spiritual. When I address you on the subject of “husbands who are not spiritual,” I am not judging them, I am only stating an observable fact without judging them or criticizing them.

The following words are written to wives:

I am instructing wives who are spiritual, and want their husbands to share in the joys of the Lord. I am instructing those who have husbands who may or may not attend church, but who by their actions and attitudes are not spiritually minded. You must be cautious in judging whether or not your husband is spiritual, especially if he attends church. He may be more spiritual than he lets you know. Some men are not particularly expressive of their relationship to God. Sometime you find that they believe much more deeply than you realized. But, assuming we have right perception, and he is not as spiritual as the wife, here are some definite instructions to follow.

A. A LIST OF DON'TS

[1] Do not tell him that he is not spiritual.

If you tell him that he is not spiritual, you simply create greater blockages to his becoming spiritual.

[2] Do not tell other people that he is not spiritual, even for the purpose of having them pray for him.

Very often this creates further hindrance to his faith.

[3] Do not refuse to consult him on spiritual matters, and feel he is not qualified to help you in spiritual things.

If you give him the opportunity to help you, he may surprise you.

[4] Do not tell him he needs to become more spiritual.

This is criticism, and it never helps. He simply knows by that remark that you do not have confidence in his wisdom. He feels "put down" by your words. This does two things. First, it hinders his relationship with you, because he knows that in your sight he does not measure up to your expectations. Second, it hinders his confidence in God. It is more difficult to trust God, when others are telling you that you do not know how to trust God.

B. SOME DO'S

[1] First and foremost, start thanking God for your husband - privately and in his presence.

Thank God for every good thing you can think of that he is and does, for you and for others. Become very grateful for your husband, and be sure it shows in everything you say and do.

[2] Privately pray Scripture verses for him that describe a spiritual person.

Mark these verses in your Bible, and/or copy them into your prayer notebook, and pray over them daily until you begin to see them taking place in your husband.

[3] Do everything you can to please your husband.

[4] Constantly concentrate on your own self-improvement.

Daily make yourself more spiritual. The more spiritual you become, the less judgmental you become. The more spiritual you become, the more appreciative you become of everyone for everything they do that is right, whether they are truly spiritual or not. True spirituality is not self-righteous. True spirituality appreciates every good thing you find in every person.

(5) Get Discipline Over Yourself

The Bible commands the wife to please her husband, and commands the husband to love his wife as he loves himself. The Bible nowhere gives husband or wife the freedom to criticize or correct his or her spouse. God's command to the wife to obey is a command to the wife. It is not a command to the husband to boss his wife. The

command to the husband is to love his wife, not to boss her.

(6) The Parents Are To Correct Their Children, Not Their Spouses.

Forget your spouse's faults. Concentrate on enjoying God, life, and your spouse. Pray to God to make your spouse exactly as God wants him or her to be. Let God manage your spouse, and you concentrate on enjoying your spouse. This is the most important principle in a happy marriage.

(7) PARENTS, DISCIPLINE YOURSELF, AND YOU CAN THEN DISCIPLINE YOUR CHILDREN.

Here is the most important principle for parents in gaining good control over their children:

If your concentration is on getting control over your children, you are concentrating on the wrong thing. Concentrate on getting control over yourself. Once you get control over yourself, then you can exercise control over your children. Many parents lose control over their children because they lose control between themselves. All children know when their parents are not in harmony with one another. When parents conflict with one another, the devil agitates the children into rebellion, because their covering of authority is broken in their parents. Establish harmony between you and your spouse, and you can re-establish your authority over your children.

You may say, "But I have to get control over my children. They are my most important possession in the world." This is not true. Your most important possession in the world is the Lord Jesus. After Him, your most important possession in the world is yourself. Unless you get control over yourself, you are worthless to your children. Your first obligation is not to your children, nor to your spouse, nor to anyone else. Your first obligation is to your Lord to rule yourself for His glory.

Do not build your life around your children, nor even around your spouse. Build your life around the Lord. Get control over your life.

You are dealing with the powers of darkness. Pull out the sword of the Spirit, and start doing battle with the powers of darkness that are hurting your family. Get the victory over these evil powers for yourself first. Then you can take authority over your children.

Claim Proverbs 16:32 for yourself:

He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty; and he that ruleth his spirit than he that taketh a city. (KJV)

Pro 16:32 HB

Better is he who waits long before *his* nostrils burn than the mighty, and he who rules his spirit than he who captures a city.

Deal with the unclean spirit of anger. Cast anger out of your life. Anger is caused by the feeling that you have been mistreated. Anger soon gives way to feeling sorry for yourself. Then follows depression. When you are depressed the devil can jump on you with all four feet, and plunder you to the limit. Deal with that spirit of anger and feeling mistreated, and get the rule over your spirit. Use 2 Corinthians 10:4 with Proverbs 16:32 to resist the unclean spirits of anger and depression, and get control over yourself.

8. A Prayer For Yourself

Father, in the name of Jesus, I refuse to be angry at those I love. You, unclean spirits of anger and self-pity, I resist you by the power of the blood of Jesus. I drive you out of my life. You will no longer drive me out of control.

It is written, The weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds. Devil, my weapons against you are mighty through God. I am pulling down your strongholds of anger and depression in my life. You will no longer have your nests of anger in my heart. I throw out the imaginations you have created in my mind. I remove the pictures of hurt, defeat, and unforgiveness you have put in my heart. I remove them from my life, because I am mighty through God.

I cast down every imagination and every high thing that exalts itself against my self-control under Christ. Jesus is my Lord. I am in control under Him. I rule myself, so I can bless my spouse, and rule my children. I have the victory over myself. In the name of Jesus. Amen!

9. A Prayer For Your Wife

Father, in the name of Jesus, I thank you for my wife. I ask you to help her maintain good self-control. It is written, Because God has absolutely not given us the

76 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

spirit of timidity, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. [2 Tim. 1:7]. Give her a strong healthy mind, good emotions of joy and peace, and a strong healthy body. Bless her with the spirit of meekness and self-control.

Help her to see that the weapons of her warfare are also mighty through God. Help her pull down every stronghold of anger and self-pity the devil tries to build in her. Help her to cast down every imagination that discourages her, and makes her feel defeated.

I resist you, devil, for her. I am her head. I am her protector. In the name of Jesus, I protect my wife from you, devil. You keep your hands off her. I will no longer allow you to steal our happiness, and plunder us with your anger. I receive the love of God for my wife and our children.

Blessed Holy Spirit, fill me with love for my wife. Help me to love her as Christ loved the church and gave Himself for it. I give myself to make my wife happy and blessed. Father, place your hedge of protection around her. Let the beauty of the Lord our God be upon us, and establish the work of our hands. Yes, the work of our hands, establish it. In Jesus' name. Amen!

These are only sample prayers. Take this example, and make your own prayers to make your spouse beautiful for God.

10. Here is an example of a prayer for your children.

Father, in the name of Jesus, I pray for [name your children]. These children belong to you, because it is written, All souls are mine [Ezek. 18:4]. You are the Giver of life. These children belong to you, but you have placed them in my home to bring them up for You. [Read Psalm 127:3-5.] I claim for them happiness and blessing. I pray upon them the spirit of obedience. I pray for them Ephesians 6:1-4. [Read it and pray this Scripture.]

Father, help me to live before them so that they will want to obey me. Give me an obedient heart to obey You, Father, and give them an obedient heart to obey me. Fill me with the Spirit of obedience. Let them see in me an obedient heart toward You, Father. Help me to live in front of them in such a manner that it makes it easy for them to honor me. Help me to live a life so obedient to You, that they also want to obey You. I want them to have the blessing of a long and prosperous life.

Lord, help me not to provoke them to anger. Show me, Lord, how to lead them and discipline them so that I do not make them angry. Do not let me be the cause of anger in them. Let me be the cause of rejoicing in their hearts. Father, make my

obedience so pure that they can hear Your voice in my voice. Help me to train them so that it is easy for them to hear God's voice.

Lord, help me not to nag and criticize them. Help me to firmly and lovingly discipline them, but not to constantly criticize them. Help me to remember to compliment them, and encourage them every time I see them do something good.

I come against you unclean spirits that try to make our children disobedient. I resist you demons of anger and rebellion. I defeat you in my children's lives. I bind you away from my children. I have authority to do that, because my children are under my umbrella of authority. I throw you out of my domain. [Name any problems that bother your children. Address those problems as unclean spirits, and bind them away from your children.]

I resist you familiar spirits that hinder my child's learning ability, and ability to get along well with others. I resist you familiar spirits that cause my child not to tell the truth. In the name of Jesus, you lying spirit, get away from my child.

Father, strengthen my child to learn, and tell the truth. Strengthen my child in character like Jesus.

Father, help me to show genuine love for my children, and let them know that I really love them. In Jesus' name. Amen!

Find Scriptures that describe a good and godly son and daughter, and pray those Scriptures for your children. This is the way to make them victorious.

11. Husband and Wife, Submitting To One Another, Ephesians 5:21.

Eph 5:21-22

21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. (KJV)

Eph 5:21-22 HB

21 Arranging yourselves under one another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, subordinate yourselves to your own husbands, as to the Lord, and I speak as to Christ and as to the church.

Both husband and wife are to submit first to the Lord, and secondly to one another.

Any husband who has not learned yet that sometimes he is wrong and his wife is right, either has not lived long with a wife, or is extremely stubborn and hard headed. I remind you again that the command for the wife to submit to her husband is a command to the wife, not a command to the husband. Wives, subordinate yourselves to your own husbands, is a command to create in her a right attitude toward her husband, and toward her position in relationship to her husband and her Lord. It is not a mandate to the husband to “boss” his wife. The command to the husband is, Husbands, love your wives, as Christ loved the church and gave himself for it.

I have learned not to argue with my wife. She has learned not to argue with me. I have learned to prayerfully listen to her, and prayerfully consider what she says. I kindly present to her my thoughts, and then we wait on the leadership of the Holy Spirit to bring us into full agreement. I have learned to respect the voice of God that regularly comes to me through my wife.

Let me help you to understand the times in which we live. In my parents day [the early 1900’s] the idea prevailed that the husband was the boss, and the wife was to do what she was told. In the last twenty years the pendulum swung the opposite direction with so called women’s liberation.

Both extreme positions have brought hurt and confusion to the home. When the husband was the boss, there was much unhappiness and confusion. Often husbands were dictatorial and unreasonable in their demands. Often husbands and wives continued to live together with hurts and anger, which caused their children to turn against marriage. When women began to declare their independence, and do whatever they chose, there was much hurt and confusion. Then came the acceptance of divorce. Many men not only stopped being the “boss,” they stopped being husbands. So today, many Christian marriages are destroyed. Even when husbands and wives are still living together, often their marriage is still destroyed. But it does not have to be. Your broken hearts can be healed.

The only marriage arrangement that works is where both husband and wife submit to God, and then mutually submit to one another. The perfect marriage is where the husband loves God with all his heart, and loves his wife as himself. And the wife loves the Lord with all her heart, and her husband as herself. Both of them must realize that God leads both husband and wife, and each must give the other complete freedom to follow the Holy Spirit. [See message on Gen 2:17 and Mat 1:19 in *The Heritage Bible*.]

Both husband and wife are members of Christ. The wife has the right and re-

sponsibility to hear the voice of the Holy Spirit, and she must have the freedom to follow His voice. Her husband must give her this freedom so that both of them can have the riches that come when both are led by the Holy Spirit. He must not treat her as a child, bossing her every move as a parent does a seven year old. The wife must have the privilege of maturing in the Lord, and learning how to make decisions between her and God, or she will never be a responsible, Christian adult. She can never assume her rightful responsibilities if she is never allowed to make decisions on her own between her and God. If she has to fight her husband for every inch of freedom she gets, she cannot develop the Christ-like attitudes she should have. She will constantly struggle with feelings of mistreatment and rebellion. She will have difficulty having a good attitude toward God, because the authority God placed over her constantly fights the Spirit of God in her. Many husbands use their God-given position of authority to satisfy their own egos, instead of using that authority to meet their wife's needs.

Husbands, when you allow your wife to hear God's voice with you, and make the decision as equal partners in Christ, your whole self is participating in the decision. When you deny your wife the privilege of expressing the leadership that God gives her, you are denying yourself the benefit of the leadership of the Holy Spirit in your whole person. The two of you are one. If you make all the decisions, only one-half of you is participating. You are denying the other half of yourself the right to participate in life, when you refuse to allow your wife an equal voice in declaring what God is saying to both of you. If both of you hear the voice of the Holy Spirit, you will hear the same thing, and there is no argument. Both of you are fulfilled in Christ. If you are not hearing the same thing, you both need to wait before God until you are hearing the same voice.

Peace On Earth, Good Will Toward Husband and Wife

12. Good Will Toward Your Spouse

The message the angels gave at the birth of Jesus [in Luke 2:14] was, **upon earth peace in men of beautiful good thinking**. The word peace is a word meaning peace, prosperity, and every good thing. The words good thinking mean to delight in showing kindness to others. Oh, how we need good thinking in showing kindness to our spouses.

I made a commitment to myself many years ago: I will never be nicer or kinder to any lady on earth than I will be to my wife. I am extremely courteous to every woman in the church, and everywhere else, but I make it a point to always be nicer and kinder to my wife than anyone - not only at church, but at home when there is no one there but she and I. I will not criticize her to her back. I will not criticize her to her

80 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

face. I speak nothing but peace and good will to my wife. I have found that nothing else ever accomplishes anything. Peace, kindness, and good will accomplish everything.

When God created Adam, He created one complete human being. When He put Adam to sleep, and removed woman from his side, He made two halves, a male and a female. When a male and a female come together in marriage they make one whole human being. Wholeness and harmony is God's design in marriage.

What power and blessing so many husbands and wives are missing in their lives because they make little or no effort to be in agreement.

Matt 18:19-20

19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them. (KJV)

Matthew 18:19-20 HB

19 Again, Amen, I say to you that, If two of you will agree upon the earth about any matter whatever they will ask, it will be to them alongside of my Father in heaven,

20 Because where two or three are gathered together into my name, there I am in their midst.

Husband and wife, agree. Agree with God, and agree with one another. Look at what you can do if you ever get into agreement. You can have anything promised in God's Word if the two of you can get into genuine divine agreement. God ordained marriage as that one institution where two human beings can have complete harmony. Marriage is the only place that two humans can have that perfect unity God originally intended. Marriage is the only place you can have spiritual unity with physical and psychological unity. Oh, what great power and blessings a husband and a wife can experience if they can only agree in God.

13. Total Faithfulness and Total Harmony

Two out of the ten commandments deal with the husband and wife relationship. You shall not commit adultery, and you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, are both fundamental to husband and wife relationship.

Much unfaithfulness is caused by the lack of a harmonious response from the other spouse. Many a man has sought the companionship of another woman because

his wife was not responsive to him. Many a woman has sought the companionship of another man because her husband was not responsive to her. Responsiveness involves more than sexual response. There must be an understanding mind between the two. They must genuinely love and appreciate one another. They must desire to please one another.

Read

1 Cor 7:1-5

1 Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 7:1-5. HB

1 And concerning what you wrote to me: It is beautifully good for a man not to touch a woman,

2 But because of fornication, let each have his own wife, and let each have her own husband.

3 Let the husband give over to the wife the kindness owed *her*, and similarly also the wife to the husband.

4 The wife absolutely does not have authority over her own body, but the husband, and similarly also the husband absolutely does not have authority over his own body, but the wife.

5 Do not defraud one another, except possibly by spoken agreement for a time, that you may be unoccupied for fasting and for prayer, and come together again, that Satan may not tempt you through your lack of self control.

Your prayers are hindered unless you and your spouse are in harmony. Pray to God for the Spirit of harmony to fill both of you.

There is much more to sex than sex. Sex is no pleasure when there is disharmony. That is why people seek sex outside of their marriage. They want sex with mental and emotional approval and harmony. That is why a man can find such enjoyment [temporarily] with another woman, because she makes him feel that she under-

82 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

stands him and approves him. This is what his wife did not give him. This is why a woman can find satisfaction [temporarily] in the arms of another man, because he is tender, understanding, and putting forth great effort to please her, something her husband did not give her. I am showing you one of the main reasons for adultery - not a justification for it, but a reason for it.

That is why every husband and wife must pray for harmony. That is why I keep saying that sex involves much more than sex. People can obtain sex anywhere and everywhere, but ultimately there is no pleasure and satisfaction. A guilty conscience is enough to drive people insane, besides all the other complications that come from adultery. A human being cannot ultimately be happy about anything as long as there is disharmony in his basic relationships. You must have harmony with God, and then harmony with others in your most basic relationships for life to be meaningful. That is why it is so important for husbands and wives to pray for harmony.

Let us go a step further on the truth in the Ten Commandments pertaining to husband and wife. For our own good let us be as strict with ourselves as we possibly can. Our desire is to please God to the ultimate degree. We want to obey the command of the Lord Jesus in Matthew 5:48, **Be therefore perfect as your Father in heaven is perfect.**

We know that Jesus said if you lust after another woman you commit adultery in your heart. Jesus was talking about the tenth commandment, not to covet your neighbor's wife.

You must be careful in even comparing your spouse to someone else's spouse, and wishing in your heart that your spouse were like that person. Even this can verge on adultery. We all should see good traits in others and desire to have those traits in ourselves, but we must be careful in making those comparisons that we do not fall prey to the desire to have that person as our spouse instead of the spouse we have.

We all must be especially careful in comparing our spouse to someone else. In the first place you are judging the other person only very superficially. You do not know that other person as your spouse. You only know what you see under superficial circumstances. You have not lived with that person as you already have with your spouse. If that other person were living with you as your spouse, that other person might not please you as much as your spouse already does. Surface judgments are very dangerous judgments.

You should remember the old story about everyone who wanted to exchange their problems for someone else's problems. They all came together to exchange their problems. As each one came in he or she laid his problems down in the pile. After everyone was there, they began to examine the problems they wanted to take home

with them. When everyone finished choosing, they discovered that each one chose to take home the exact same problems he brought, for when he was able to really see the problems others had, he was more than willing to keep his own.

There is a similar story about bearing the cross. A man complained to the Lord that his cross was just too large. He wanted a smaller cross. So the Lord invited him to a room where he could deposit his cross, and select another one. As he entered the room, the Lord instructed him to put down his cross, and begin to look for the cross he wanted. The room was filled with crosses, of every size and shape. He looked them all over thoroughly. Eventually, over next to the door where he came in he saw a very small cross that looked just right for him. He picked it up, and said to the Lord, "This is the one I want." The Lord said, "That is great, because that is the one you brought in."

What I am saying is that you should believe that the spouse you have is the best spouse in the world for you. You should concentrate on thanking God for your spouse, praying for harmony in your lives, and start enjoying one another. Do not compare your spouse to someone else, and wish she or he were like that other person. If you knew everything about that other person, you might not feel the same way. But regardless, if that other person were the perfect spouse, it is wrong to covet someone else's spouse. Start praying to God to make your spouse perfect. And you had better spend time asking God to make you perfect. It will not work too well if your spouse is perfect, and you are not.

So, husbands, start appreciating the wife you have as God's gift to you. Amen!

Special Note: Please do not draw the wrong conclusion about my illustration of your cross. Your cross is not someone, or some handicap that you have. Some people think the cross they must bear is their physical deformity or sickness, or even their spouse or children. That is not true. Bearing the cross means that you deny your own selfish, fleshly opinions that are contrary to the Word of God. Your cross is not your spouse, or your children, or your problems. Your cross is denying your soulish nature that is against Christ.

Chapter 7

The Downfall of Preachers – Sex and Money

OUTLINE FOR THIS MESSAGE

1. **Remain faithful in your marriage vows.**
2. **Be honest and honorable in handling money.**
 - (1) **Have two or more faithful people to count and record the offerings.**
 - (2) **Keep a close watch over your money counters and your treasurer.**
3. **Teach your people that God will bless them for caring for their pastor.**

This chapter will be very short and to the point. I have given you the principles of faithfulness to your spouse, and integrity with reference to money. I call these facts to your attention to warn you against the snares of the devil.

I could have included this in the chapter on “Requirements For Pastors And Assistants,” but I want the warning to really stand out in your mind; therefore, I have made it a separate chapter.

The devil wants to destroy your reputation by sin much more than he does the members of your congregation. If he destroys the reputation of one church member, he has hurt the cause of Christ, but if he destroys the reputation of a pastor, he has deeply hurt that entire church, and has done great damage to the whole body of Christ.

The devil is determined to ruin you any way he can. The two most urgent drives in the human being are the desire to co-habit with a spouse, and the desire to possess wealth. Both desires are placed in the human being by God. If those desires are satisfied within the bonds of holy matrimony, and the bonds of honesty and integrity of heart, both are a glorious blessing to any man. But if you seek to satisfy the desire for a spouse by committing adultery, and the desire for money by stealing, they both become a curse to destroy you.

1. Remain Faithful To Your Marriage Vows

Please take to heart all the instructions in chapter 6 on praying for and being loyal to your spouse.

Let me warn you. The devil will provide all kinds of temptations to attract you into sin. There will be women in the church whom the devil will use as traps to try to pull you away from your wife and into sin. Be very watchful of women who constantly want to counsel and spend time with you. Let your wife counsel these women, and see if they still want to be counseled. I have discovered over the years that many women who want to counsel with the pastor suddenly lose their desire for counseling when you ask them to counsel with your wife. They did not want to talk to a woman. They wanted a man's attention, and it was for the wrong reasons. Do not be suspicious of everyone, but be wise, and do not let the devil pull you into a trap.

Avoid the traps that the devil sets for you when you are away from home and away from your church. The devil will provide you all sorts of women who are willing and ready to go to bed with you. And the devil will see to it that they are thrown into your path. When traveling, when away in another city, do not let the devil convince you that you can sin and no one will ever know. Maybe no one else will ever know, but you and God will know, and you cannot serve God and practice these things. They will ruin you whether anyone else ever knows or not.

I will not describe in detail the ways that pastor's become involved in adultery, but I warn you, and I warn you strongly, keep yourself pure before God. Adultery will ruin you, your home, and your ministry.

If you are not married, keep yourself clear from illicit involvement with women. When the Lord leads you to someone that will become your spouse, keep yourselves pure so that you are a virgin when you come to marriage. Make your marriage honorable in all respects, and God will bless you for your faithfulness.

2. Be Honest And Honorable In Handling Money

A pastor ultimately will have to exercise some control over the money of the church. In different churches it will be handled in different ways, so I cannot give instructions that will be appropriate for every pastor and church. Here are some guidelines.

(1) Always have two or more faithful men or women to count and record in an official record the offerings that come into the church.

I think it is better to have people other than the pastor to count the money, and then give him a report, but if you as pastor handle the money when it is given, always have at least two witness besides yourself to count and record the money. Have them to sign their count slips. This way, if you are ever accused of taking money that is not yours, you have witnesses to confirm the amount that was received.

(2) Keep a close watch and supervision on your money counters and your treasurer.

It is not unusual for people acting in these positions to steal money from the church. The first treasurer the Lord Jesus chose, Judas, stole from the treasury regularly [John 12:6; 13:29]. Never allow only one person to count and keep the church money. It is too great a temptation. Not even the pastor should be allowed to be the only one to count and keep the money, unless the church has decided to give to him all the tithes and offerings as his income, and he is to pay the expenses. Even then, it is better for two or three members to count it, and then give it to the pastor, so that the church knows what he is receiving. They can rejoice with him if it is a sufficient support. If it is not, they can urge the congregation to give more.

A pastor should not want to be the only one. He should want everyone to know that he is honest, and keeps the records correct with witnesses so no one can accuse him of wrong doing. If the pastor receives the total offering as his income, he should report to the church how much they are giving so they can know if they are adequately supporting him, and so they can rejoice with him in his prosperity.

Down through the years I have encountered many problems with church treasurers. I have not had any thieves, that I know of, thank God. My pastor before me had a thief that stole out of the plate as he passed through a hall out of sight before he handed the plate to the counters. The problem I have encountered is that the treasurer of the church begins to want to control what is done with the money. He or she begins to tell the pastor and the church what they can and cannot spend, and what they cannot do. Often the treasurer begins to look upon himself as the controller of the money, instead of the pastor and church. Often treasurers get very possessive of the Lord's money, and think they have the authority to tell everyone what to do. No one in the Old Covenant ever held and disbursed the tithes and offerings that were given except Levites and priests. In other words only God's ministers handled the money. Apparently the same procedure was practiced in the New Covenant, because the money and supplies that were given in Acts were placed alongside the feet of the apostles. Acts 4:35.

Not being there to know your situation, I cannot give you specific directions how to handle your situation. Ask God for direction. Lead your assistants and church to establish a budget and some good policies. You as pastor must take the leadership and the responsibility to make these arrangements, and enforce them. You will avoid many problems by doing this.

3. Teach your people that God will bless them for taking care of their pastor.

Then trust God, and keep yourself totally honest, and totally honorable in handling God's money and your money. God bless you.

Chapter 8

**THE GREATEST PASTOR
IN THE WORLD**

God wants to create in your heart a Holy Spirit given desire to be the best and the greatest pastor you can possibly be.

**God wants to inspire you by this
question He gave me.**

The question is:

**If you had the opportunity to meet
the greatest pastor in the world
would you take advantage of the opportunity?**

Yes or No?

Study this question thoroughly. Understand every part of it. My question is precisely worded so that every part of it is extremely important.

Here is the question:

THE OUTLINE FOR THIS MESSAGE

1. “If you had the opportunity to meet the greatest pastor in the world,

2. he would spend time exclusively with you,

3. sharing with you his greatest secrets of how to be a powerful and godly pastor,

4. and he would sign an agreement that you could consult with him on any subject at any time free of charge,

5. and that he would show you how to obtain the resources to do anything you want to do that is promised in the Bible,

6. and he would absolutely guarantee your success as a pastor in everything you do as long as you and he agree completely before you do it, would you take advantage of the opportunity?

Yes or No?”

I here and now offer you that opportunity. No, this is not a mental trick. This is a genuine offer.

Read again the entire question. Read it in its fullest and absolute sense. One of the first things you have to do to learn how to succeed as a pastor is to follow instructions - so, read it again thoroughly!

[1] “If you had the opportunity to meet the greatest pastor in the world,

[2] he would spend time exclusively with you,

[3] sharing with you his greatest secrets of how to be a powerful and godly pastor,

[4] and he would sign an agreement that you could consult with him on any subject at any time free of charge,

[5] and that he would show you how to obtain the resources to do anything you want to do that is promised in the Bible,

[6] and he would absolutely guarantee your success as a pastor in everything you do as long as you and he agree completely before you do it, would you take advantage of the opportunity?

What is your answer? Yes or No?

You must answer with an absolutely craving “Yes.”

You must feel, “Yes! Yes! Yes! When can I meet this man and get started, so I can do all the wonderful things I want to do for God’s glory.” Read the question again and again until you are filled with an overwhelming excitement and craving to meet this man.

The offer is practical. If you accept the offer this man will show you how to have a great ministry for the glory of God, the good of the church, and your own blessing and rewards. Do you need to read the question again? I think you do. God gave me this question. He gave me the exact wording. Every part of this question has great signifi-

cance.

1. “If you had the opportunity to meet the greatest pastor in the world, would you take advantage of it?”

Many young pastors when faced with this literal situation do not know for sure that they want to meet and be with the greatest pastor in the world. They are not sure how to act in the presence of such greatness. They feel comfortable in the presence of those who are ordinary people like themselves, but have no idea how they should act in the presence of someone so great that he can do anything he desires. They have the feeling that to have such power and influence is overwhelming. You may even feel jealous of the greatest pastor in the world. You may have bad feelings toward anyone who is more powerful and more well known than yourself.

You might not trust your own heart and motives. Do you think your faith is so selfish that the only way you would continue to trust God is for God to keep you poor and without power? Do you think your heart is so ungrateful that as soon as you have a strong person with unlimited resources behind you that you will immediately forget God? This would be the case with some pastors. If they could become powerful overnight they would become very proud and selfish. They would immediately forget the Lord. They would forget God’s people whom they should serve.

But I believe that your heart is humble and true. I am praying for you. I believe with you that you want the true riches, and the true power, that comes from being totally true to God and His Word. I believe you want to defeat the devil in yourself and in all people everywhere. I believe that you are putting away hypocrisy, lying, and deception.

Think about it. Who stands to lose the most if you become a great and powerful pastor? God, or the devil? Your own heart is the only one who can answer that question. I trust that your old nature is crucified with Christ, and that your new heart is filled with humility. You want to become the greatest pastor for God you can possibly become.

2. “If you had the opportunity to meet the greatest pastor in the world, and spend time exclusively with him, would you do it?”

You may think that the greatest pastor in the world would not spend time exclusively with you. You may feel that you are not important enough for him to give you

exclusive time and personally give you his greatest secrets.

You realize that God is not prejudiced. God loves all His pastors with an equal love. He loves you just as He loves the greatest pastor in the world. God will do the same for you that He will do for the greatest pastors on earth. He loves you. You must believe that.

3. “If you had the opportunity to meet the greatest pastor in the world, spend exclusive time with him, so he can share with you his greatest secrets of how to be a powerful and godly pastor, would you do it?”

Which had you rather do? Keep on following your own judgment, and keep on getting the same results you have been getting, or follow the judgment of the greatest pastor in the world, and get the results he gets?

Listen:

If you want to get different results from what you are getting, you have to change what you are doing. If what you have been doing is not making you the pastor you know you should be, then you have to be wise enough to change what you are doing. I am amazed at the number of people who are unhappy with their lack of power and success, but they continue doing the same things they have always done. If you want results different from what you have been getting, you have to change.

LISTEN!

ALL THINGS IN HEAVEN AND IN EARTH ARE GOVERNED BY PRINCIPLES OR LAWS. EVEN MIRACLES ARE GOVERNED BY LAWS. BEING A GOOD PASTOR IS BUILT ON LAWS. IF YOU WANT TO BECOME A GOOD PASTOR, YOU MUST DISCOVER AND ACT UPON THE LAWS THAT GOOD PASTORS FOLLOW!

You either know and practice those laws, and are already seeing the good results

92 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

in your life, or you must give up what you are doing, and discover and practice the biblical laws God laid down for pastors. But the principles of how to be a great pastor are not something you can learn in twelve easy lessons. You have to learn the lessons, put them into practice, constantly consult with your counselor, learn and relearn, consult and consult again, and continue for the rest of your life. It takes a powerful experience with the Holy Spirit to un-learn the principles of failure that are ingrained in your system. Usually you have to have one powerful experience after another for a long time to permanently change.

You hear great principles from the greatest pastor in the world, but you cannot receive them. Why? Because ignorance and self-will are ingrained in your heart. You cannot hear a new principle, give up the old, and lay hold of the new, unless you are prepared by the Holy Spirit to receive it. If you have not been prepared, if you are not ready, you cannot receive it. This is what Jesus meant when He said, He who has ears to hear, let him hear, Mat. 11:15. You have to cooperate with the Holy Spirit to prepare your ears to hear. This is why you must be able to consult with the greatest pastor in the world constantly, so he can tell you what you need to hear until you **hear** it. Once you **hear** it, you have to put it into **practice**.

The question really is, are you willing to systematically work at changing your attitudes, your character, your knowledge, your understanding, your way of looking at things? Are you willing to listen to a man who has become the greatest pastor in the world by going strictly by the Bible? If he can show you from his own experience that following the words of the Bible to the letter is the way to become a great pastor, are you willing to give up your opinions and do it? Are you willing to spend whatever time is necessary to master the Word of God under his counsel? Are you willing to go by the laws in the Bible?

Ask God to help you right now to lay hold of the following law:

There is no limit to the abundance available in the world.

The idea that if one person has more, others will have less, is a lie of Satan. Politicians, preachers, and others who pit the rich against the poor and the poor against the rich are following the devil. The devil wants the rich and the poor to be filled with jealousy and greed. He wants everyone to fight one another instead of producing good things. Any group of people in the poorest country in the world, can obey God, and have plenty. Any nation that obeys God will immediately begin to have plenty. Any person that obeys God by putting His Word into effect in his or her life can have all that he will ever need.

If you want power, wealth, and influence given to you without your having to do anything, you are filled with greed and should not have it.

In order to become the great pastor God wants you to be, you must change from doubt to faith. You must conclude there are things you do not know - but you crave to learn! The greatest pastor in the world will show you how to become the great pastor you want to be. You will have to change your activities, and follow his counsel. Your character will be greatly developed over the years as you receive power, resources, and success in God's work. If it were given to you overnight, your character would not develop. You could not handle it. That is why he will not give you all these things suddenly. He will show you how to obtain them over the years.

4. "If you had the opportunity to have the greatest pastor in the world, sign an agreement to allow you to consult him any time on any subject, would you do it?"

What will it mean to you to be able to consult with the greatest pastor in the world, any time, on any subject? He will counsel you on how to lead your family, how to pray, how to study the Bible, how to win people to Jesus, how to handle your money, and everything. You can ask him your questions anytime day or night.

Are you willing to accept the offer?

5. "If you had the opportunity to have the greatest pastor in the world show you how to obtain the resources to do anything that you want to do that is promised in the Bible, would you do it?"

How strong is your desire to give God your very best? I pray that God will give you a strong craving to be the most godly pastor you can be. Once a pastor said, "The world has not yet seen what one man can do who is totally dedicated to God." Will the world see what you can do totally dedicated to God?

Please understand that God is not offering to make you great in the eyes of the world. The offer is to make you the greatest pastor you can be in His eyes, not in the eyes of the world. Too many people, including pastors, want fame and fortune for their own pleasure. The greatest pastor in the world will not help you with that!

6. “If the greatest pastor in the world would absolutely guarantee your success on everything on which you and he agree, would you follow his direction?”

Luke 12:48

... For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. (KJV)

Luke 12:48 HB

...and everyone given much, much will be sought of him, and to whom much was deposited, more super-abundantly they will ask of him.

Becoming a great pastor brings great responsibility and pressure.

Study this statement:

Everyone lives in total agreement with his faith.

I do not mean that you live in agreement with everything you say that you believe. All of us say things we do not really believe. I mean, you are living in agreement with what you actually believe in your heart of hearts. Everyone does. That is why Jesus said,

Be it unto you according to your faith, Mat 9:29. This is a law. You cannot break that law. It is irrevocable. Every person in the world is subject to that law. You literally live by what you believe.

YOUR FAITH will determine if you receive this genuine offer -

- 1. to meet the greatest pastor in the world,**
- 2. spend exclusive time with him,**
- 3. share with you his greatest secrets of how to be a**

powerful and godly pastor,

4. sign an agreement so you can consult with him any-time you desire,

5. show you how to become the greatest pastor you can possibly be,

6. and absolutely guarantee your success in every project where you and he agree, and you scrupulously follow his direction.

Think about it. Pray about it. Are you willing to receive the offer?

I must keep my promise now. This is real. Please receive it.

Read next page!

The greatest Pastor in the world is Jesus.

He will spend exclusive time with you, revealing to you His greatest secrets of how to be a powerful and godly pastor. He has signed an agreement with the Father at Calvary and at Pentecost that you can consult with Him anytime on any subject. He will show you how to obtain the resources to do anything that you want to do for His glory that is promised in the Bible. He absolutely guarantees your success on everything where you and He completely agree, and you follow His direction exactly.

When you began to read about the possibility of meeting the greatest pastor in the world, you may have thought how wonderful it would be to have the most famous and most powerful pastor in the world as your own special friend. You may have thought what great things you could do if you only had the greatest pastor to guide you and back you with his resources.

You may even be a little disappointed. You might have said, "Oh! He is only talking about Jesus. I thought I would have some great pastor as my special friend." If you think that any famous man in this world can do more for you than Jesus can do, you have the wrong attitude completely. Jesus can do more for you than anyone. He is indeed the greatest pastor in the world. Enter into the agreement described in these questions in this chapter. He will make you a powerful and godly pastor. He will make you as great as you possibly can be!

Here I need to further define what GREATNESS is. Greatness before God is not what the world views as greatness. When I say God will make you a great pastor, I do not mean that you will be famous or pastor of a large church. You may or you may not. God does not determine your greatness by the size of your church or whether or not you are famous. You may be pastor of the smallest church in the area, and yet you may be the greatest pastor. You and your church may not be known outside your immediate community, yet you may be a great pastor. Please realize that size and fame do not constitute greatness in the sight of God.

Greatness before God is determined by your doing what God tells you to do, by your faithfully witnessing to the lost in your community, by your winning as many to Jesus as you can, and by your leading those you do win to follow Jesus. If you are doing that you are a great pastor, whether anyone outside your community ever hears of you or not. So when I use words like great, powerful, and successful I do not use the words as the world does, but to mean greatness, power, and success before God. So please keep this in mind.

Section Three – Your Education

Chapter 9

GOD'S CALL TO EXCELLENCE

THE OUTLINE FOR THIS MESSAGE

Introduction: Education Is Life.

The Eleven Areas Of Life

- 1. Personal Motivation and Development**
- 2. The Bible**
- 3. Finance**
- 4. Healing, Health and Nutrition**
- 5. Domestic Science [Marriage, Home, Parenting,]**
- 6. Liberal Arts and Sciences**
- 7. Business**
- 8. Law**
- 9. Communication**
- 10. Vocational or Trade Skills**
- 11. Ministry and Missions**

98 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Matt 25:14-40

14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliverdst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliverdst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (KJV)

Matthew 25:14-30 HB

14 Because *it is* exactly like a man traveling abroad, *who* called his own servants, and gave over to them his possessions.

15 And to one indeed he gave five talents, and to one, two, and to one, one; to each according to his own power, and immediately went abroad.

16 And immediately going, the one taking the five talents, worked in them, and made five other talents.

17 Likewise also the one *with the* two, he also gained other two.

18 And the one taking the one, going away, dug in the earth, and hid his lord's silver.

19 And after much time the lord of those servants comes, and takes an account with their words.

20 And coming near, the one taking five talents, brought near other five talents, saying, Lord, you gave over to me five talents; behold, I gained five other talents above them.

21 And his lord said to him, Well, inherently good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will place you down over many things; enter into the joy of your lord.

22 And also coming near, the one taking two talents said, Lord, you gave over to me two talents; behold, I gained two other talents above them.

23 His lord said to him, Well, inherently good and faithful servant, you were faithful over a few things, I will set you over many things; enter into the joy of your lord.

24 And coming up, the one having received the one talent, said, Lord, I knew that you are a hard man, reaping where you absolutely did not sow, and gathering where you absolutely did not scatter;

25 And fearing, going away, I hid your talent in the earth; behold, you have yours.

26 And his lord answering said to him, Evil and slothful servant! You knew that I reap where I absolutely did not sow, and I gather where I absolutely did not scatter;

27 It was necessary that you therefore throw my silver to the money brokers, and coming I would have been provided my own together with interest.

28 Therefore lift up from him the talent, and give *it* to him having the ten talents,

29 Because to everyone having, will be given, and he will have super-abundance, and from the one not having, even what he has will be lifted away from him.

30 And throw the unprofitable servant into outer darkness; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

The talent in this story is a specific amount of money, and in the story represents

what God has placed in your life for you to develop. Will you take the talents God has placed in your life and develop them to their highest potential? Will you answer God's call to excellence?

EDUCATION IS LIFE.

“Education is the communication of life from the living to the living” [Dr. Donald Howard, Accelerated Christian Education]. You need to prepare yourself, and help prepare others to successfully live life. God's purpose is that everyone come under the ministry of a local shepherd (pastor), and live life to the glory of God as a sheep who belongs to the Lord Jesus. Everything else is a waste of time.

The Eleven Areas Of Life

The eleven major areas of education for life are listed below. A person should master these principal areas of life. You must not neglect any of these schools of life. You cannot study what you prefer and succeed. You need to major on these major areas of life. Here they are in order of Priority:

- 1. Personal Motivation and Development**
- 2. The Bible**
- 3. Finance**
- 4. Healing, Health and Nutrition**
- 5. Domestic Science [Marriage, Home, Parenting,]**
- 6. Liberal Arts and Sciences**
- 7. Business**
- 8. Law**

9. Communication

10. Vocational or Trade Skills

11. Ministry and Missions

I believe everything in life's education should be organized under these eleven categories. Notice that all these categories are Action Categories. Theories are useless unless they lead to God-directed action. God will not ask you at the judgment what theories you theorized. He will ask you what actions you took. These are the big action areas of life. Pastors and people are extremely ignorant in these areas. These are the areas where the vast majority of people are failing.

Let me paint a dark generalized picture to make a point for you. Afterwards I will lighten the picture somewhat. People in general have little or no motivation. They do not know how to learn what they need to learn. They do not know the Bible, the Manufacturer's Handbook on Life. They fail in their finances. They fail in their health. They fail in their marriages and with their children. They fail in the Liberal Arts and Sciences - their reading and writing are atrocious. They do not know their own language, nor a second needed language. They do not know history, nor understand society. They do not know the basic concepts in mathematics, nor the sciences.

They fail in business. They do not understand people, or markets, or computers, or technology. It is moving too fast for them. They know little or nothing about law, so they are victims of laws and lawyers. They cannot communicate well. They cannot speak or write well because their minds are destroyed by sitting immobile in front of a video screen, designed to destroy creativity and enslave the population to manipulators. They have little or no skills. They do not know how to manufacture anything, nor how to repair anything. They do not know how to use the latest business machines and computers to process information and perform jobs and services.

The saddest of all is that they have no motivation to learn these skills. Life, real life, is not that important to them. The house where they live can fall totally apart. They not only do not know how to repair it, they have no motivation to repair it if they could.

102 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

That brings us to the final subject, Ministry and Missions. If there is anything that brings shame to the name of Christ it is incompetence in the ministry. There are preachers preaching things they know nothing about; trying to motivate people when they are not motivated themselves; trying to explain a Bible they have never studied in depth; giving advice to people about money when they cannot pay their own bills; praying for the sick when they are ruining their own health; counseling people about marriage and children when they do not know how to love, manage, and motivate their own family; have very little knowledge of their own language, to say nothing of Hebrew, Greek, or history, sociology, psychology, philosophy, or the sciences; trying to run a church with little or no business sense; no basic understanding of the Laws of God or the laws of their country; with very poor communications skills; and could not make a living in any other field if they had to, because they have no skills.

My wife and I were appointed as missionaries by a denominational board at one time. Our experience on the mission field led us to conclude that the reason many of them went to the mission field was because they could not succeed in the ministry at home. We also know that some entered the ministry here [in the United States of America] because they could not make a living in any other profession.

I have painted the picture very dark, in broad generalities. I have hit the ministry hard. I realize I have delivered a general broadside to people and ministers. I know there are many exceptions. I trust you are one of them. I painted the worst picture I possibly could in order to make a point.

How competent are you in these areas of life? I know that there are qualified and competent ministers and missionaries. I know there are people who are doing a great job. You know I have not shot a broadside at everyone for the sheer pleasure of criticizing people.

My purpose is not to judge others, but to create in you a bad feeling toward incompetence in yourself. Do not criticize other missionaries and ministers. I want you to examine yourself. You cannot change the other person. The only person you can change is yourself. My design is to make you hate incompetence in yourself. My purpose is to create in you a craving for excellence, a passion for excellence. I want you to become highly motivated to move out of incompetence into EXCELLENCE.

***GOD HAS CALLED THE CHRISTIAN
TO EXCELLENCE.***

1. Personal Motivation and Development

In the 1976 Olympics in Montreal the Russians took first place by capturing 47 gold medals. East Germany came in second with 40 - because of one thing, the training of their minds. These were communist countries at the time. They discovered that their minds limited their bodies. They learned how to take the limits off of their minds, and their bodies began to break the old records. In 1978 Charles Tickner, an American, upset the Russian defending champion. He took the gold medal in figure skating. How did he do it? With his mind. He spent a few moments each morning in a relaxed state repeating self-confidence building affirmations to himself that he could, and would win. He concentrated his mind on how to do it - and he did.

Many Christians have no idea of what their mind and spirit are capable of doing. In various countries of the Far East yogis commit to memory thousands of pages of sacred writings so that if a world catastrophe destroys all the copies of their sacred writings, they can reproduce them word for word from memory. As long as one yogi remains alive, their scriptures are safe. Try to imagine one Christian being that committed to the Word of God. Try to find one minister committed to do that, much less thousands of ministers that committed.

Have we, who have all the right reasons, missed God's Call To Excellence? The world reaches toward their highest potential for all the wrong reasons. In Bulgaria in the 1960's a scientist researched and organized methods of learning by which ordinary school children began to complete and remember their school courses at an unheard of rate. Children learned to read in a matter of days rather than months. First graders read advanced stories. Third graders did high school algebra. Every student in the school was completing two years of courses in four months. And the kids loved it. We are not speaking of Christians. We are speaking of unbelievers who have more motivation than the Christians.

Let me draw for you another dark and horrible picture. I trust this will thrust you away from incompetence, and propel you toward excellence. Picture in your mind unbelievers training their minds and bodies for their highest potential. They hold many of the great honors of the world. Picture hundreds of yogis seated on the ground with their legs folded under them, having memorized thousands of pages of Hindu Sacred Writings. Picture children in unbelieving government schools mastering reading, writing, mathematics, and other skills at three and four times the rate of most Christian schools.

Now picture millions of young people all over the world, stuffing their face with junk food. Picture them out of breath, puffing on cigarettes, and watching a blaring

104 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

rock video. Their eyes are blood shot. Their faces are puffed from drugs. Their speech is confused. Rock music has shot their control mechanism. Junk food, junk thoughts, and junk environment have destroyed their mind and their motivation.

Many so-called Christians are not too far from this last picture. They lost their motivation to excellence a long time ago. Only a bolt of lightning from heaven can knock them out of their apathy. I trust that is what God is delivering to you through me today - a bolt of lightning to shake you loose from incompetence, and hurl you toward excellence!

THE KEY TO GEUNINE MOTIVATION AND DEVELOPMENT is to be born of God, therefore having a new nature. This new and godly nature, the nature and character of the Lord Jesus within you, will motivate you to be like your Lord.

Many unsaved people are highly motivated to have success, but their motivation is of the flesh and the world. They have a driving desire for success according to the flesh and the world. They crave success, power, fame, wealth, all with the selfish motivation to satisfy the cravings of their own heart. Their motivation and craving for development is to satisfy and glorify themselves, not to please and glorify God.

The believer, who is also a new creation in Christ Jesus, has the craving of his new nature to please God, to glorify God, and be all that God wants him to be according to the Bible. So, in order to have the right motivation for personal development, you have to be born of the Holy Spirit, and Christ has to be the Lord on the throne of your heart. This is the kind of personal motivation and development I am talking about, and is what the Bible says is well pleasing to God.

There are two main things that an education should do:

- [1] Motivate the students to excellence, and**
- [2] teach them how to learn.**

Many students go through their entire education, and never get motivated. Many of them never learn how to learn. These are the first two things we must do in our Christian education program. We in the *Cathedral University* are committed to God to motivate you every way we can, and committed to show you how to learn.

2. The Bible

The second area of priority is a knowledge of the Bible. No one is educated until he knows the Bible. The Bible is God's Mind in written form. You learn to think only as you begin to absorb your Creator's thought patterns. His thought patterns are written in the Bible. God wills that everyone organize their thoughts around the words, stories, statements of truth, and world events recorded in the Bible. Many Christians know absolutely nothing about who did what in the Bible, nor when, nor where, nor why.

Many pastors do not know the stories in the Bible. Some preachers always preach out of the New Covenant, because they refuse to put forth the effort necessary to understand the Old Covenant. And yet they can discuss for hours every detail of the latest garbage of the world on television. Yet worldly television zealously promotes THE life style that is totally against God. Practically everything on non-Christian television is directly against God. Many Christians know every play of every ball game for the whole season, and they cannot tell you where to find the Ten Commandments or the Sermon on the Mount.

The first thing that must be implanted in the student's heart is the Word of God. The Bible is the Number One Textbook. It is The Reference Book for all of life.

The Bible teaches us the importance of every word of God. Man shall live by every spoken word that goes out of the mouth of God. Jesus taught us that our words condemn us or justify us. Our words cause us to fail or succeed.

Every word possesses an electrical pattern that creates specific results. Scientists have discovered that words form an electrical pattern in the brain that sends signals to our entire being. These electrical patterns cause our body to respond, and our heart to move into action. Neurophysiologist Donald York of the University of Missouri Medical Center, and Chicago speech pathologist Tom Jensen, found that the same electrical patterns hold true from person to person regardless of what language they speak.

God has endowed every thought in the universe with its own electrical pattern. Words used to express certain thoughts always bring about the same results. Words project beliefs and attitudes. Beliefs and attitudes filter, shape, and form every thought and experience that come to you.

The Bible is the way faith comes to you. You get your faith from God through the Bible. So faith *is* out of hearing, and hearing *is* through the spoken word of God.

106 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Your knowledge of the Bible takes control of every thought that comes from others to you. Your knowledge of the Bible tells you if what you are hearing is true or false. By knowledge of the Word of God you can divide truth from error. If you do not know the Bible, you cannot see the truth and believe the truth. If you do not know the Bible, you cannot see error, and avoid unbelief and sin.

Here is a very simple illustration. What you believe determines what you see. Your wife is in the bedroom redecorating the walls with pictures. You are in the living room trying to watch your favorite junk program on television. She calls out to you, "Bring me the little bag of screws on the kitchen counter." You yell back, "I don't know where they are." She answers, "They are on the counter by the stove."

You go to the kitchen. You know you cannot find them, because you don't want to find them. She stopped you from watching television. You get in the kitchen. You look all over the counter. You literally cannot see them. You have to prove what you said. You said you did not know where they were, so you cannot find them. You yell at her, "I can't find them." She walks into the kitchen. She picks them up right from under your nose. You see them the instant her hand touches them. She said, "If it had been a snake, it would have bitten you."

Your belief literally made you unable to see the bag of screws. Your wife easily saw them because she knew where they were. She saw exactly where they were before she ever got to the kitchen. She had authoritative information. She had faith the screws were where she put them. She knew exactly where to look.

It is the same when you read the Bible with spiritual sight. When you see it in the Bible, you know how to find it in life. You can find it in life, because you have seen it in the Bible. God's words are spirit, and they are life [John 6:63]. You have authoritative information. When you walk into that area of life, by faith you have already seen it. You put your hand on it. You have it in your life.

Your knowledge of the Bible determines what you see in life. It blocks out what you do not need to see. It makes clear everything you need to see. You see life from the beautiful lenses of the colorful, living Word of God. You must learn the Bible.

3. Finance

In Luke 16:9-12 Jesus states that God can trust you with spiritual resources only to the extent that God can trust you with money. The power to get resources is given to the believer in order for God's covenant to be established in our lives. Unless the covenant is in effect in our lives we are doing little for God. The covenant cannot be

fully established, although bought and paid for by the blood of Jesus, unless resources are brought under our control for the glory of God.

The first Bible principles you need to master from the Word of God are tithing, giving, and receiving, and gaining control of resources to establish the kingdom of God in people's lives.

Pastor, get your finances under control. This is not easy. But it must be a top priority in your life. You must not be a beggar. You must not beg people for money. You must not feel dependent on people. You must get the Word of God on finances in your heart. You must trust God. You must pray to your heavenly Father in secret, and let Him reward you openly. Get the promises of God on finances. Put the devil out of your finances. Bring Jesus in as Lord. He will meet your needs. God is not a liar. He is the truth. Believe Him.

4. Domestic Science

In 1 Timothy 3:4,12, one of the main requirements for ministers and assistant ministers is that they know how to manage their homes. You must have a good home life. You must be successful in your marriage and with your children. You are the leader of the church. You are the role model for everyone else. The unit where God has placed little human beings for training is in the home. God trusts the home with eternal souls. When the home falls apart, protection for the little humans falls apart. When the home fails the little humans are devoured by every ravenous evil.

It makes no difference how many doctor's degrees you have from the university, if you fail your spouse and your little humans, you have failed. Your home is your number one responsibility.

A university education that does not give you the equipment you need to successfully maintain the most basic unit of human society is no education! That is why *Cathedral University For Pastors* majors on the home. The home is life. Education is life. Education is the communication of life, from the living to the living.

5. Healing, Health, and Nutrition

God designed life to be lived in health and enjoyment. Sick people are in misery. When you are sick, you cannot produce goods and services. You cannot serve God as you should. [I am not trying to make sick people feel hopeless and useless. I am showing you that you do not have to be sick.] Sick people consume goods and services produced by others. Sick people have to have healthy people to care for them. Sickness therefore reduces the amount of wealth available to you and those around you. Sick

108 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

people not only do not produce goods and services, they also prevent other people from producing goods and services. They add to the burden of the few that are left to produce.

People who commit crimes do the same thing. Those in prisons and mental institutions do not produce wealth. They take wealth from those who do. [I am not telling you that you should not help the sick and those in prison. I am telling you that you do not have to be sick, and you do not have to be in prison.] Follow God's laws, and be a producer.

God never intended for you to live in sickness. God has written healing, health, and nutrition laws into the Bible. Your ability to absorb education is in direct proportion to your energy level. Your energy level is in direct proportion to your health. Your health is in direct relation to what you eat and what you believe. Anyone who drinks alcoholic beverages, smokes, takes drugs, eats junk foods, practices promiscuity, sodomy, and other undisciplined behaviors loses his energy and his life. Undisciplined flabby Christians who cannot maintain energetic, creative, exciting, productive activity twelve hours a day need to repent before God. It is a shame and disgrace to the Lord the way Christians, and especially pastors, live undisciplined lives.

Students must be given the wisdom, knowledge, and joy for maintaining health and energy. You must have a high energy level for peak performance. You can do this only if you learn how to eat the right foods, and believe God who is your Healer.

6. Liberal Arts and Sciences

Liberal Arts and Sciences refer to the basic knowledge and skills of languages, history, geography, sociology, psychology, philosophy, mathematics, algebra, trigonometry, geometry, calculus, physics, astronomy, chemistry, biology, etc. Knowledge of these is the basic working tools of human beings. Somehow we must communicate to young people that these are the basic tools we must master to become productive in life. They are the basic tools for learning how to think, how to compute, solve problems, and relate what has happened in history to our present situation.

Learn Bible history. Learn world history. Learn your own language well. Learn another language. Learn English if at all possible, because a large amount of Christian writings are first published in English.

7. Business

Young people must be trained in business. You must learn business and management principles from the Bible. Everything you learn from other books must agree

with the Bible, or you cannot use it. You cannot live by the Bible in church, and not live by the Bible in business. You need to know the latest in scientific discoveries in human relations and productivity. We must know the latest in computer science. You must be trained how to learn, and how to adjust to changes in the fields of employment.

A graduate must learn how to never be without skills for employment in a changing world. He/she must have the most important skill: the know-how to acquire whatever skills the economic and business frontiers demand! Remember today's jobs and professions may be non-existent in the next few years. The ability to learn is the most important skill of all. If you know how to learn, you can always learn what you need to learn to obtain the latest employment. If you know how to learn, you know how to obtain the skills you need.

8. Law

You must know three things in the area of law:

The Laws of God,

The laws of your country, and

The laws of how to work with people.

In many believers' minds there is a great conflict between Law and Grace. Salvation is by grace through faith in Jesus Christ. The Man, Jesus Christ, fulfilled the law of God perfectly to give us our salvation. In ourselves we did not keep the law. We cannot keep the law. The Lord Jesus did that for us. When we receive Him, He comes into us. The law of the God is written in Jesus' heart. He is now in our heart. The law of the Lord is now written in our heart. Through His grace we now keep the law. By His supernatural nature within us, we meditate on His law. We obey His law. We are blessed by His law.

Study with me just a moment on the law. The Ten Commandments are the heart of the law. The Christian is commanded in the New Covenant to keep everyone of the Ten Commandments except the Sabbath [See Colossians 2:12-17.] If a believer wants to keep the Sabbath, and does not make that a requirement to be saved, we are not to argue with him. If anyone teaches that you have to keep the Sabbath to be saved, he is accursed, as Paul said in Galatians 1:8-9. But if a believer keeps the Sabbath simply because he believes this pleases the Lord, let him, and love him.

All the priestly and sacrificial ceremonies of the law were fulfilled in Christ. We keep them in Christ every day when we enter into the Holy of Holies in prayer in His name. We need to study all the ceremonies of the law to understand the riches we have in Christ.

110 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

If you make the Psalms your book of worship, you have to meditate in His law day and night. That is not a different law. That is the law of Moses. That is the law of God. That is the law of the Lord. There is only one law. It is the same law as the law of Christ. It is the Royal law of love. It is the Great Commandment. You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, soul, mind, and strength, and your neighbor as yourself. This is the law. You must know the law.

**You must know the law of the Lord,
the laws of your country and
the laws of how to work with people.**

9. Communications

You must know the basic skills of communication, reading, writing, and speaking. The first things God taught Adam to do were: to read, to write, and to speak. You must know how to produce books, magazines, newspapers, audio and visual communications, and work with the electronic media.

Most of all you must know how to think precisely. You must know how to grasp precisely the other person's thinking, even when the other person does not understand his own thinking. You need to communicate with people so that you help people clarify their own thinking.

You need to think clearly and speak clearly. You must be sensitive to the Holy Spirit and to people. You must know how to think precisely. You must know how to speak precisely. I have found that many ministers do not think clearly. Many times they speak about things in their sermons they know nothing about. They give their opinions, instead of knowing what God wants said. You must pray. You must study your Bible. You must study great books. You must listen to great ministers. You must know many things.

It is sad when the business people in your congregation know more than you do. I do not mean you have to know as much about their work as they do, but you must know your work and enough about their work to give them help when they need it. You cannot afford to be ignorant when people in your church are educated.

Also, you must know how to speak clearly and precisely. Your people must understand clearly God's message when you speak it. You must learn communication skills.

10. Vocational and Trade Skills

No human being should ever be turned loose on society without having physical skills to support himself, and meet the needs of his/her family. The Bible teaches that the parents are responsible for teaching their children trades and skills to earn a living. Every minister must have skills for employment outside the ministry. Nothing is sadder than having pastors who have no skills for the market place. His people cannot respect him, because he is more ignorant than they.

Saint Paul made and sold tents to pay his way to preach the gospel. The only perfect Man that ever lived supported Himself as a carpenter for 30 years before He entered the ministry. There is one thing that triggers my anger more than anything. It is pious, religious ministers who say, "Oh no. God did not call me to work. He called me to minister." Nothing strikes fire from my flint any quicker. People cannot respect preachers who are too lazy to get employment, and too lazy to get skills for employment.

The Lord does not consider any professional person's education complete until he has physical skills so that he can make a living in other employment if he needs to do so.

Every Jewish child had to have employment skills outside the ministry. Even the priests' children, who later would be priests, first were required to learn employment skills. Before they could serve as priests, they had to prove they could make a living in another trade. By doing this the priests received the respect of the people. God could then use them in the ministry.

There are young men all over the world whom the church can never respect, because they refuse to learn employment skills. They want a shortcut to the pastor's salary. If you take that shortcut, your people will never respect you as God wants them to respect you. God hates covetousness. To covet the pastor's position and salary without first obtaining employment skills is covetousness.

Every pastor ought to be able to support himself by other employment if he needs to. Yes, once he becomes a full pastor of the church, the church should take care of his needs. This is only after he has proved himself. God's holy law requires that you have employment skills other than the ministry.

[I am not preaching something to you that I do not practice. I have many employment skills. If I needed to do so, I could obtain employment tomorrow in several other areas of employment.]

11. Ministry and Missions

This brings us to the ministry and missions. Jesus knew more about fishing than His disciples. He knew more about building houses, more about farming, more about trade skills, more about markets, more about buying and selling, more about precious metals and precious stones, more about politics and government, more about home, church, business, and personal relationships, more about history and psychology, more about the latest equipment and tools, more about communication and ministry, and more about everything than His disciples—and so did Saint Paul.

If God calls you to be a minister, or a missionary you ought to reach for the stars. You should have a degree of competency in all areas of life. You should strive to be the very best in your ministry. You ought to seek to excel in your life. You ought to crave the excellence of Jesus and Paul. You should be satisfied with nothing less than giving God the best! Excellence.

This is God's call to excellence in your life.

Will you answer that call for the glory of God?

Section Four - Your Character

In this section we deal with your personal character. God has given you His righteous character through the blood of Jesus. Christ now dwells in you by the power of the Holy Spirit.

You were born with a sin nature. When you were born again, you received the nature of God. You were born of God, and the Holy Spirit actually made you a new creature in Christ Jesus. You still have your old sin nature, but it is crucified with Christ. By keeping your old sin nature under the cross of Christ, and feeding your new nature on the Word of God, your new godly nature becomes dominant, and you literally become like Jesus.

Chapter 10 is a study of the crucifixion of Christ, and how His blood has delivered us in every area of our lives. Chapter 11 is a long and important chapter on how we are righteous in Christ. Please spend much time on this chapter. You need to read chapter 11 many times, until it is thoroughly established in your heart. After that, you need to read it several times each year for the rest of your life. It is the one thing that the devil hates, and the Lord wants you to know.

Chapters 12 and 13 deal with the crucifixion and renewal of your soul, which is the location of your old nature, and how to receive the mind of Christ. Chapter 14 is practical instruction on what to do when your faith seems weak, and you feel you are about to be defeated. Chapter 15, "The Man In Charge," is a strong challenge for you to take charge of your life and your ministry under the Lordship of Christ, and stop allowing the devil to defeat you.

You have God's holy and powerful nature within you. Learn who you are in Christ, and act like a child of the King.

Chapter 10

THE BLOOD OF JESUS HAS DELIVERED MY ENTIRE LIFE

In this chapter we study
**THE FIVE PLACES WHERE JESUS Poured OUT
HIS BLOOD FOR YOU.**

THE OUTLINE FOR THIS MESSAGE

- 1. His blood poured out in Gethsemane healed our will.**
- 2. His blood poured out under the whip healed our body.**
- 3. His blood poured out under the crown of thorns removed the curse.**
- 4. His blood poured out from piercing His hands and feet delivered our hands and feet.**
- 5. His blood poured out from His innocent heart delivered us from a wicked heart.**

There were five places where Jesus poured out His blood for you and me. The blood of Jesus has delivered every area of our lives from the control of the devil into the glorious victory of Christ.

We serve a good God. He gave Jesus so He could give us complete salvation. From the Garden of Gethsemane to His death on the cross, Jesus poured out His blood in five different places. Each event where Jesus poured out His blood **pictures a special deliverance He worked to bring His total victory into all areas of our lives.**

You understand that the individual places where Jesus poured out His blood does not deliver a specific area of our life. It was His once for all death on the cross and the once for all outpouring of His blood that delivered us in all areas. But the individual places and events surrounding those places picture specific areas where His blood has delivered us. As we walk today where Jesus walked along the Via Dolorosa, meditate on the grand and glorious deliverance He brought to you pictured in these five places.

First I will list the five places, and then describe the five wonderful deliverances Jesus gave you through His blood.

[1] His blood was poured out in the blood-sweat in the Garden of Gethsemane, Luke 22:44.

[2] His blood was poured out when He was scourged with a whip outside of the Praetorium, Mark 15:15.

[3] His blood was poured out when they placed the crown of thorns on His head inside the Praetorium, Mark 15:17.

[4] His blood was poured out when they drove the nails in His hands and feet on Calvary, Psalm 22:16; John 20:27.

[5] His blood was poured out when the soldier pierced His heart with the spear, John 19:34.

These picture deliverance in specific areas of your life.

The blood-sweat shows He delivered our will, because He prayed, **Not my will, but yours be done.**

The whipping outside the Praetorium shows our healing, because by His stripes we were healed, Isaiah 53:4.

The crown of thorns shows the removal of the curse from our lives. Thorns came from the curse God pronounced on the earth because of the sin of Adam and Eve.

The piercing of His hands and feet shows that our hands and feet are delivered from evil deeds. No longer do we have hands that pour out innocent blood, Pro. 16:17, and feet that are swift in running into mischief, Pro 16:18. We have hands that do His will, Psalm 24:4, and feet that walk in His paths, Psalm 23:3.

The piercing of His heart with the spear shows He has delivered us from a wicked heart, Psalm 51:10.

OUR WILL

1. His blood poured out in Gethsemane healed our will.

You no longer have to waiver in your will. While Jesus was praying in the Garden, **Not my will, but yours be done**, the disciples' wills were weak and changeable. Peter vowed never to forsake Him, but denied Him three times. After His resurrection, the disciples became bold as lions. Their wills were healed. They could now will to will the will of God.

His blood-sweat delivered your will and my will. We can now decide to do right,

and do it. Claim the total deliverance of your will. Perform the full will of God in your ministry.

OUR HEALTH

2. His blood poured out under the whip healed our body, Isaiah 53:4; 1 Peter 2:24.

He was whipped with the Roman cat of nine tails. Every part of His body was bruised, and made sick in our place. Because He was made sick by the stripes, we are healed by His stripes. Claim your healing. Walk in divine health.

You must have health to serve God. You cannot be a good pastor and be sick. Sickness is a witness against your ministry. How can you minister salvation and healing to the lost and sick if you are sick yourself? You must have health to serve God as a pastor.

OUR WHOLE LIFE

3. His blood poured out under the crown of thorns removed the curse from our whole life.

When Adam and Eve sinned, the Lord pronounced the curse upon all creation. The thorn bush became a symbol of that curse. The thorn bush occupies the ground, but produces no fruit. It is hurtful to man. The thorn bush became a symbol of everything that steals from the human race. It symbolizes the curse. When they placed the crown of thorns on His head, they placed the curse on Him.

Galatians 3:13 HB

Christ redeemed us out of the curse of the law, becoming a curse for us, because it has been written, Cursed is everyone who hangs upon a tree, Deu 21:23

The curses pronounced in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 were taken by Jesus to the cross for you and me. He took the curse into Himself. He removed the curse from all those who take Him. Now we have the blessings pronounced in Leviticus and Deuteronomy and the whole Bible. Lay hold of this truth. The crown of thorns on His head delivered you from the curse of lack, and brought you into His fullness of everything you need.

OUR HANDS AND FEET

[4] His blood poured out when they pierced His hands and feet delivered our hands and feet from evil deeds.

Remember that the meaning of evil is confusion or falling apart. Not one time during thirty-three and one-half years did His hands perform a confused deed. Not one time did His feet take a confused step. Yet His innocent hands and feet were pierced for you and me.

You and I cannot say our hands and feet are innocent. We have done with our hands what we should not have done. Our feet have gone where they should not have gone. But praise the Lord, the piercing of His hands and feet has made our hands and feet innocent. Hold your hands out before you, and say, "Because Jesus went to the cross, my hands are innocent. I now have holy hands." Look down at your feet and say, "Because He walked to the cross, my feet are now innocent. I have holy feet. I walk in the ways of righteousness. Praise the Lord."

OUR HEART

[5] The piercing of His innocent heart with the Roman spear, delivered me from a wicked [confused] heart.

Jeremiah 17:9 HB

The heart is deceitful above all things, and it is sick; who can know it?

Our hearts were fallen apart and deceitful. Now through Christ we have a pure and harmonious heart. Our old nature is still there, but it is crucified with Christ. We are a new creation in Christ Jesus. We now have a good heart. "Thank God, because Jesus' innocent heart was pierced, I have been delivered from a wicked heart. I now have a pure and righteous heart. I know what God wants for me. I have received His purpose into my heart. My heart by the power of His Holy Spirit is projecting a Holy Spirit anointed ministry into reality in my life!

Repeat after me:

Because Jesus sweat drops of blood, my will has been delivered. I am free to choose the will of God.

118 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Because Jesus' blood was poured out when they scourged Him with the whip, I have been delivered from sickness. I walk in divine health. I can serve God day and night with plenty of energy.

Because His blood was poured out when they placed the crown of thorns on His head, the curse of sin, guilt, poverty, and sickness have been removed from my life. I live in the blessing of God's abundance.

Because His blood was poured out when they pierced His hands and feet, my hands and feet are now delivered from wicked deeds. I have clean hands and beautiful feet, to spread the gospel of Jesus Christ.

Because His blood was poured out when they pierced His heart with the spear, I have been delivered from a wicked heart. Now my heart is pure and righteous. I think holy and beautiful thoughts. I feel the wonderful feelings of God. I choose the will of God. My heart has received God's thoughts. Out of the abundance of my heart my mouth speaks. Praise the Lord!!!

Regularly rehearse these five places where Jesus poured out His blood for you. Your will, your health, your life as a whole, your hands and feet, and your heart are all healed by the blood of Jesus.

Your will is the key to your ministry, and thoughts are the key to your will. You cannot will to do something until you have the thought that it is possible. Once you receive the thought that it is God's will for you to be a good and godly pastor, your will can act on that thought. That is faith.

The key is your will. Your will has been delivered by the blood of Jesus.

You can will the will of God to become a great pastor. Your health is so extremely important to your ministry. Many people will never be good pastors. They do not have the energy necessary to be an effective pastor. The healthy person expends huge amounts of energy, and feels good. While other people are totally exhausted. But the healthy, Holy Spirit anointed pastor has a high energy level. Claim divine health, so you can work effectively for God.

You must view your life as no longer under the curse. You must believe Galatians 3:13, **Christ has redeemed us out of the curse of the law, becoming a curse for us.** The Lord Jesus fulfilled the Law for us. He redeemed us from the curse for man's violation of the Law. He brought to us the blessing of the Law. Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 declare that God's blessing brings an abundance of everything we need. You must say to yourself constantly,

“I am no longer under the curse of sin. I am in the blessing of God.”

Our hands and feet have been redeemed by the blood of Jesus. Our hands and feet are the extensions of our body by which we work, and serve God and His people.

Your heart is your secondary source of abundance. Your primary, ultimate source of abundance is God. But God is not a source of abundance to anyone who does not have the abundance of God in his heart. Until you get God's words and thoughts in your heart, and work those words and thoughts under the power of the Holy Spirit, God is not your source. Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of his good treasure brings forth good things, Matthew 12:34-35. Your heart has been delivered. Get God's abundance out of His Word into your heart. Out of the abundance of your heart, bring forth God's abundance.

Chapter 11

I AM RIGHTEOUS IN CHRIST

This chapter contains a number of outlines that can be used as an entire series on I Am Righteous In Christ

OUTLINE 1

SAINT OR SINNER, psalm 1; Eph 1:1-3

- 1. Are you a saint or a sinner?**
- 2. You are becoming conscious of your righteousness in Christ.**
- 3. When you took Jesus, you were**
 - (1) declared legally righteous, and**
 - (2) given a righteous nature in your spirit.**
- 4. Become skilled in the Word of Righteousness.**
 - (1) Skilled in the word about your righteous standing.**
 - (2) Skilled in the word about your righteous nature.**
- 5. There are only two conditions: righteous or unrighteous.**

OUTLINE 2

TAKING A STAND IN GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS

Psalm 1:1-2
Introduction

120 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

(1) Understand what sin is and what righteousness is.

(2) Psalm One is the Absolute Formula For Success.

1. I refuse unbelief.

(1) I do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly.

(2) I do not stand in the way of sinners.

(3) I do not sit in the seat of the scornful.

2. I take God's point of view.

(1) I delight in the law of God.

a. His law makes me happy.

b. His law is precious to me.

c. I pursue His law with all my heart.

(2) I murmur in pleasure in God's law day and night.

OUTLINE 3

THE RIGHTEOUS PERSON IS LIKE A TREE

Psalm 1:3

Introduction

(1) Spiritual exercise: Read aloud these truths each day.

(2) My life is already perfectly successful before God.

1. I have been made like a tree.

2. I am planted like a tree.

3. I am planted by the rivers of water.

4. I bear fruit like a tree.

5. I bear my fruit in the right time.

6. My leaf does not wither.

7. Whatever I do prospers.

OUTLINE 4

TAKE AN IRREVOCABLE STAND ON

GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS

Psalm 1:4-5

Introduction

We have an official standing in His righteousness.

1. God worked an irrevocable righteousness in Christ.

2. Our decision to take His righteousness is irrevocable.

3. We are saved by His righteousness.

4. We are saved by faith in His righteousness.

Conclusion: The Lord guarantees our journey and our destiny.

Repeat these affirmations of faith until they take firm root in your heart.

OUTLINE 5

I AM A SAINT

Ephesians 1:1-6

1. I am a saint NOW!

2. I am operating as a saint in two realms.

(1) In Christ in the spiritual realm.

(2) In my place of residence in the physical realm.

In order to operate properly in the spiritual and in the physical

The three most important steps in my life are:

a. My thoughts.

b. My words.

c. My actions.

3. I am operating as a saint with unlimited resources.

4. I am operating as a special object of God's love.

5. I am operating with son and daughter privileges.

Conclusion: I make these thoughts dominant in my life at all times so they will take control over my life.

OUTLINE 1

1. ARE YOU A SAINT OR A SINNER?

In order to be the pastor God wants you to be, for the glory of God, for your good, and the good of others, so that God's covenant is genuinely established in your life, you must know that you are righteous in Christ. You must know that you are a saint.

The purpose of this lesson is to establish you in the faith that you are now **RIGHTEOUS IN CHRIST**

Ephesians 1:11; Psalm 1:6

The one thing that will solve all your problems, and the one thing the devil hates more than anything else is:

2. YOU ARE BECOMING CONSCIOUS OF YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS IN CHRIST.

3. When you took Jesus

a. You were legally declared righteous before God.

b. And you were given a new righteous nature in your spirit.

But we still feel unrighteous and do unrighteous things. We are conscious of sin, failure, and guilt. As long as the devil can make us feel unrighteous and guilty he can defeat us.

An evangelist led a man to the Lord. He was baptized, and began to attend church. Later the evangelist came back to check on the new believer's progress. He was backslidden, and discouraged. The evangelist asked, "What happened to you?" The man said, "I do not know. I want to serve God, but most of the time I do not. It seems there are two dogs fighting inside of me. A good dog, and a bad dog. Sometimes one wins, and sometimes the other?" The evangelist asked, "What do you think determines which one wins?" The man thought a moment, and answered,

"The one I feed the most always wins."

You must feed your new nature. You must feed your righteous nature.

In your old nature you are conscious of sin and guilt. In your new nature you are conscious of righteousness and victory. If your sin and guilt consciousness remain dominant, you live a miserable and defeated life. If your consciousness of forgiveness and righteousness in Christ become dominant, you live a blessed, victorious life. Right now we are feeding your new nature. We are raising your level of consciousness of your right-standing in Christ.

4. BECOME SKILLED IN THE WORD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

Heb 5:12-13

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. (KJV)

Hebrews 5:12-13 HB

13 Because everyone using milk is inexperienced in *the* word of righteousness, because he is an infant,

14 And solid nourishment is to those being complete, those through habit having their senses exercised to judge both *the* beautifully good and *the* evil.

God wants you to take hold of this phrase, **skilled in the word of righteousness**. You must use it as your main weapon of warfare against Satan. The theme of this passage is that Jesus became a righteous Man in our place. **The word of righteousness** is that all who receive Jesus as their substitute are immediately forgiven of all sins and are made perfectly righteous. This is the word, the message, the good news, **the word of righteousness**, that the Hebrews did not understand. Many of them were still trying to gain favor with God by their own efforts.

To become a strong and effective pastor you must know that you are right. You must know that becoming powerful and effective in doing God's work is right. You have that right, not because of your own righteous deeds, but because of the righteousness of Christ which He did for us.

You take salvation by grace through faith. Every moment for the rest of your life, victory is taken in this same manner - by the righteousness of Christ transferred to us by faith. We are no longer to be filled with a consciousness of sin, shame, and guilt. We are no longer to be conscious of that condition. We are to be conscious that we are

[1] Skilled in the word about our righteous standing in Christ,

[2] Skilled in the word of righteousness about our righteous nature in Christ.

You have the right in Him to be a great pastor for the glory of God, for your own good, and the good of others. The word of righteousness is not just the word by which you get born from above. It is the word by which you grow, by which you win over the devil, by which you accomplish the little things and the big things of life, by which you win souls to Jesus, and bless His people. By virtue of that righteousness we have a right to everything God has!

The devil does not want you to discover that. He keeps your attention focused on your old, bad self. The devil tries to keep you defeated and discouraged. The devil is the accuser. All your sins, past, present, and future, are all paid for, and blotted out. You are no longer guilty. The case has been dismissed in heaven. The devil continues to bring it up as though it were a current case. It is not. Your case was settled long ago at Calvary. It was settled in your own heart when you took Him.

You must become conscious that you were declared righteous, and made righteous in Christ when you were saved. You must realize that your righteousness in Christ is permanent. Victory flows from that righteousness for the rest of time and eternity. You are a victorious Christian. You have a foundation for permanent success in all areas!

5. THERE ARE ONLY TWO CONDITIONS: RIGHTEOUS OR UNRIGHTEOUS

The Hebrew words for unrighteous are translated ungodly, sinners, wicked, condemned. The basic meanings of the Hebrew words for unrighteous are: confused, disturbed, chaotic, disrupted, unaligned, worthless, actively opposed to God. The Hebrew words for righteous mean: aligned with God, right, in harmony with God, pure, holy, set apart unto God by His special work of grace.

The contrast between the righteous and the unrighteous is the constant theme of the Psalms. Those who trust themselves are confused, corrupt, rebellious, disjointed, chaotic, criminal, lawless, in nature and in conduct. Those who trust the grace of God are righteous, pure, aligned with God, filled with good thoughts and deeds.

God looks at every human being as either righteous or unrighteous. There are no other conditions. You need to decide which is your condition. You are either in unbelief, and therefore unrighteous, or you are in grace, and therefore righteous. If you are a child of God, you are no longer in unbelief. You are no longer confused, corrupt, chaotic, disjointed, criminal, lawless, and against God. I know you feel that way sometimes. That is what the devil says to you. Your bad nature keeps agreeing with the devil that your life is falling apart. But that is not true. The truth is that if you are a child of God, you are righteous, aligned with God, harmonious, pure, whole, obedient to God's law, filled with goodness and love. The more you hear this, the more you believe this. The more you hear this, the more the door is opened for God's righteousness to fill you in actual experience. The more you hear it and believe it, the more you feel it, and the more righteousness is manifested in your life.

Read these verses from the Psalms to know God's thinking toward you.

Psalm 1:5-6. 5:12. 7:11. 34:15. 34:19. 37:17. 37:25. 92:12. 9:17.

Here is the problem. We think of ourselves as righteous when we think of our eternal salvation, but when we think of our daily living, we have been taught to think of ourselves as unrighteous. Paul asked the Galatians, "How is it that you think you were saved by His work, but you maintain your daily walk by your work?" (a paraphrase of Gal 3:2-3). Since you were saved by His righteousness, you maintain daily victory by His righteousness. Since His salvation made you righteous for eternal salvation, His salvation makes you righteous for your daily walk. His righteousness to us given by the grace of God through the cross is the basis on which we obtain victory every day.

This is the word of righteousness. You must become skilled in this word of righteousness. Since you cannot find some in-between position, decide which position you are in, righteous or unrighteous. If you are in the righteous position, claim the power and blessings that belong to the righteous. Claim the gifts and abilities that are rightfully yours through the person of Christ. Amen!

OUTLINE 2

**TAKING A STAND
IN GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS
Psalm 1:1-2**

Introduction

(1) UNDERSTAND WHAT SIN IS AND WHAT RIGHTEOUSNESS IS.

We are raising our level of consciousness of our righteousness in Christ. Psalm One is a clear contrast between the righteous and the wicked. This is the theme of the entire Bible. God saves the righteous, and the wicked are lost. The righteous are made righteous by the righteousness of God. All human beings have sinned, and are incapable of delivering themselves. The ones who are saved are the ones who have trusted God. This is the only difference.

The only difference between Abraham and Pharaoh is that Abraham belonged to God, and Pharaoh did not. Abraham lied to Pharaoh about his wife, and God had to deliver Abraham for no other reason than that God had made a covenant with Abraham to be Abraham's God. God rebuked Abraham, but He delivered him because he belonged to God, Gen 12:11-20. It is the same with Abraham and Abimelech, with Moses and Pharaoh, and all the rest in all the Bible. The only difference is that God delivers those who belong to Him. Their own efforts do not deliver them. Those who have received God's righteousness, as their righteousness always win. Those who trust themselves or some other god, lose. It is that simple. Let God make this a real revelation in your heart, and live by it. It is your only hope.

Many people think righteousness is all the things you do not do, not murdering, not stealing from the poor, not raping. They do not understand that sin is a disease. If you have incurable cancer, it does not make any difference whether you kill anyone or not. What you do or do not do will not cure the cancer. You are going to die of cancer.

Sin is like cancer. Man has no cure for it. If you have cancer, you will die. You can be kind to everyone. Your kindness to others will not cure you of cancer. Sin is unbelief. Sin is not trusting the One who made you. Sin is having salvation available to you, and refusing to receive that salvation. The sin that keeps people unrighteous is distrusting the only Savior available. Righteousness is trusting the only Savior. Righteousness is to keep on trusting the only Savior.

Human kindness will not cure sin. Only the blood of Jesus received by faith will cure your sin. Wickedness is refusing to trust the only Remedy. To get saved we made a quality decision, with God's help, to let God save us. He did. Having your every need met every day for the rest of your life comes the same way. You do not look at how good you are in yourself. You look at His goodness, and His righteousness. You act upon His righteousness in you. You see yourself in Christ. He has already made you righteous! You simply have to stake your claim!

We always act consistent with our view of ourselves and our view of things. That is why it is so important for you to get God's viewpoint into your heart. You cannot claim God's promises to the righteous until you view yourself as righteous. You must take God's words that you are righteous in Him, that you are wealthy in Him, that you are wise in Him, that you are powerful in Him, that you are healed in Him, and rehearse them until you attain a permanent attitude that you are righteous in Christ. Someone may say, "since I am righteous, I will think of myself as righteous, and then sin all I desire." You cannot do that. It is impossible to read the Word of God about righteousness, and desire to sin. The Word of God on righteousness will kill your desire to sin, and give you a strong appetite for righteousness.

PSALM ONE

Ps 1:1-6

1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.

2 But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night.

3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

4 The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away.

5 Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

6 For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish. (KJV)

Psa 1 HB

1 Oh the righteous happinesses *that are* to the man who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the way of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful.

2 But his delight is in the law of Jehovah, and in his law he murmurs in pleasure day and night.

3 And he has been like a tree planted by the rivers of water, who gives his fruit in his time; his leaf also does not wither, and all that he does prospers.

4 The ungodly *are* not so, but *are* like the chaff which the wind drives about.

5 Therefore the ungodly shall not rise in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous,

6 Because Jehovah knows the way of the righteous, but the way of the ungodly shall be lost.

1:1 Oh the righteous happinesses, *esher*, The word is plural, and means to be happy because one is straight with God. This word comes from *asher* which means to be straight, right, upright, erect, and as a result of being upright, happy. It is a different word from the word blessed, *barak*, to kneel down with goodness to. *Barak* describes the process of God kneeling down to bestow his goodness on the believer. *Esher* describes the condition of the believer who is straight and upright with God - happy. Many of us will miss “Blessed” of the KJV in Psa 1, but it is a different word, and we want to be accurate in our understanding of Holy Scripture.

Personalize and internalize Psalm One. What I mean is, claim it as your own.

(2) Psalm One is The Absolute Formula For Success.

Anyone who consistently lives Psalm One has to prosper. God’s Word does not lie.

1. I Refuse Unbelief.

[1] I do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly.

I do not think after the counsel of unbelieving, negative people. I say “No” to the doubts and thinking of unbelievers. I say “No” to poverty thinking. I get my philosophy from God. I get my words and thoughts from God. The first and most important thing is where I get my words, my thoughts, my philosophy, my information. I am righteous and the righteous person does not think the way the unbeliever thinks.

[2] I do not stand in the way of sinners.

This means that I do not act in agreement with unbelievers. I do not take a stand with poverty thinkers. My conduct, my activities are not in concert with those who do not trust God. I act in concert with God, and those who trust God. I prosper.

[3] I do not sit in the seat of the scornful.

“Sit” refers to a settled attitude. I am not settled into the pattern of the world that scorns absolute trust in every word of God.

Note the pattern of development.

First, thinking; then doing; and finally attitude. This is the way character always develops. I adopt a thought. I act upon it a few times. Then I have a permanent attitude. This is how I change my life. I think God's words and thoughts after Him. I act upon them. I reap a permanent attitude and habit of life.

2. I TAKE GOD'S POINT OF VIEW.

You must see everything from God's viewpoint, and act upon it. By doing this habitually you become righteous and prosperous in attitude.

[1] I delight in the law of Jehovah.

“Delight” means:

- a. something that makes me happy;**
- b. something that is precious to me;**
- c. something I pursue with all my heart.**

This means I desire God's Law.

- a. God's law makes me happy.**
- b. God's law is most precious to me.**
- c. I pursue God's law with all my heart.**

It is my heart's consuming desire. It is my Magnificent Obsession - to have God's Law totally fulfilled in my life through the perfect obedience of Christ. I therefore have all the wealth, spiritual and material, that is promised to those obedient to God's Law!

[2] I murmur in pleasure in God's law day and night.

The Hebrew word murmurs in pleasure describes the grunts and growls and sounds of delight and satisfaction that come from a lion when he is enjoying a gorgeous meal. You and I grunt, and growl, and make delightful and joyous sounds be-

130 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

cause we are thrilled with the new thoughts just discovered from the Word of God. His prosperity is daily taking place in our lives.

OUTLINE 3

THE RIGHTEOUS PERSON IS LIKE A TREE

Psalm 1:3

Introduction

(1) SPIRITUAL EXERCISE

Read these words aloud day after day in your daily devotions until they become a God-given revelation in your heart.

I am becoming more and more aware of who God says I am, and what God says I am. I have learned to think of myself the way God thinks of me. God says I am righteous. I have rejected the feeling that I am unworthy. I have every right to His riches that any person has. The only right anyone has is the right given to us through the righteousness of Christ. God says I am righteous. I have truly discovered this. God says that as I obey His Word I prosper in everything I do [Joshua 1:8; Psalm 1:3]. I am speaking and acting in this consciousness. Because I know I am righteous in Christ, I have become:

**dangerous to the devil,
useful to God, and
of great benefit to myself and others.**

The more I speak of myself the way God speaks of me, the more I am conscious that I am righteous and prosperous. The blessings of God are manifest in my life.

(2) MY LIFE IS ALREADY PERFECTLY SUCCESSFUL

The Hebrew Old Covenant has no future tense. It has only two tenses, past and present. Because we have a future tense, we have imposed it on the Bible. The Hebrew Old Covenant brings eternity into the present. From God's viewpoint everything has either already happened, or is going on at this moment. The only reason for a past tense is that certain things must have already taken place in order to have the present result.

Example: for God to look upon me as saved, Jesus must have already lived and died for me, and I must have already taken Him. That is why Jesus stood as a Lamb

slain from before the foundation of the world. That is why I was chosen in Him before the foundation of the world. In this way God could save Adam, Abraham, Moses, David, and all the rest before Jesus lived on earth. In God's eternal heart Jesus had already lived, died, and risen. Therefore, the results were guaranteed anywhere in history before the cross and after the cross.

Isa 53:4-5

4 Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

5 But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.
(KJV)

Isaiah 53 is translated as the Hebrew says it: HB

4 Surely he has lifted our sicknesses, and carried our sorrows; and we calculated him touched, struck by God, and looked down on with harshness.

5 And he *was* wounded for our transgressions, crushed for our crookednesses; the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes *there is* healing to us.

Clearly everything in this verse is still future as far as earth is concerned [it was written about 700 B.C.]. God saw it, and the prophet saw it as completed. The translators translated it as it should be.

But in Psalm 1:3 in the King James Version they changed the Hebrew past tense to the English future. The Hebrew literally says:

And he has been like a tree planted by the rivers of water, who gives his fruit in his time; his leaf also does not wither, and all that he does prospers.

In this verse God sees my life from eternity as completed. The entirety of my life God sees as having been completed as a beautiful, green tree, planted by the eternal rivers of God. The rest of the verse views my life as going on right now, each season being lived prosperously in the power of what I have already eternally become in Christ.

The point is this: As a child of God I already have my future successfully lived out in God. All I have to do is realize this, act in faith, and enjoy it. Thinking this way,

132 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

seeing things as God sees them, is the way to have God's prosperity manifested in every part of your life. Praise the Lord.

Dr. Vance Havner said, "Many people are so afraid of getting out on a limb, they never get up the tree." We are not only up the tree, we are like a tree. You have heard the phrase, "He is out of his tree." We definitely are in our tree, and we are like a green tree. Praise the Lord.

1. I have been made like a tree.

Not a weed, which prevents good things from growing. I am like a tree, with many profitable uses. Not a blade of grass, which today is, and tomorrow is cast into the oven. I am like a tree, an evergreen tree. I am like the olive tree. I am eternal. I have been made like a tree. Eternally prosperous. Not a briar that injures the lives of others. I am like a tree, that blesses others. My life is seen as complete, and I have been like a tree.

2. I am planted like a tree!

Yes, planted. I was not blown in by the wind like an accident. I was planted. God carefully picked out my time and place. He planted me exactly in history in His perfect will where I can realize my greatest prosperity and potential. I was born to the parents who were God's perfect will, to make me exactly who I am. When and where and how and by whom I was brought up were all carefully planned by God. I am now exactly where I should be. My days are in His hands. I am no accident. Nothing in my life is an accident. I am planted. God planted me exactly where I am, so I am becoming every day exactly what He has eternally planned me to be.

3. I am planted by the rivers of water.

Rivers is plural. Read these words in your devotions until they become a living reality in your heart. I am not planted by one river, but by many rivers. The Garden of Eden had four rivers. Rivers carry God's blessings. Eden had a river for every direction - east, west, north, and south. So it is with my life. God's blessings are flowing into me from every direction. Rivers of water represent the Holy Spirit. All God's blessings flow into my life by the flow of the Holy Spirit. From the east, the west, the north, and the south, the Holy Spirit waters my tree with the blessings of God's prosperity. My life is situated right where all the beautiful rivers of God come together. Sin drove me out of the garden, but the righteousness of God brought me back in. I am no longer under the curse of sin, sickness, and poverty. I am under the blessings of salvation, health, and prosperity described in Leviticus 26:1-12, and Deuteronomy 28:1-13.

My life is planted in the Paradise of God. I have heaven on earth. I have been like a tree, planted, by the rivers of water.

4. I bear fruit like a tree.

Read these words daily until you have a revelation in your spirit that these verses are literally true in your life. My life is not barren. My life produces fruit to the glory of God. I am a good pastor. A tree is known by its fruit. Every good tree brings forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree brings forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit [Mat 7:17-18]. I am a good tree. I bring forth good fruit. I cannot bring forth evil fruit. My life is productive. I am not wasting time. I am producing good results in my life. I am not in the midst of famine. I am in the midst of plenty. All of God's rivers meet in my life. He causes me by His nature within me to bring forth good fruit, and plenty of fruit.

5. I bear fruit in the right time.

Time means "the right thing at the right time." My good fruit comes into my life at the right time. Everything in my life is according to God's perfect plan - the right thing at the right time. When the devil tells me it is time for me to experience disappointment and defeat, I tell him he is lying. God does not have a season for disappointment and defeat. Sometimes they seem that way, but no, God does not lie. All things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose. I love God. I am one of the called. All things work together for my good, and my prosperity. There is therefore no season for disappointment or defeat. A season for pressure and testing, but not a season for disappointment and defeat. I bring forth my fruit in my season. Glory to God. He enables me to do this. Praise the Lord.

6. My leaf also does not wither.

I have eternal life. I am like an evergreen tree. Summer or winter, spring or fall. It makes no difference. God's eternal life flows in me without stopping. He never leaves me nor forsakes me. The green leaves on a tree show that the tree is flowing with life. It is the same with me. God's life and abundance in me is never interrupted. As I look through the eyes of faith, I see God's abundance in my life, twenty-four hours a day, every day of the year, and all the years of my life. When this life is ended, and I step across the great divide, I will step into the full manifestation of eternal life. There is no end to it. My leaf does not wither. [Again, the tense is not future. It is present.] My leaf does not wither. God's eternity is now manifest in my present life. I observe His eternal fullness in me perpetually. Praise the Lord.

7. Whatever I do prospers.

This is the present, continuous state of the righteous person. I prosper. I prosper spiritually. I grow in grace and knowledge of Him. I wax strong in spirit, filled with wisdom, and the grace of God is upon me [Luke 2:40]. I increase in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man [Luke 2:52]. I prosper psychologically, in mental power, emotional satisfaction, and volitional strength. The peace of God which passes all understanding guards my mind and emotions. His grace strengthens my will, so that I daily will the will of God. I prosper physically. I walk in divine health. By His stripes I was healed [1 Pet. 2:24]. I am not seeking healing or health. I have it. I am righteous in Christ. I am like a tree, a green tree. When disease strikes any part of a tree, the leaves wither. My leaves do not wither. I am not diseased in any part. I walk in divine health.

I prosper socially. I am a friend. I have friends. I bless my friends. My friends bless me. I prosper financially. I tithe. The windows of heaven are open to me. I give offerings to God. He repays me; sometimes forty, sometimes sixty, and sometimes a hundred fold. I give to others. God through others gives it back to me pressed down, shaken together, and running over. I always remember that it is the Lord my God who gives me power to make resources, that He may establish His covenant which He swore to our fathers, as it is this day [Deut. 8:18]. Everything I do prospers. Not just a few, or some things, or most things, but ALL I do, He causes it to prosper. All comes at the beginning of the sentence to make it emphatic. All that I do He causes to prosper. Praise the Lord.

OUTLINE 4

TAKE AN IRREVOCABLE STAND ON GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS

Introduction

We have an official standing in His righteousness.

The key word in verses 4-5 is "stand." The ungodly are not like the righteous. They are not like a planted green tree. They are like the chaff that the wind drives away. The person who does not believe God cannot stand in life or the judgment. He or she is blown away like dead tumbleweed. The ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners [stand] in the congregation of the righteous. The righteous have an official standing before God. We shall not be cut down - now, nor in the judgment. We have an official standing in the righteousness of Christ.

The angel Gabriel said to Zacharias, **I am Gabriel, the one standing before**

the face of God, and am set apart and sent to talk to you, and to announce to you good news. Luke 1:19. Gabriel was saying to Zacharias, "You can believe what I tell you because I have an official standing in the presence of God. I say only what He tells me. My action and word carries behind it the total authority of God." According to Hebrews 1:14 our standing as children of God is even higher than the angels. Are they absolutely not all officially ministering spirits, set apart and sent to minister because of those about to be heirs of salvation? We are children of God. The angels are our servants. They bring God's abundance to us as we speak His words and obey His voice.

In Acts 22:24-29, after Paul was arrested in Jerusalem, the Chief Captain ordered Paul to be beaten to beat the truth out of him. Paul asserted his Roman citizenship. Immediately the captain was afraid. He treated him with respect. Why did Paul assert his right as a citizen? Because he did not want to get beaten and executed.

In Acts 25:9-12 Paul refused to be taken back to Jerusalem for trial because he knew his rights would be violated in Jerusalem. Paul went before Caesar in Rome, and was acquitted and released. As Paul had certain rights as a Roman citizen you and I have all the rights of heavenly citizenship. Heavenly citizenship rights are spelled out in the Bible. All of them are ours. It is not necessary for you and me to be beaten up by the devil. We assert our rights of heavenly citizenship. Once Satan sees that we know our rights, he has to take his hand off of our affairs.

We understand four things about our righteousness in Christ.

1. God worked an irrevocable righteousness in Christ.

According to Hebrews 7:27, and 9:25-28, Christ came and suffered once. He never died before. He will never die again. He completed God's righteousness in this world one time. God raised Him from the dead, never to die again. He worked irrevocable righteousness. It endures forever.

2. Our decision to take His righteousness is irrevocable.

Romans 10:9-13 describes a genuine salvation decision made from the heart. When a person confesses with his mouth the Lord Jesus, and believes with his heart that God raised Him from the dead, it is an irrevocable decision. You and I are saved, and saved forever. Hell cannot revoke it. We cannot revoke it. Not even God can revoke it. God cannot go against His word. A genuine child of God cannot stop believing in the Lord Jesus as his Savior.

3. We are saved by His righteousness.

According to Romans 5, Titus 3:5-9, Philippians 3, and many other Scriptures we are not made righteous by our good works, but by His work in His life, death, and resurrection.

Eph 2:8-10

8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (KJV)

Ephesians 2: HB

8 Because by grace you are saved, through faith, and that absolutely not out of yourselves; *it is* the gift of God,

9 Absolutely not out of works, so that no one should boast,

10 Because we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus upon inherent good works, which God has prepared beforehand so that we should walk in them.

We are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus upon the inherent good works which Jesus did. God prepared these inherent good works beforehand in Jesus [from the foundation of the world, 1 Pet 1:20.] By His new creation workmanship in Christ in us we are enabled to walk in those inherent good works.

4. We are saved by faith in His righteousness.

Romans 4, Galatians 3, and many other Scriptures tell us plainly that we are saved, not by our works, but by simple faith in His righteousness. We like Abraham have believed God. It has been calculated to us as righteousness. Praise the Lord. We are secure. We can safely stand on our rights to security and prosperity in all areas of our lives.

Conclusion

THE LORD GUARANTEES OUR JOURNEY AND OUR DESTINY

The Lord knows the way of the righteous, but the way of the ungodly shall be lost. The word "know" in the Bible means knowledge that comes from the experience of merging your life with another. **And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived,**

and bore Cain, and said, I have erected a man by help from Jehovah, Gen 4:1. Adam and Eve ultimately merged their lives, and produced another life. The Lord has merged His life with us. He produced life in us. We became new creatures in Christ. His journey became our journey. His destiny became our destiny. He knows our journey because He has already planned it out to be a good journey along with Him. He knows our destiny is the New Heaven and the New Earth, because that is His destiny. Praise the Lord!

Keep repeating these affirmations of faith until they take firm root in your heart.

This kind of life is mine because God made me righteous in Christ. I do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly. I do not stand in the way of sinners. I do not sit in the seat of the scornful. My delight is in the law of Jehovah, and in His law I murmur in pleasure day and night. I think. I speak. I act. I reap attitudes and habits. I seek out good food from the Word of God regularly. His Word constantly reinforces my vision that I have been made eternally righteous and prosperous like a tree. I am planted by the rivers of water. I bring forth my fruit in my season at the right time and place. My leaf does not wither. And all that I do He causes to prosper. This is God's vision for me. I operate according to God's vision.

Verse 1. I refuse unbelief.

Verse 2. I pursue faith.

Verse 3. I operate according to God's vision.

Verses 4-5. I have taken an irrevocable stand in God's righteousness.

Verse 6. God has guaranteed my journey and my destiny. Praise God.

I am like a tree! The wicked are like the chaff that the wind drives away. The wicked do not stand in the judgment with the righteous. The righteous person will stand in the judgment, and not be cut down. The Lord knows the way of the righteous, because God Himself has built His own character and His own Person into me. The righteous person has to succeed, because God's nature in me guarantees that.

God is absolutely sure of my destiny, because God knows His own nature within me. You have His nature in you. You are righteous in Christ.

Repeat after me:

I am righteous in Christ. I am filled with the multiple righteous happinesses of

138 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

God's prosperity. I do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly. I get my thoughts from God. I get my words from God. I do not stand with sinners. I act in agreement with God. I do not sit in the seat of the scorers. I have a permanent attitude of trust and obedience to God. I delight in the law of Jehovah. His law makes me happy. His law is precious to me. I pursue His law with all my heart. I murmur in delight in His law day and night. I make delightful sounds as I taste His precious words. His Law through Christ has made me a righteous person and a good pastor.

I am like a tree planted by the rivers of water. I am permanent. I have eternal life. I am planted. I am no accident. God divinely purposed my life, and planned every detail. I am not planted by just one of God's rivers. My life is planted where all of God's rivers come together. All of His riches flow over me, under me, all around me, into me, and out of me to others. I bring forth my fruit in due season. Everything in life benefits me. I suffer no harm or hurt. I always reap benefit, not loss.

Everything comes to me at the right time and place. God is always on time, and I am always on time. My leaf never withers. My righteousness in Christ is like an evergreen, and like the green Olive tree. All that I do prospers. I do not win some, lose some; I always win. I do not always get what I plan, but when I do not, God always gives me something better. I will stand in God's judgment, and not be cut down. God knows my journey and my destiny. I am guaranteed righteous from here to eternity. Praise the LORD.

OUTLINE 5

I AM A SAINT

Ephesians 1:1-6

- 1. I am a saint NOW. verse 1.**
- 2. I am operating in two realms. verse 1.**
 - (1) In the Spiritual realm, and in**
 - (2) the physical realm [in Christ and in Ephesus].**

The three most important steps in my life are-

 - a. My thoughts.**
 - b. My words.**
 - c. My actions.**

These three things control my life. I control these three things by the grace of God.

**3. I am operating as a saint with unlimited resources.
verse 3.**

I have all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ Jesus. Since Spirit is the foundation and cause of all material existence and function, spiritual thoughts control all physical and material things. Since I have all spiritual blessings, I also have all material blessings. I have access to unlimited wealth!

**4. I am operating as a special object of God's love.
verse 4.**

He holds us before Himself, perfectly righteous in Christ, and perfectly loved as He loves His only begotten, Jesus Christ. We serve a good God. He will never harm us. He will discipline us, yes, but never damage us in any way. He always works for our good. We are special objects of His love.

**5. I am operating with son and daughter privileges.
verses 5-6.**

He predestined us to be children, with the privileges obtained by our elder brother, the Lord Jesus. This is the foundation of every good thing in my life. My being conscious of my righteousness in Christ is the foundation for my spiritual prosperity, my psychological prosperity, my professional prosperity, my social prosperity, my physical prosperity, my financial prosperity - my total prosperity for all time and eternity. I am conscious of my righteousness in Christ. It is thoroughly and permanently set in my heart. I prosper in whatever I put my hand to.

Conclusion: Attention!

I saturate myself with the following thought. I make it dominate every moment of my life:

**What I experience most of the time
*is what takes control of my life.***

If you watch worldly television constantly those ungodly things you constantly watch take control over your life. If you listen to gossip and tell gossip constantly, gossip will take control of your life. If you read the Word of God, murmur in pleasure in the Word of God, and speak the Word of God constantly, the Word of God will take control of your life.

**To change any part of your life
*you must have an intense, powerful, living
experience in that area of your life.***

The longer you maintain that good, powerful experience in your life, the more control that good experience takes in your life. The longer you maintain a good experience, the more likely that good experience is to continue in your life. The longer you maintain that good experience, the more you are changed for the good.

If you have a special need, you must live in the consciousness of the living Word of God on that subject. You must put it into actual practice, and sustain it over a long period of time until you are permanently changed. Success in that area will become an uninterrupted habit of life.

You must lay the foundation of a consciousness of righteousness in that area of your life. You do this by listening to the Word of God on that subject, and repeating with your mouth Scriptures on that subject. Soon it becomes a part of your daily conduct. You are unconsciously controlled by your most dominant and intense thoughts and experiences, sustained over the longest period of time. You must determine that you will sustain a living, dominating, intense, powerful consciousness of righteousness in all areas of your life for all time and eternity.

Praise the Lord!

Chapter 12

THE CRUCIFIXION OF YOUR SOUL LIFE

OUTLINE

1 Corinthians 2:14

1. You are spirit, soul, and body.
2. There are three levels of creation.
 - (1) Matter
 - (2) Animal life
 - (3) Human life
3. You are one spirit with the Lord.
4. Your soul must be changed.
5. Apply the knife of the Word to your soul.
6. Be renewed in your soul.

1 Cor 2:14

But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 2:14 HB

But the soulish man absolutely does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, because they are foolishness to him, and he absolutely does not have power to know, because they are spiritually examined.

2:14 soulish, *psuchikos*, soulish, a human dominated by his or her soulish opinions instead of revelation knowledge from God through your spirit that has been born of the Holy Spirit. The soulish person is directly contrasted with the spiritual person in the next verse. The soulish person is dominated by his soulish mind, his soulish emotions, and his soulish will, the lower, sin dominated human rebelliousness. The spiritual person is led by the Holy Spirit, and is dominated by his or her spirit that has

142 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

been born of God, and his soul is crucified and renewed in Christ. This is the first time that *psuchikos* appears. It is the adjective form of the noun soul, *psuche*, from which come the words psyche and psychology, the study of the soul. That is why there are so many different and erroneous opinions in psychology and psychiatry, because those sciences are dominated by soulish opinions in rebellion against God and His Holy Spirit given revelation in the Bible. The soul is the natural person, his mind, emotions, and will, untouched and unaided by the Holy Spirit of God. That is why KJV translated the word natural. The soulish man is the man in his natural state, deprived by sin, and not regenerated by the Spirit of God. *Psuchikos* appears also in 1 Cor 15:44 (twice); 15:46; Jas 3:15; Jde 1:19. See Notes Gen 1:20; 2:7.

The purpose of this message is to help you distinguish between your spirit and your soul. The Scriptures under the leadership of the Holy Spirit will teach you how to crucify your soulish opinions, and receive the mind of Christ. Study these Scriptures very diligently.

1. YOU ARE SPIRIT, SOUL, AND BODY

1Thes 5:23

23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (KJV)

1 Thessalonians 5:23

And the God of peace himself sanctify you complete in every part, and your whole spirit, and soul, and body be kept blameless in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ to be at our side.

Underline in this verse in your Bible the words, spirit, soul, and body. You have three major parts to your being - spirit, soul, and body.

Open your Bible to Genesis 1.

Follow me in our study of Genesis 1-2. You will see that God created three levels of life in creation.

2. There are Three Levels of Creation

The word **created** is used in only three verses. In all the other verses the word made is used. Create means to bring to be. It means **to cut out**. God cut out physical reality out of His spiritual reality. Made means to form things out of the material that was created or cut out.

(1) MATTER

In Genesis 1:1 God created the heavens and the earth. In this verse God created matter. From matter God made the sea, the land, the plants, and the sun, moon, and stars.

(2) ANIMAL LIFE

In Genesis 1:21 God created animal life. He created sea animals first. Then he made the birds, and the land animals. This is the second level of life. This is the soul-life level. Animals operate on a soul. They have bodies that were made from matter. The one thing that animals have that dirt does not have is soul life. Animals think. That is why you can teach horses, dogs, and other animals to obey you, and use them in your work. Animals have emotions. They can be frightened, or be lonely, or angry. All of us have seen dogs howl and be sad because they were separated from their master. Animals have a will. They decide to obey you or not to obey you.

(3) HUMAN LIFE

In Genesis 1:27 God created man. Why is the word created used. Because when God brought man into existence, He added something that did not previously exist. Matter already existed. God created matter in verse 1. God took the matter that already existed, and formed a body. He did not have to create anything for man's body. God gave man a soul. Soul life already existed. God had created soul life in verse 21, when he created the animals.

But God gave man a spirit like Himself. God had to create the human spirit. This did not previously exist. So, God created for man a spirit in the image of God. That is the one thing man has that no other creature on earth has. The human spirit is what makes man like God.

Now look at Gen 2:7

7 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (KJV)

Gen 2:7: HB

And Jehovah God formed the man out of the dust of the soil, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and the man became a living soul.

Notice that God formed man's body out of the dust of the earth. Then God did something He did not do to any other creature. He bent over the human body, touched man's body, mouth to mouth, and God breathed Himself into that body. He breathed

144 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

His Spirit into that body. God literally spirited into man the spirit of life.

Man became a living soul. Here is an extremely important point. Genesis 2:7 says that Adam became a living soul.

Saint Paul in 1 Corinthians 15:45, says that Christ was made a life-giving spirit.

And so it has been written, The first man, Adam, became a living soul; the last Adam, a life-giving Spirit.

Why was Adam a living soul, and why was Jesus a life giving spirit? Why was Adam only a soul that could not give eternal life, whereas Jesus is a life-giving spirit that gives eternal life? Because Adam made the wrong choice. He did not eat of the tree of life, and therefore did not have God's eternal life in him. He was only a living soul subject to death. Jesus came as the Son of God from heaven with God's life within Him, and He made the right choice as a human. That is why God had to send Jesus, because Adam did not choose to receive God's eternal life [until Jehovah God provided the sacrifice in the Garden after Adam's sin, prefiguring Christ who would later come].

Freedom of choice is one characteristic that makes man like God. God created Adam with a human spirit and with free choice. If Adam had eaten of the Tree of Life he would have become a life-giving spirit, but he did not. Adam ate of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. That means he experimented with evil.

Jesus came as the Son of God, with God's eternal life within Him. He was born a baby. He grew up as a little boy. When He reached the age to know right and wrong, He chose right. He did not experiment with good and evil. He believed God. He took God's Word to determine what is right and what is wrong. He did not eat from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. He trusted His heavenly Father. He ate of the Tree of Life, which is obedience to the Father.

Jesus became the new Head of the human race. When Adam sinned, we all were in Adam, because we had not yet been born. So, when Adam sinned, his sin passed to all of us. Since we did not deliberately choose to sin in Adam, God sent Jesus who chose eternal life for us. Just as Adam sinned for us, although we did not know it, Jesus lived righteously for us, although we did not know it. Once we were born, and reached the age to know, then we had the opportunity to choose. We can choose to stay with Adam and our sin, or we can choose to receive Jesus and His righteousness. When we do, we also become living spirits with the spiritual life of God flowing through us. **Jesus became a life giving spirit because He came as both God and man, He made the right choice, always to obey the heavenly Father, and never experiment with right and wrong.**

3. YOU ARE ONE SPIRIT WITH THE LORD

Before you were saved, you were a living soul. You had a human spirit, but it was dead to God. When you were born of the Holy Spirit your human spirit was made alive, and joined to the Lord. You became a living spirit. An unsaved person is a soul, with a dead spirit and a body. A believer is a living spirit, born-of-God spirit, with a soul and a body.

1 Cor 6:17

17 But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 6:17 HB

And the one being joined to the Lord is one spirit.

Before you were saved, you were a living soul. You followed your own mind, emotions, and will. Now you are a living spirit. Your spirit has been born of God, and made one with the Lord.

The Apostle John wrote about your spirit in 1 John 3:9.

1 Jn 3:9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. (KJV)

1 John 3:9 HB

Everyone having been begotten of God absolutely does not do sin, because his seed stays in him, and he absolutely does not have power to sin, because he is begotten of God.

You need to study 1 John 3:5-10.

4. YOUR SOUL MUST BE CHANGED

Here is the problem. When you were saved, your spirit was born of God, but your soul was not. Your soul is something that must be changed by you and the Holy Spirit as you grow in the Lord. After you were saved you still had many of the same old thoughts you had before you were saved. Only gradually were those changed. Even today you still need to change some of your old thoughts and habits. Your old soul life is still alive. You still have many of your old thoughts, bad feelings, and

146 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

wrong decisions. This is your soul life. It must be crucified with Christ, and you must be renewed in your mind to serve God.

FLESHLY CHRISTIANS

1 Corinthians 2:14 says that the unsaved person is dominated by his soul. He follows what he thinks, what he feels, and what he decides on his own. He does not ask God. He does not obey God. He follows his own soul like an animal.

1 Corinthians 2:15-16 describes the spiritual person. He is a saved and Spirit-filled believer. He is dominated by the spiritual. He follows his human spirit, under the leadership of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit lives in his spirit. He does not listen to the opinions of his soul. He reads the Bible, and listens to the Holy Spirit in his spirit. His fleshly thoughts, feelings, and decisions are crucified with Christ. He obeys the higher leadership of the Holy Spirit. He is a spiritual person.

But then there is another kind of Christian. He is a carnal Christian. A fleshly Christian.

Read 1 Corinthians 3:1-4.

1 Cor 3:1-4

1 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? (KJV)

1 Cor 3:1-4 HB

1 And I, brothers, absolutely did not have power to speak to you as those spiritual, but as those fleshly, as infants in Christ.

2 I gave you milk to drink, absolutely not *solid* food, because you absolutely did not yet have power, and additionally you absolutely do not yet now have power,

3 Because you are still fleshly, because wherever *there are* among you jealousy, and strife, and divisions, are you absolutely not fleshly, and walk according to man?

4 Because whenever one says, I truly am of Paul, and another, I *am* of Apollos, are you absolutely not fleshly?

A fleshly Christian is a Christian. He has been saved, but he is a babe in Christ.

A physical baby has human life, but does not yet function as a mature human. A baby is very fleshly. His physical appetites dominate him. So fleshly Christians have spiritual life in them, but they do not yet function as mature spiritual believers. They still act like unbelievers. They walk like men. In other words, they live like unsaved people.

5. APPLY THE KNIFE OF THE WORD OF GOD TO YOUR SOUL.

Read Hebrews 4:12-13.

Heb 4:12-13

12 For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. (KJV)

Heb 4:12-13 HB

12 Because the word of God is living, and supernaturally working, and slices more decisively than any double-mouthed sword, also reaching through to the separation of soul and spirit, both of the joints and marrow, and is a judge of the passionate deliberations and manner of understanding of the heart,

13 And there is absolutely no creature that is not manifest before his face, and all things *are* naked and bare throated to the eyes of him with whom *is* the word.

Follow me with great attention as I give you the meaning of each key word in verse 12. As I give these notes read the verse from your Bible periodically to maintain the train of thought.

The Word of God is the Logos, the written Word of God, the Bible. Living is the Greek word *zoa*. There are three words in Greek for life. *Bios* is biological life, plant life. *Psuche* is psychological life, soul life. *Zoa*. is divine life. God's Word is divinely alive. The Bible is divinely alive.

Supernaturally working is the word *energes*. This word is used in the New Covenant only of supernatural energy. It is never used to refer to human energy. The written Word of God is divinely alive, and supernaturally working.

Double mouthed sword. This is not a long Roman sword for fighting. This is the carving knife of the priest for sacrificing animals. It is a short sacrificial knife, sharp

148 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

on both sides, and cuts in both directions. It is a knife for cutting and carving meat for sacrifice. The written Word of God is divinely alive, and supernaturally working, sharper than the double mouthed sacrificial knife of the high priest.

Piercing is the cutting that takes place when the priest's knife penetrates the animal's body to split it open into two halves.

Reaching through is the cutting of the two halves into parts to be laid on the altar. Now comes the application

Reaching through to the separation of the soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a judge of the passionate deliberations and manner of understanding of the heart.

Hebrews 4:13 is so extremely important. The word **bare throated**, *trachelizo*, is to seize by the throat, to expose the throat of a victim for slaughter. The picture is that we are held by the throat by the Word of God to slay every evil deliberation and evil understanding that works against our being made totally Christ-like. The Word of God is living with divine life, and supernaturally working, and slices more precisely than any double-mouthed sword, reaching through to separate any and all evil mindedness in our soul, not in perfect agreement with our born-again spirit. Our spirit (those of us who are saved, born from above) is born of God, and therefore perfectly pure in nature. Our soul has to be crucified, renewed, cleansed, trained, and empowered by the Holy Spirit, over time, to become like our Christ-like spirit. As you receive the Word of God, the Word of God reaches through to separate your soulish notions from the pure mind of Christ in your spirit. This is the crucifixion and renewal of the soul life, Rom 6:6; 12:1-2; Gal 2:20; 5:24; 6:14.

The head priest's sacrificial knife lays open the sacrificial animal, and cuts it in pieces, separating the joints and cutting through the bone marrow.

The written Word of God is the sacrificial knife of our Head Priest, the Lord Jesus. He wants to take that knife and perform surgery on our soul. He wants to lay our soul open before God. He wants us to see what passionate deliberations are coming from our soul, and what manner of understanding is coming from our spirit. He wants us to distinguish our thoughts from His thoughts, because our thoughts are not His thoughts [Isaiah 55:8].

He wants to cut out of our soul the cancers and tumors of our own fleshly opinions. He wants to remove the infection and poison we have taken into our minds, emotions, and wills. He wants to operate on our wills to make our wills more responsive to Him. He wants to remove the excess fat of our traditions and false beliefs we have accumulated over the years by hearing human opinions instead of the clear Word of God. He wants to perform spiritual surgery on our souls.

But He cannot do that unless we put the knife in His hand. He will not perform surgery on our souls unless we agree to it. He cannot perform surgery on us unless we find the verses in the Bible He needs with which to remove certain things from our souls.

That is why it is so important to lay up the written Word of God in our hearts. If the Word is already there in our hearts, the Lord Jesus can pick up that knife [that Bible verse], and quickly remove the tumor of disobedience. It will be so quick and easy.

The Holy Spirit will infuse us with a special anointing of God's life. He will give us a quick recovery. We will feel a surge of supernatural energy immediately. We will wonder why we carried that tumor so long. We will wonder why we did not have spiritual surgery before now. This is the crucifixion of the soul life.

So that you understand clearly what I mean, let me state it clearly again in other words. Your soul life is the thoughts, feelings, and decisions your soul was accustomed to follow before you were saved. Your soul life is you without God's leadership and God's will. The soul life is your worldly way of doing things, even after you are saved. Your worldly way of thinking, feeling, and doing are not all suddenly removed when you are saved. The complete changing of your soul takes place after you get saved. It happens sometimes in a series of big spiritual experiences. Sometimes it happens gradually with little notice. Your spirit is righteous. It is born of God. It cannot sin. But your soul must be made righteous by the process of crucifixion and renewal in the Holy Spirit.

6. BE RENEWED IN YOUR SOUL.

Rom 12:1-2

1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (KJV)

Romans 12:1-2 HB

1 I comfort you therefore, brothers, through the compassion of God, to stand your bodies alongside of *him* a living sacrifice, holy, fully agreeable to God, your logical ministry to God.

2 And do not be conformed to this age, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may test what is the inherent good, and *the* fully agreeable, and *the* perfect will of God,

150 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

12:1 logical ministry, *logikos latreuo*. Logical has the same meaning in Greek that it does in English, what is rational to the human mind. *Latreuo* is used in Jhn 16:2; Rom 9:4; 12:1; Heb 9:1, 6, and always refers to ministering to God. Remember that the mind thinks something is logical only if the mind has been trained to think that way. Your mind is to some degree like a computer which can be set up to think according to a certain procedure. What is logical, rational, to a committed believer into the Lord Jesus is not at all logical to an atheist, or someone committed to a different religion. A lawless person does not compute the way a lawful person computes. A believer does not compute the way an unbeliever computes. The Word of God, the Bible, is the program you and the Holy Spirit use to program your mind to think logically according to God. Everyone is programmed either by the Word and the Holy Spirit, or he/she is programmed by the world, the flesh, and the devil. Do not allow anyone to cause you to stumble by accusing you of being mentally programmed by Christianity. Those who accuse you are also programmed, just not by the same One who programmed us who believe. Ministry to God: Everything you do that is right and with a right heart attitude before God is a ministry to Him. A right heart attitude is that whatever you do, you do it as to the Lord, and not to men, Rom 14:6, 8.

I want to concentrate your attention on two words in verse 2: conformed, and transformed. Conformed means to be shaped from the outside. Transformed means to be changed from the inside. Conformed means that your soul is shaped by the pressures of the world upon your body and mind. Transformed means that your soul is changed by the Holy Spirit working from inside of you. Conformed means you think like the world around you thinks. Transformed means that you think as the Holy Spirit from heaven directs you from the inside.

The Holy Spirit will renew your mind with the Word of God if you will let Him. The world will force you into their mold if you will let them. The Holy Spirit will not force you. You have to willfully cooperate with the Holy Spirit. You have to deliberately turn away from the world, and deliberately turn to the Holy Spirit within your spirit.

This is repentance. The Greek word for repentance is composed of two words - with, and mind. Repentance means with-mind. Repentance means to get your mind in agreement with God. Get your mind with God. Do not put your mind with the world. Put your mind with God.

Your soul life will be crucified with Christ. Your mind will be renewed with the Holy Spirit.

This is what Ephesians 4:22-24 mean. This is what Colossians 3:5-17 mean. This is the crucifixion and renewal of your soul.

Chapter 13

RECEIVING THE MIND OF CHRIST

OUTLINE

Introduction

- (1) Everything in your life proceeds from**
 - a. Your thoughts.**
 - b. Your words.**
 - c. Your actions.**
- (2) You must keep your thoughts, words, and actions**
 - a. Consistent with the Word of God, and**
 - b. Consistent with one another.**

1. Where do thoughts come from?

2. There is no scarcity of wealth in the world.

3. Develop the mind of Christ within you.

4. How to develop the mind of Christ.

- (1) Make a deliberate decision not to expose your mind to unbelief.**
- (2) Write down definite goals.**
- (3) Find Bible verse that promise what God says you can have.**
- (4) Get alone with God with your goals and Bible verses.**

Introduction

Get your thoughts from God and His Word. Believe His thoughts. Speak them. Act upon them. (I Call those things that be not as though they were) [Rom. 4:17].

- (1) Everything in your life proceeds from,**
 - a. Your thoughts,**
 - b. Your words, and**
 - c. Your actions.**

Actions are what produce results. Actions proceed from words. Words proceed from thoughts.

The key law that you must now commit to memory until it becomes automatic in your life:

(2) YOU MUST KEEP YOUR THOUGHTS, WORDS, AND ACTIONS

a. CONSISTENT WITH THE WORD OF GOD

b. AND CONSISTENT WITH ONE ANOTHER.

Here is an example: You cannot talk about how difficult it is in your ministry, and expect to have a good ministry. Your words will cancel out your actions. You will defeat everything you are doing. Never tell people how hard it is to serve God where you are. Never try to make them feel sorry for you. Never tell people how poor you are, trying to get them to give money to you. This is deceit. It is a lie. It contradicts Holy Scripture.

Your heavenly Father owns all the wealth in the world. You do not tell people what you need. You tell God what you need, and you tell people that your Father supplies all your needs. Your words of poverty you speak trying to get money from people will cancel out your preaching and your ministry. How can you tell people that God will meet their needs when He is not meeting your needs. You will find your words, good or bad, clothed with reality in your life very shortly after you speak them.

So again I say:

KEEP YOUR THOUGHTS, YOUR WORDS, AND YOUR ACTIONS

CONSISTENT WITH THE WORD OF GOD,

AND CONSISTENT WITH ONE ANOTHER.

When you tell people your needs, how difficult you are having it, that you do not know how you are going to buy food and clothing, you are looking to people to meet your needs. You are hoping that by telling them how bad your needs are, they will give

you something. By saying these things you are looking to man instead of God. Do not ask humans. When you tell humans, you are begging from humans. Ask your Father in secret. He will reward you openly [Mat. 6:6].

1. WHERE DO THOUGHTS COME FROM?

All thoughts originate with God. All evil thoughts are good thoughts which came from God, but the devil twisted and perverted them. All good thoughts are now proceeding from the mind of God. They are being broadcast along the airwaves now by the Holy Spirit through Jesus Christ, the Word of God. They are invisibly transmitted in your direction on a frequency which you are capable of receiving if you allow the grace of God to tune your receiver.

The perfect collection of God's thoughts for every need has been written in the Bible. Any person who takes the Lord Jesus, and reads the Bible in faith, can be trained to recognize God's thoughts. You can hear God's voice in your inward being. Gradually you will begin to receive continual broadcasts directly from God. Your spirit and mind will be tuned to His thoughts and words. You will hear Him clearly.

Read Proverbs 1:20-23. These verses say that God is transmitting wisdom to you now everywhere you go. God promises in these verses to pour out His Spirit unto you. He promises to make known His words to you. God is projecting His wisdom into the streets where you move and work. God's wisdom is **screaming, giving her voice in the streets**. His words are loud enough for anyone to hear if they desire to hear. His thoughts make you rich, and add no sorrow with it [Proverbs 10:22]. They are being transmitted everywhere for everybody day and night. God says for you to turn and listen to Him. He will pour out His Spirit unto you, and make known His words to you.

You must cultivate His thoughts by prayer and meditation. You must make God's thoughts dominant in your heart and life. You must speak His thoughts, and not contradict them in your conversation. God's thoughts will produce great results in your life if you speak them in faith. When you use God's words with a right heart attitude then you have the power of being in agreement with God. When you act, spirit, soul, and body in complete agreement with God and His Word the power of God flows to bring it about. When you have another believer who believes with you, the Word becomes even more powerful. The harmonious atmosphere of being in agreement in the truth releases the power of God upon you to deal with the situation at hand.

Believe and speak God's thoughts and words on abundance. Read and ask the Holy Spirit to give you a Holy Spirit anointed revelation of this statement:

2. There is no scarcity of wealth in this world.

The idea that if some have more, others must have less, because there is not enough for everyone is a lie of the devil. There is enough abundance in this world to make every man, woman, and child a millionaire many times over. There is no scar-

154 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

city of food. No scarcity of anything that anyone needs. People destroy God's abundance through their ignorance and unbelief. People lie and cheat to prevent others from having more than they have. Jealousy, greed, and hypocrisy are the paths to misery and poverty. If you want to enjoy abundance, get your heart right with God. Forsake your own thoughts. Get His thoughts and obey them. He will rain His blessings upon your garden, Isa 55:6-13.

Here is an all important thought: Every place in the Bible where God calls His people to turn to Him, He promises to give them both spiritual and material blessings. When you prosper inwardly in your relationship with God, there is the seed to prosper outwardly in your wealth, if you have the faith to see it. Faith is knowing God's thought and acting upon it.

Proverbs 23:7 says, **For as he keeps the gate of his heart, so is he.** How you keep the gate of your thoughts in your heart is what you really are. You open the gate to God's Word, and you close the gate to the world, the flesh, and the devil.

Keep the gate means to set priorities, to determine what you will take and what you will not take. You place things in order of importance. It means you learn to keep what is important to God, and discard what is not important to God. You will have to learn how to keep your thoughts in your heart to become a Christ-like pastor.

2 Cor 10:4-5

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)

5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; (KJV)

2 Corinthians 10: HB

4 Because the weapons of our warfare are absolutely not fleshly, but powerful through God to the pulling down of strongholds,

5 Pulling down calculations, and every high thing lifting up itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every exercise of the mind to the attentive hearing of Christ;

Strongholds and **high thing** refer to skyscraper buildings. Demons have built thoughts in our minds like skyscraper buildings. They cast long shadows so we cannot see what God wants us to see. The strongholds of unbelief must literally be demolished. They are wrong ways of thinking built into our lives over many years. These strongholds in our minds are enforced with powerful emotional and cultural habits.

They are forged with chains of slavery. They make us think that the hard life is the holy life, the humble life is the poor life, the wealthy life is the proud and haughty life, and the rich life is the wicked and repulsive life. These are strongholds built by Satan into our thinking to prevent God's covenant from being established in our lives. Satan built these strongholds into the entire population. By these evil thoughts Satan is able to control government, communication, entertainment, business, and religion. God created wealth. Satan deceived both believers and non-believers into thinking that wealth and holiness cannot go together.

Who benefits most from that lie? The devil. We must demolish these skyscraper strongholds of poverty built into our thinking!

GOD IS THE GOD OF PROSPERITY

Why has wealth become identified with the wicked, and poverty become identified with Christians? Why is it that many Christians think that to be rich is evil, and to be poor is holy? To answer that question let me ask you another question. It is a long question. Follow it closely.

QUESTION: If God gave the earth and all of its wealth to His children, and told them to have dominion over it, [which He did], and if man lost it through sin, [which he did],...And Jesus Christ, the Son of God, came, took Satan's power away from him, and redeemed man and the earth with all its wealth, [which He did], If you were the devil, and knew that you had lost your power to control man and the wealth of the earth, and you knew that if man ever discovered that by seeking the kingdom of God first he would regain control of the wealth of the earth, and you knew that your only hope of keeping God's children from regaining control of all wealth was to deceive man into believing that you cannot be both righteous and rich, what would you do?

If you were the devil and you had lost your power, you would do exactly what the devil has done. You would deceive everyone possible into believing that it is a sin for Christians to be wealthy. You would make them think that the only use that wealth has is to satisfy the lusts of the flesh.

If you were the devil, and the only tool you had left is deception, how would you try to deceive? There is only one way. You must convince them that their Lord and Master, Jesus Christ, was poor. You must convince them that He taught that Christians are to be poor, and that it is a sin to be rich. To do this you have to convince

156 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

everyone that Jesus teaches something different in the New Covenant than what God taught in the Old Covenant. You have to create a whole system of faith that says that God has different plans for different periods of history. You must teach that the promises of material wealth and blessing given in the Old Covenant are strictly for Israel in the Old Covenant, and not for the New Covenant believer. You must take the true teachings of Jesus that the spiritual must take priority over the material [in total agreement with the Law of Moses], and weave them in with the pagan religious beliefs of the East that matter is evil, and that the functions of the body are evil.

With this deception you must make the celibate holy, and the married defiled. If that is true, then only the defiled can obey God to multiply and populate the earth, and only the ones who disobey God's command to marry and have children can be pure and holy. Along with this deception of Satan comes the belief that a vow of poverty and super holiness go together.

Again, if you were the devil out of whose hands would you want to keep wealth? The devil does not want believers to have wealth. It is not God who wants you poor. It is Satan. I ask you, how successful has Satan been with his deception? How much of it have you believed?

In the last four hundred years the doctrine of salvation by grace through faith has been re-established in the body of Christ – not in all the professing church, but in many Christian groups. It is time that we believe the teaching that God gives abundant wealth to believers as taught in Deuteronomy 8:18 and Matthew 6:33.

Hard working Christians have been taught to be satisfied with food, clothing, and shelter, while they, their pastors, missionaries, and churches beg for money to carry on God's work. People glorify wealthy business people, entertainers, and movie stars. They think it is normal for the ungodly to live in wealth, while the godly act humble, stay poor, and exercise little influence on the world. Now, I ask you again if you were the devil, what better system could you devise? I say it is time, by the power of the blood of Jesus, to cast off this deception, and openly declare and believe that Deuteronomy 8:18 and Matthew 6:33 teach the same thing. It is time for us to preach what Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28 teach, that wealth is a blessing and poverty is a curse. And it is time we preach what the entire New Covenant teaches, that we have been delivered from the curse, and that the blessing of Abraham has come upon us.

According to 2 Corinthians 10:4-5 we must pull down these strongholds and skyscrapers of poverty thinking that block out God's viewpoint. We must literally demolish these towering structures of poverty thinking. We must keep the gate of our heart for the beautiful structures of wealth and abundance which God has promised in

His Word. We must think His thoughts after Him.

Isa 55:7-13

7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

8 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD.

9 For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

10 For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:

11 So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

12 For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.

13 Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the LORD for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off. (KJV)

Isaiah 55:7-13. HB

7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the vain man what he devises, and let him turn back to Jehovah, and he will have compassion upon him, and to our God, because he will abundantly forgive;

8 Because my devisings *are* not your devisings, and your ways *are* not my ways, says Jehovah;

9 Because as the heavens soar above the earth, so my ways soar above your ways, and those I devise above those you devise;

10 Because as the rain comes down, and the snow from the heavens, and does not turn back there, but waters the earth, and causes it to bring forth and sprout, that it may give seed to the sower, and food to the eater;

11 So my word shall be that goes forth out of my mouth; it shall not return to me void, but it shall do what I desire, and it shall prosper where I sent it,

12 Because you shall go out with joy, and you shall flow with peace; the mountains and the hills shall break out before your face shouting, and all the trees of the field shall clap their palms.

13 Instead of the thorn the cypress shall come up, and instead of the stinging nettle the myrtle tree shall come up; and it shall be to Jehovah for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.

158 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

This passage is both spiritual and literal. God does not devise the way we devise, full of guilt, fear, inadequacy, poverty, defeat, lack. He devises in terms of total abundance, both spiritually and materially. He invites us to literally forsake our way of poverty devisings. He invites us to adopt His thoughts. If we do, He rains upon us His blessings. He will water our hearts so we can devise abundant thoughts. He will literally water our land so it will produce beautiful and abundant crops. No one has joy, peace, singing, and clapping of hands because of poverty. We are taught to have joy, peace, singing, and clapping of our hands regardless of the outward appearance of things. If we believe Him, God supplies us with that abundance He has promised. The picture of the earth's bringing forth abundantly is not just a spiritual picture. It is a literal, material picture. When people prosper spiritually their land also prospers. As their land prospers, their wealth increases. Wealth comes from the land. To have abundance you must change your devisings to God's devisings (thoughts).

Your thoughts are your greatest hindrances, or your greatest assets. You cannot act contrary to your thoughts. You cannot go contrary to the pictures on the screen of your heart. You cannot move where your thoughts and your faith do not carry you. Everyone lives within the limits of his own thinking, and within the limits of his own beliefs. That is why, again and again, God commands us to forsake our thoughts, and adopt His thoughts.

Matt 12:34-35

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. (KJV)

Read - Matthew 12: HB

34 Offspring of vipers, how do you, being evil, have power to speak inherent good, because out of the super-abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.

35 The inherently good man out of the inherently good treasure of the heart throws out the inherently good, and an evil man out of the evil treasure throws out evil.

Capture that phrase, **because out of the super-abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. Forever hereafter use it as one of the foundational building blocks of your life. You are righteous in your heart by the grace of God. You now have the capacity to take the good thoughts of Christ. We have the mind of Christ [1 Corinthians 2:16]. That means His mind is our possession.**

That does not mean we are necessarily familiar with what we possess. There are

many who are saved who know very little about what they possess. As saved people we have the mind of Christ. But you become familiar with His mind only by studying, meditating upon, and using His thoughts until you actually know them. As you fill up your heart with His thoughts, you can draw out of that abundance of good thoughts which produce good things. Note that out of good thoughts come good things.

Always remember that whatever thoughts fill you and become dominant produce their literal reality in your life. Dominant thoughts of poverty in your mind, literally produce poverty in your physical life. Dominant thoughts of abundance in your mind, literally produce abundance in your physical life. Whatever thoughts you plant, cultivate, and make dominant produce their literal results in your life. This is the way the power of the Holy Spirit works.

Remember that the bad gets planted, cultivated, and becomes dominant automatically when you do nothing. No one plants weeds. Because of the curse caused by sin weeds sprout and grow automatically and in abundance. All you have to do to develop thoughts that produce poverty is do nothing. Your garden will automatically become filled with the weeds of poverty. Only by a deliberately planned and executed program can poverty be pulled out, and abundance be built into your life. But once you deliberately do that, then you can deliberately bring forth good things out of that abundance.

REVIEW AND REPEAT:

God's thoughts and words in me produce good things. I receive from God what I expect to receive. According to my faith be it unto me. I can receive only what I am prepared to receive. My thoughts are my greatest hindrances or my greatest assets. Thoughts that are planted, cultivated, and made dominant always produce their literal reality.

The three step program for reaching any goal is-

[1] thoughts,

[2] words,

[3] actions.

I get my thoughts from God, His Word, and godly people. I always keep my thoughts, words, and actions consistent with the Word of God. All thoughts originate with God. Evil thoughts are thoughts from God that Satan and people have twisted

and perverted. I keep my heart permanently tuned to God. I receive His thoughts continually. I keep the gate to my heart to make my thoughts conform to the Bible. I arrange my thoughts according to priority. I do not waste time with non-essential thoughts. By the Word of God, the leadership of the Holy Spirit, and good instruction from godly people I am pulling down the strongholds and skyscraper structures of poverty that block out God's viewpoint. I am daily filling my heart with abundance out of the Word of God, from good books, and thoughts communicated to me directly by the Holy Spirit. Out of this abundance I have placed in my heart, I am bringing forth good things. I plant, cultivate, and make dominant the good things from God. His thoughts produce their literal reality in my life. I use everything He places in my hands for the glory of God, my own good, and the good of others. Praise the Lord!

3. DEVELOP THE MIND OF CHRIST WITHIN YOU

Psalm 46:10, **Slack off, and know by seeing that I *am* God.**

Slack off from those things in your life that are not according to the Word of God, and get revelation knowledge by seeing God.

Saint Paul says we Christians have the mind of Christ [1 Cor. 2:16]. He also said, Exercise this mind in yourself, which was also in Christ Jesus [Philip. 2:5].

Jesus was a baby, then a child, then a boy, and then a man. He developed His mind and spirit by reading the Bible, and storing its facts, stories, words, prophecies, wisdom, practical instructions, rules, regulations, and ceremonies in His heart. He learned His lessons well from His parents, the priests, and rabbis in the temple and the synagogues. He learned it thoroughly from the Bible itself under the immediate direction of the Holy Spirit.

He spent much time alone, being still and quiet before the Father. He watched the Father with the eye of His mind. He listened intently to the Father [John 5:19, 12:49] He learned how to be still, and know that His Father was God. His unwavering consciousness of who He was, was what saw Him through all His trials, and impelled Him to His goal. This was developed in quietness and solitude with God the Father.

Every great man and woman in the Bible developed their greatness by spending much time alone with God. Enoch, the father of Methuselah, walked with God, and was not for God took him. Years ago in college as a teenager, in my mind I wrote a little story about Enoch. I pictured Him one morning, getting up and saying, "God, I would like to go on a quiet walk with you today." And God said, "All right, come on, let's go." I pictured them walking and talking all day. Enoch became so entranced

with listening to God's voice, he forgot what time it was. Right through the noon hour they walked. Food never crossed Enoch's mind. On through the afternoon, and Enoch was enthralled with watching and listening to God. Eventually it was sunset. Suddenly Enoch realized that it was almost night. He said to God, "It is almost dark, and we are miles from my home. What shall we do?" And the Lord said, "Enoch, we are closer to my house than to yours. Come home with me tonight." Enoch did. He liked it so well he never came back. Slack off from what you are doing. Be quiet, and see that God is God.

Noah spent time alone with God. I wonder how long Abraham had been quiet before God when God told him to take Isaac up to the mount, and sacrifice him. Abraham was very quiet as he walked that three days' journey with Isaac to the mount of sacrifice.

Moses spent forty days in the mount with no food or water in total quietness with the Lord, before he received the Ten Commandments. After he broke the stone tablets because of the people's sins, he spent another forty days without food or water in total solitude and quietness with God before he received them the second time.

This is the way it was with all the great heroes of the Bible. Elijah disappeared for three and one half years at one time. John the Baptist spent most all of his time in the solitary desert with God until he was ready to thunder forth God's message. When he was not preaching, he was alone in the desert being quiet with the Lord.

Jesus often sent the crowds away, and went into the mountains or desert to get alone with the Father. Sometimes He prayed lifting up His voice to God, but other times He was quiet and listening. He cultivated an obedient heart. He received pictures, dreams, and visions from the Father. As His Father spoke to Him in His spirit, His mind recalled Scriptures he had read over the years. The Holy Spirit revealed to Him what those verses meant for Him.

This is why it is so important to write the Scriptures in your mind by regular reading and studying. When you have the Scriptures readily available in your mind, the Holy Spirit can tell you what they mean for you. If you do not know the Scriptures, the Holy Spirit is hindered in talking with you.

4. HOW TO DEVELOP THE MIND OF CHRIST

(1) You must come to a deliberate decision: I will not allow my mind to be exposed to and dominated by the nega-

tive, filthy, unbelieving, poverty thinking of the newspapers, magazines, radio, television, and worldly people. You must also reject the philosophy of many Christians, missionaries, gossiping church members, and even some of your close friends.

A business man said, "If you wish to develop your good mind, and become expert in your field, do not attend coffee pot seminars." I did not know what he meant by "coffee pot seminars." He meant the idle talk that takes place in the company lounge, where people drink coffee and engage in gossip, criticism, and complaining. If you have to stay away from coffee pot seminars to be an expert in business, how much more is it necessary to be a good Christian. Stop allowing the world to give you their thinking patterns. The first thing you must do is reject all negative, doomsday thinking for genuine believers. Doomsday is imminent for the unbeliever at all times, but never for the faithful believer. [Read 1 Thes. 5:4-11.]

It is wrong to hold doomsday fears over the heads of faithful believers, telling them in your sermons that they may starve before they get out of this miserable world. Nowhere do you find such teaching in the Bible. The Bible does not contradict itself. God does not promise one place in the Bible that the righteous will never beg bread [Psa. 37:25], and in some other verse warn us that we should be prepared to starve to death. No. It is preachers who have allowed the negative, poverty thinking of the world to blind their eyes to the truth of Holy Scripture. I leave it at that. You prove it to yourself!

(2) Write down some definite goals you wish to achieve, based squarely on the Bible.

Write down what you want to do for God in your life, in your family, and in your church. Write down the amounts of money you think you will need to do those things. Write down when you expect to receive the money and do those things. Write down what you intend to do to cooperate with God to get it done. Trust God, and start putting God's plan into action.

Writing them does several good things. Writing them makes you check yourself in prayer and meditation that what you have written is what God wants you to do. You should not write any goal that you do not believe God wants you to do. Pray over them. Be absolutely sure that God has told you to do these things.

Writing them also engraves them on your mind. As you mark on paper, or type on a typewriter or computer, the movement of the hands form pictures for the mind. Those pictures are recorded in your inner being much more strongly when you write them with your hand, and read them with your eyes, and speak them with your voice.

(3) Find verses in the Bible that promise you what you have asked, and verses that inspire you toward your goals.

Bible verses are God's holy fuel to impel you up that road to reach your goal.

Train your mind to calculate or compute with God's Word. Your logical mind must be convinced by the Word of God that you have the right to expect to reach your goals. You must continue to get God's picture and God's reasoning poured into you until your logical mind sees it as right.

Your logical mind can only compute with what you furnish it, and allow God to furnish it. You must furnish your mind with God's thoughts in abundance for your mind to begin to think as God thinks. Once you are convinced by God's pictures and reasonings that it is right, your inner being will begin to work with God to bring it to fulfillment.

(4) Take your project, or goals, or problem, and your Scripture verses, go to a totally quiet place, and get alone with God.

Read your Scripture verses aloud. Read your goals aloud. Use the words and thoughts in the verses to ask God to help you accomplish your goals for Him.

Close your eyes, and go over them again. State in faith that God loves you, and that He has promised to make you a good and successful pastor. Declare in faith that at the right time and place you will see the answer manifested in your life. You will know what to do. Then affirm that through the righteousness of Christ you now possess all those goals. Declare that what you need will be in your hand exactly when you need it.

Then shift your projects and desires over to God. Wait quietly before God. Do not become impatient. Just sit there, or lie there before the Lord, and love God. Just

feel the love of God. Feel how precious God is to you, and how precious you are to God. Stay there until you are satisfied that you have stayed long enough. You will discover to your amazement, that at the right time and place you will know in your heart what to do. The Holy Spirit will tell you. If you will act upon His leadership in faith, He will never fail you. This is the way Jesus did it. Jesus was never in need. He always had what He needed when He needed it, even if He had to send someone to take it out of a fish's mouth [Matthew 17:27]. God calls you to receive the mind of Christ.

Chapter 14

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR FAITH SEEMS WEAK

OUTLINE

Mat 8:26

Introduction

All believers feel weak at times.

What you think, what you say, and what you do are the keys to everything at all times.

1. What to think and what to say.

- (1) My faith is always tested**
- (2) All of God's children experience weakness.**
- (3) Jesus has permanently conquered the devil.**
- (4) Jesus' victory has been transferred to me.**
- (5) My faith only feels weak.**

2. What to do

- (1) Fall back on your salvation experience.**
 - a. Think now the same way you thought when you were saved.**
 - b. Fall back on the salvation you received when you received Christ.**

You were saved, healed and made victorious when Jesus died and rose.
All the riches of Christ came within you when you were saved.
 - c. Fall back on your salvation that is eternal.**

(2) Read your Bible and pray.

(3) Be with people who have learned to exercise faith.

(4) Stay faithful in church hearing God's message.

Conclusion: Review and repeat.

Matt 8:26

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm. (KJV)

Matthew 8:26 HB

And he says to them, Why are you cowardly, little faith? Then rising up, he restrained the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

Introduction

All believers of all ages experience times when they feel their faith is weak. You are not alone in your feeling. The greatest believers of all times have experienced it. I experience this feeling. You never become so strong in the Lord but that this feeling of weakness attacks you.

In this message I will give you some simple Bible truths. If you will practice these things you will always be able to overcome this feeling of weak faith.

WHAT TO THINK!

WHAT TO SAY!

WHAT TO DO!

What you think, what you say, and what you do are the keys to everything. If you can keep your thinking correct, your words correct, and your actions correct, you can overcome all problems.

Remember the keys to victory in everything are: What you think, what you say, and what you do. The way you think, the way you talk, and the way you act determines everything. So your goal will be: to maintain right thoughts, right words, and right actions regardless of how you feel.

1. WHAT TO THINK AND WHAT TO SAY!

Your mind is a most powerful force. God made it powerful so you could use it for His glory. When sin entered the human race we lost control over our minds. But when we were born from above the Lord Jesus restored to us control over our minds. He gave us His Word, the Bible, with which to program our minds. And He gave us the Holy Spirit as the power to use in programming our minds. By using the Bible, and trusting the power of the Holy Spirit you have the authority and the power to run your mind. You can control your mind. God made you free. He gave you the power of choice. In Christ we have our complete freedom restored.

You must learn how to control what you think. **Because as he keeps the gate of his heart, so is he** [Proverbs 23:7].

**Here are five things to think and say when your faith seems weak:
(1) My faith is always tested.**

It is normal for your faith to be tested. You cannot do anything without your faith being tested. You cannot get out of bed in the morning without your faith being tested. That is part of being free. That is part of the nature of things when you have free choice. You can choose to, or choose not to. Any time you have to make a choice, your faith is tested.

I am giving you: What to think, What to say, and What to do; and Scripture verses with each point. List these Scripture references in the front of your Bible; turn to the reference and mark it; then begin to memorize these verses. When your faith seems weak you will always know what to do.

Here are Scriptures on the fact that our faith is always tested.

Ps 34:19

19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD delivereth him out of them all. (KJV)

Psalm 34:19 HB

Many evils *attack* the righteous, and Jehovah snatches him out of them all.

The word evils is the same word translated evil in, **the tree of knowledge of good and evil**. Many are the attacks of evil on the righteous, but the Lord delivers him out of them all. [You do remember that you are righteous. Your practice of righteousness, your daily obedience, varies, and affects how God responds to you at any given moment, just as it does between a parent and a child. In order to bring your practice up

to its highest level, you must constantly view your position as absolutely and unalterably righteous. You must see yourself as righteous in Christ to encourage your heart. Do not allow any failure of any kind to alter your consciousness of your position in Christ. When your practice does not measure up, ask God to forgive you, make correction in your action, and consider that it no longer exists. By being encouraged and sure in your position, and forgiven in your practice, it is easier to practice righteous obedience to His every command. So, Psalm 34:19 states plainly that the saved person is constantly attacked by evil, but the Lord delivers him or her out of all those attacks.

John 16:33

These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. (KJV)

John 16:33 HB

These things I have spoken to you, that in me you may have peace. In the world you have tribulation, but have courage; I have conquered the world.

The word “tribulation” is the word “pressure.” Jesus states that it is inevitable that you have pressure on your life. But He has given you the strength to resist and overcome all pressures of life. God said in Psalm 34:19 that you will be attacked by evil. Jesus said in John 16:33 that you will have pressures. Every day of your life your faith is being tested. Since God has made you free in Christ, you have to make choices. Freedom of choice necessitates that you face the choice of evil and overcome it. When you face choices, the pressure is on. Your faith is being tested. This is the way life is. It is also the only way you are going to grow and become strong.

***Believe that in every pressure
there is the seed of a great blessing.***

Look at a third Scripture. One of my very best favorites:

1 Pet 1:7

That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ: (KJV)

1 Peter 1:7 HB

That the testing of your faith, *being* more precious than gold that perishes, and having been tested through fire, may be found to praise, and honor, and glory in the revelation of Jesus Christ....

168 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Make a special note that the testing of your faith is building a faith into your life that is more precious than gold. You will receive much reward on this earth, but the full reward will not be until the Second Coming of Christ. Your greatest reward on that day will be a full, mature, powerful faith with which to enjoy God, His saints, and His riches forever.

Review:

What to think, and What to say:

I am attacked by evil constantly, but the Lord delivers me from every attack. Every day I am under great pressure, but in Christ I have overcome all the pressures. All these attacks and pressures are testings that are building in me a faith that will be glorious, both now and when the Lord Jesus comes again. Oh! Praise the Lord for the testing of my faith!

(2) All of God's children experience weakness.

The Bible is filled with stories and verses that show how all of God's children have experienced times of weakness. As far as I am concerned the classic Scripture is

2 Cor 12:9

And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. (KJV)

2 Corinthians 12:9 HB

And he spoke to me, My grace possesses sufficiency for you, because my power is perfected in weakness. Most gladly therefore I will rather boast in my weaknesses, that the power of Christ may be tabernacled upon me.

This verse is in the passage on Paul's thorn in the flesh. Many commentators have concluded that Paul had an eye disease, and was constantly sick. **This is not true. St. Paul was not sick.** He was attacked by demons from his past, constantly trying to make him feel guilty and despairing over his past killing of Christians. These demons constantly whispered into his ears such phrases as, "Who do you think you are, telling people how to be righteous when you have done what you did."

He was constantly attacked by fellow Jews who previously worked with him in persecuting Christians, who now mocked him for being converted. There is nothing that makes you feel weak like bringing up your past, and especially if you are also being attacked physically in such a way as to endanger your life.

Your past financial failures pressure you that you cannot make money now. One of the devil's main tactics is try to embarrass you over your past. Or, create a situation in the present that will embarrass you now. This takes strength out of a person like nothing else. When you have made a mistake, little or big that appears to have the potential to greatly embarrass you, fear sets in, and you feel weak right down to your bone marrow. This is especially true in money matters. If it develops to the point that your fears are realized, and you are literally embarrassed in front of the whole world, weakness overwhelms you. This has happened to every believer that has ever lived.

One of the devil's big lies is, "You are the only one who has failed like you have. Everyone else has faith, but not you. You are the only one who has acted this stupid. Everyone else is better off than you are. You are the weakest one that has ever been. No one has ever done the stupid things you have done."

The devil keeps up these accusations until he has you completely isolated. You become too embarrassed to face anyone. At this point only a miracle of God can save you from the lies of the devil. But, friend, God has plenty of miracles. If you have gone this far, look up. You are God's child. He has to perform a miracle for you. He promised He would never leave you nor forsake you. You are not the only one this has happened to. All other believers have experienced the same things. We all have heard the same lies of the devil. You are not alone.

I could tell you about Abraham lying about his wife, twice, because his faith seemed weak. Isaac did the same thing. Jacob had many embarrassing things to happen to him through no fault of his own. I could go on through the whole Bible, but just let me tell you about a man God made the most prominent in the entire Old Covenant, David. At the height of his career he committed adultery, and tried to hide it with murder. Then it became known to the whole world. Then Absalom, his son, rebelled and temporarily took over the kingdom in front of everyone. David left Jerusalem embarrassed, barefoot, with his head covered in shame, publicly weeping, and punishing himself with his own words. David became so weak that he literally gave up, and was ready to die in shame. But Joab, as a friend, rebuked him, saying [this is my paraphrase of what the Bible says Joab said to David], "You are shaming yourself, and us. Stop feeling sorry for yourself, and start acting like a man with faith. Put the past behind you, take over the kingdom again, and start acting like you are supposed to act. Stop this stupid grieving over something that is over and done. Pick up your courage and faith, and start living from now!" Joab's words brought David to his senses, and he recovered. Here is the man after God's own heart, who sinned the worst of anyone we know, publicly embarrassed like no other man, yet recovered, and remained a special servant of God. If that happened to David, nothing that has happened to you, or could ever happen to you, is any worse than that. This story is found in 2 Samuel,

170 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

chapters 11-19.

Take courage. All of God's children experience weakness. Let me explain what Paul meant by his words in 2 Cor. 12:9-10. Paul was praying for the Lord to defeat the devil for him. God's answer was, My grace possesses sufficiency for you. What I did on the cross has defeated the devil. Stop asking Me to do something I have already done. My grace is sufficient. Whatever your weakness is I have it covered. I make up your lack. My strength perfects, or completes, your lack in every area of your weakness."

Then Paul says in

2 Cor 12:10

Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong. (KJV)

2 Cor 12:10 HB

Consequently, I think it good *to be* in weaknesses, in overbearing hurts, in necessities, in persecutions, in narrow places for the sake of Christ, because when I am weak, then I am powerful.

He does not mean he enjoys being weak, or defeated, or such like as many have interpreted it to mean. What he means is, "I take pleasure in the strength of God in spite of feeling weak, being reproached, finding myself up against needs I do not know how to meet, etc." Paul rejoiced in the midst of every attack of Satan, because he had discovered how to win. He paid no attention to his feelings of weakness. He rejoiced that he now knows how to go ahead and win.

You need to think and say: My faith is tested every day. All of God's children experience testing. The next thing you need to think and say is:

(3) Jesus has permanently conquered the devil.

You need to learn at least four verses on this point.

Luke 10:18-19

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. (KJV)

Luke 10:18-19, HB

18 And he said to them, I saw Satan fall as lightning out of heaven.

19 Behold, I have given to you the authority to trample on snakes and scorpions, and over all the power of the one hating you, and absolutely not one thing will by

any means do unrighteously to you.

Heb 2:14-15

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. (KJV)

Hebrews 2:14-15 HB

14 **Since, therefore, the children are sharers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise had the same with *them*, that through death he might render inoperative the one having the might of death, that is, the devil,**

15 **And release them who through fear of death were liable to bondage through all *their* life.**

In Luke 10 the Lord had sent out the Seventy to witness, and they had returned victorious. In relation to their successful witnessing Jesus foresaw His defeat of Satan in the up-coming cross and resurrection. By faith in God that He would successfully complete man's redemption, Jesus promised to the disciples and to us that He has given to us total authority over Satan. Satan has no power to do unrighteously to us. Hebrews 2:14 declares that the devil has been made inoperative. The Greek word means unable to function. After Jesus' victory the devil is still the devil. He did not go out of existence. So, the devil was not destroyed in the sense of going out of existence. His power was made ineffective. The word in the Greek literally means, "**unemployed, disconnected, inoperative.**" Memorize those three words.

Constantly confess: "The devil is unemployed, disconnected, and inoperative as far as my life is concerned." When your faith seems weak, this is the thinking and words you must set in motion: "My faith is always tested. My faith would not be worth anything if it were not tested. For it to become strong it must be constantly exercised and tested. All of God's children experience weakness. It happened to all the believers in the Bible, even the greatest of them. It is happening to all believers right now. I am not the only one. That is a lie of the devil. It is normal to feel these attacks, but it is also normal to resist them and win. The devil has been permanently defeated by the Lord Jesus." That brings us to the next point.

(4) Jesus' victory has been transferred to me.

This is where we exercise faith. It is by faith that Jesus' victory is transferred to us. The most wonderful thing in the world is that what Jesus has done is transferred to us for no other reason than that we simply believe Him. Without works. Without our

172 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

deserving it. Without any merit on our part. We only believe, and His faith, righteousness, and victory are transferred to us totally and without reservation. Under this point we want to memorize **Hebrews 12:2**,

Gazing into Jesus the Chief Leader and Perfecter of faith....

Jesus lived an absolutely perfect faith. That perfect faith was His to do with as He pleased. He chose to give us His perfect faith, so that all His righteousness could be transferred to us. It is by His faith, transferred to us, then operating in us, that all God's blessings come to us.

Gal 2:16, 20

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

...

20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. (KJV)

Memorize Galatians 2;16, 20 HB

16 Having seen that a man is absolutely not justified out of law works, but through Jesus Christ's faith, we also have believed into Jesus Christ, so that we may be justified out of Christ's faith, and absolutely not out of law works, because out of law works absolutely no flesh will be justified.

20 I am crucified with Christ, and I live; absolutely no longer I, but Christ lives in me, and the *life* I now live in *the* flesh, I live in the faith of the Son of God, the one loving me, and giving himself over for me.

For years I read right over those phrases, "the faith of Jesus Christ," as though it was referring to my faith in Christ. What these verses say is that we are justified by His faith, the faith belonging to Jesus Christ, the perfect faith He exercised when He was on earth. It was by Jesus' perfect faith in and obedience to the Father that He permanently defeated the devil. He now says to all, **"If you will believe me, my victory over the devil is transferred to you, and becomes yours as though you did it personally. But you have to believe me. You cannot even do that on your own. So I have furnished to you a perfect faith. Here. I give you my faith. Now believe me with that faith, and you are righteous and victorious over the devil as though you did it yourself. You now live by my faith."**

Praise the Lord that His victory over the devil has been transferred to me. It is mine, as perfectly as though I did it myself. Oh! How marvelous is His grace! This is what

you have to think and say when your faith seems weak. That brings us to the next point.

(5) My faith only feels weak.

Everyone knows that feelings can be deceiving. I suppose all kids have played a game we called "airplane." We blindfolded a volunteer. Then we had two strong fellows to hold a twelve inch wide plank at each end. They lifted it about six inches off the ground, and then instructed the blindfolded person to step up on it. The blindfolded person was to keep his balance by keeping one hand on the head of the person on his right, and the other on the head of the person on his left. Then they proceeded to raise and lower him as though he was flying. As they proceeded they bent down to pull themselves lower and lower, making him have to reach down to touch their heads, to give the feeling of being very high in the air, when actually he was only a few inches off the ground. Then they stopped when the feeling was that he was the highest, and he was told to jump to the ground. When he refused, they pushed him off the board. Of course, he thought he was going to nearly kill himself, when actually he fell to the ground only about six inches. It "felt" extremely dangerous, but the person was so close to the ground he could not possibly be hurt.

Our faith and our "feeling" of faith are often two different things. Since we have Jesus' faith operating in us, there is no way we can have weak faith. Since we have His faith, saying that our faith is weak, is like saying Jesus is weak. We know that is not true. So, instead of thinking that our faith is weak, we should recognize that our faith only "feels" weak. You may be weak in taking hold of it and operating it, but your faith is not weak. You must also remember that any time you need to exercise faith, He will also furnish the strength to use His faith if you will simply put forth whatever effort you can. As sincerely as you know how, make the motion. He will see to it that your feeble motion will cause a powerful move!

This is what you must think and say: **"My faith is always tested - for my good. All of God's children experience weakness. Jesus has permanently defeated the devil. His victory has been transferred to me by faith. His faith has now become my faith. Since it is His faith in me, my faith only 'feels' weak. My faith is actually strong. Praise the Lord!"**

2. WHAT TO DO.

(1) The first thing you need to do is fall back on your salvation experience.

174 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Luke 10:20

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven. (KJV)

Luke 10:20 HB

Yet in this do not be rejoicing that the spirits are arranged under you, but rejoice rather because your names are written in heaven.

Even in victory you are to fall back on your salvation experience. You are to realize that the foundation of everything in your life is your salvation experience. The foundation of everything in your life is the fact that God wrote your name in heaven.

Jesus commanded us not to rejoice that the demons are subject unto us, but to rejoice because our names are written in heaven. What He means is, make the basis of your rejoicing your salvation in Christ. So, when I say, “Fall back on your salvation experience,” here is what I mean:

a. Think now the same way you thought when you were saved.

How did you think when you were saved? You knew that God did not owe you anything. You knew you did not deserve salvation. You knew you could not save yourself. You knew that in yourself you were helpless. You trusted His mercy. You believed He would save you out of His grace. You trusted Him because Jesus was your substitute on the cross. You knew you did not deserve it, but you were glad to receive it.

It is the same today. You do not deserve anything today. Regardless of how faithful you have been, you still do not deserve anything. When you have done all you can do, you are still an unprofitable servant.

You receive victory today just as you did when you got saved. You know you do not deserve the answer to your prayers, but you know God has provided you His grace. You know you cannot bring the victory yourself. You are helpless without God, but God is willing to give you all the strength you need. You gladly receive the victory by His grace. You receive the victory today by the merit of Jesus Christ, just as you received His salvation when you got saved. You acknowledge that in yourself you are weak and have nothing to offer, but that through Christ you are righteous, and can do all things because He strengthens you [Philippians 4:13].

So, when you feel weak, fall back on your salvation experience. Go back and

think the way you thought when you were saved. When I say, "Fall back on your salvation experience, I mean,

b. Fall back on the salvation you received when you took Christ.

When God gave you Christ, He gave you all He had to give you. There is nothing more. All the treasures of God are hid in Christ. When you took Christ, you took all the victories you will ever need. All of them are in Christ. The victorious Christian life is simply day by day discovering all that you already have in Christ. Regardless of how weak you feel, you already possess the victory in Christ. It is yours, in Christ, inside of you, now!

Realize two important truths on this point:

One, you were saved, healed, and forever made victorious when Jesus died and rose again. You were there in Him on the cross, and in the resurrection. By His stripes we were healed - at Calvary [1 Peter 2:24].

Two, all the treasures of Christ came within you when you took Him as your Lord and Savior, in your salvation experience.

The baptism or the infilling of the Holy Spirit is to empower you to use these treasures you possess in Christ. So, fall back on your salvation experience. Fall back on all the treasures of victory you received when you received Christ.

c. Also, I mean, fall back on your salvation which is eternal.

Rejoice that your name is written in heaven. Your name is written eternally in heaven. Nothing can take you out of His hand. The treasures you have in Christ are eternal. You have eternal life. Eternal life can never fade away. Eternal life can never be lost. You may feel weak, but it is a feeling that is lying to you. You are eternally strong in the Lord. The devil cannot ever take that eternal victory from you. Fall back on that eternal salvation you have in Christ. Do not feel weak. Rejoice because your

176 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

name is written in heaven. You can experience the deliverance you need today, because His salvation abides forever. It is the same salvation that saves your finances, that saves your health, and everything in your life.

(2) Read your Bible and pray.

That statement is so simple, and yet nothing in the world is more important. Matthew 4:4, **Man shall absolutely not live by bread alone, but on every spoken word that goes out through the mouth of God.** Ephesians 6:18a, **Praying through all prayer, and petition, in all times, in *the Spirit*....**

Even the most experienced of us will try to do something, before we remember that we should pray about this. We must always remember to pray to God about every need.

Reading the Bible is like eating. You get weak if you do not eat. That is the reason that many people are weak. They do not pray, and eat the Word of God regularly. When you feel weak, stop. Read some of these verses, or quote them from memory. Then send up a prayer for help. Spend a few moments praising the Lord. **and do not toil with pain, because rejoicing in Jehovah *is* your fortress** (Nehemiah 8:10b).

(3) Make arrangements to be with people who have learned how to exercise faith.

Rom 1:11-12

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established;

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith (KJV)

Romans 1:11-12 HB

11 Because I crave to see you, that I may share with you some spiritual gift, for you to be steadfastly set,

12 And that is, to be comforted together with you through the mutual faith both of you and me.

He says in 1 Thessalonians 5:11,

Therefore comfort one another, and *each* one build up the *other* one, even as also you do

Being with others, especially those strong in faith, strengthens us. We soon

forget our self pity, and we are strong again.

God keeps a record when we encourage one another.

Mal 3:16

16 Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name. (KJV)

Malachi 3:16 HB

Then they who feared Jehovah spoke one man to his companion; and Jehovah pricked up his ears, and attentively heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before his face for them who feared Jehovah, and who calculated upon his name.

When you encourage someone, or someone encourages you, God records it in heaven in His Book of Remembrance. How blessed! Make arrangements to be with those who know how to exercise faith to encourage you.

(4) Stay faithful in church attendance.

Everyone should memorize Hebrews 10:23-25.

Heb 10:23-25

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithful that promised;)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. (KJV)

Heb 10:23-25

23 Let us hold firm the confession of the faith, not leaning, because he is faithful having promised,

24 And let us fully exercise our minds to sharpen one another to love and beautiful good works,

25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the habit of some, but comforting, and so much the more, as you see the day drawing near,

You show that you are faithful by attending church services. If you are careless in your church attendance, you are wavering in your faith. When you are not regular

178 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

in church, you have a guilty conscience. You know you are not doing right. When you have a guilty conscience, you cannot exercise faith. You cannot expect God to take care of your house, if you do not take care of His house. I am speaking of the church body, not necessarily of the building, although we should help take care of the church building.

When you are in church, you are being fed the Word of God. This strengthens your faith. Singing and praising God together strengthens you. The preaching of the Word strengthens you. The bringing of your tithes and offerings strengthens you. One of the main tactics of the devil is to isolate you so he can ruin you. The longer you are alone, the worse the weakness gets. The longer you are alone, the harder it is to face people again. The more the devil has you by yourself, the more he can pump into you the feeling of embarrassment, guilt, fear, rejection, and despair. When you begin to feel weak, let nothing stop you from attending church. That is the one place the devil does not want you to be. If he can keep you away from church, he can keep you weak and defeated. If you go to church, you are always stronger, and more able to exercise faith. Stay in church.

CONCLUSION: What to think; What to say; What to do: My faith is always tested, because free choice always brings testing. All of God's children experience weakness. I am not the only one. The devil tries to make me feel that I am the only one, but I know it is a lie. Jesus has permanently defeated the devil. He has transferred His victory to me. My faith only feels weak. I have Jesus' faith. His faith cannot be weak. I always fall back on my salvation experience. I read my Bible and pray. I make arrangements to be with others who have learned how to exercise faith. I stay faithful in church. By thinking this way, saying these words, and doing these things, I become strong again. I always win. Praise the Lord!

Chapter 15

THE MAN IN CHARGE

OUTLINE

Introduction: Jesus is the Man in charge

Understanding John 16:13-15.

- (1) The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit serve in different positions.
- (2) The Man Jesus is the one who administers all things on earth for us.
- (3) The Holy Spirit announces to us the things of Christ as Jesus instructs

Him.

1. The Big Lie

2. The Big Man – Jesus.

- (1) Jesus has reclaimed rulership of the earth.
- (2) Through Him we now rule in our domain.

3. The Big You

You are the one Jesus has placed in charge to rule for Him.

- (1) Jesus has placed you in charge to rule for Him.
- (2) Jesus is the authority on human life.

Conclusion

Review and repeat the principles on John 16:13-15, and the Big Lie, The Big Man, Jesus, and the Big You under the Lord Jesus Christ.

Introduction

John 16:13-15

13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you. (KJV)

John 16:13-15 HB

13 But when he comes, the Spirit of truth, he will guide you into all truth, because he will absolutely not speak from himself, but whatever he hears he will

speak, and he will announce to you the things to come.

14 He will glorify me, because he will take out of mine, and will announce it to you.

15 All things which the Father has are mine; because of this I said, that he will take out of mine, and will announce it to you.

The Holy Spirit will guide you into all truth. He does not speak from Himself. He only tells us what He hears. He tells us what He is commanded to tell us. He gives us what belongs to someone else - that Someone is Jesus.

The Man In Charge Is Jesus.

All things that the Father has are mine. When Jesus rose from the dead He said, All authority was given to me in heaven and upon earth.

Understanding John 16:13-15

(1) The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit serve in different positions to dispense to us His riches.

This Scripture describes the entire arrangement God has made to share with us all His riches. The more you understand this passage the more you can receive and use God's riches.

God has made an administrative arrangement within the Trinity by which He dispenses His riches to us. The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are all equally God.

They are three Persons, yet they are One God. Although all three Persons in the God are equally God, they have agreed to serve man by serving in certain positions. The Father is the Giver of all things. The Son is the Gift, and the One by whom all God's riches come to us. He voluntarily submits to the Father in all things. The Holy Spirit is the One Who causes us to experience the Giver, the Gift, and all the riches that are in Christ Jesus. The Holy Spirit submits to both the Father and the Son. This is a mystery. No one understands these things, but they are clearly taught in the Word of God.

(2) The Man, Christ Jesus, Is the One who administers all things Upon earth.

God has given earth to man. Psalm 115:16,

So, remember. The earth has been given to man. Therefore, it is a holy principle with God that man rules the earth. Also, therefore, for God to redeem and rule the earth, and remain true to His holy principles, He must redeem and rule the earth through a man. That is why the Father sent the Son to become a Man, so that God through the Man, Christ Jesus, could take over the earth for the benefit of man, and remain true to His own holy laws.

Christ means “the God-anointed Man, or the Holy Spirit-anointed Man.” The God-anointed Man, Christ Jesus, lived a perfect life, and gave His life as the sacrifice in our place on the cross. God the Father raised Him from the dead, and exalted Him to His own right hand as the new Human Ruler of earth. Jesus Christ is the Man in Charge of earth.

(3) The Holy Spirit gives to us the things of Christ only when and how the Lord Jesus instructs Him to give to us.

Our experience of the riches of Christ takes place gradually over our lifetime as the Lord Jesus sees we are ready for them, and instructs the Holy Spirit to cause us to experience them.

Now let us look at specific phrases in the text.

John 16:13 **But when he comes, the Spirit of truth, he will guide you into all truth, because he will absolutely not speak from himself, but whatever he hears he will speak, and he will announce to you the things to come.**

14 **He will glorify me, because he will take out of mine, and will announce it to you.**

15 **All things which the Father has are mine; because of this I said that, He will take out of mine, and will announce it to you.**

Jesus promised in verse 13 that the Holy Spirit will guide us into all truth. The Holy Spirit is our Guide to receive the things of Christ. The next thing Jesus said about the Holy Spirit is, **He shall not speak from himself.** The Greek preposition here means, The Holy Spirit shall not speak from Himself as the source of the information, nor the authority for the information. The next phrase further explains this. **Whatever he hears he will speak, and he will announce to you the things to come.**

In other words, the Holy Spirit is only repeating what someone else tells Him to

182 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

say. The Holy Spirit will hear what needs to be said from someone else, and will pass it on to us as He is directed to speak.

That Someone telling Him what to say is the Man, Christ Jesus. God rules the earth through man, and the only man qualified to rule the earth is Jesus, the God-anointed Man. He lived through the entirety of human life. He lived perfectly the will of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. He knows human life from beginning to end. He was in all points tempted as we are, yet without sin [Heb. 4:15]. He feels all our trials and weaknesses because He went through life exactly as we are going through it now. He is the human authority on human life. He knows what we need when we need it. So, He tells the Holy Spirit what to tell us, and when. He supervises our growth and progress, and tells the Holy Spirit exactly what we need at the exact moment we need it.

Jesus said, He will show you things to come, meaning, He will show us things the Lord Jesus is ready to make come to pass in our lives; things to come now, or in the future, into our lives that Christ wants for us.

Verse 14:

He will glorify me, because he will take out of mine, and will announce it to you.

The Holy Spirit will glorify Christ by bringing Christ's victory into our lives. As He takes the things of Christ, and announces them to you and me, and we receive them, the world sees the victorious life a human can live when the riches of Christ are transferred to us.

Verse 15 says that all the eternal riches of God the Father have been given to the God-anointed Man, Jesus Christ. Since the Man, Jesus, now has all the riches of God the Father at His disposal, He has given them to us - if we will take them by faith.

Here is another extremely important truth in this passage. Jesus said, The Holy Spirit will take the things of mine, and will announce them to you. The word announce (shown in KJV) in the Greek is the word *evangelium*, which is our word gospel, and the word evangelism. It means, to announce good news.

The Holy Spirit can only announce to you the things of Christ. He will not force you to receive them. Just like the gospel is announced to the lost man, it is up to him to receive it, or not receive it.

Now, this is the picture. The Lord Jesus is the God-anointed Man in charge. The Holy Spirit is under His direction. The Holy Spirit speaks to you only as the Lord Jesus

tells Him to speak to you. When the Holy Spirit speaks to you, He acts in the capacity of the Announcer. He announces to you the things Christ tells Him to announce to you. It is up to you whether or not you receive His announcements, and act in faith to take the riches Christ is now offering to you.

This is the explanation of John 16:13-15, which will now cause you to understand the following message.

THE MAN IN CHARGE.

I want to show you three things:

- [1] **The Big Lie**
- [2] **The Big Man**
- [3] **The Big You.**

1. THE BIG LIE

I ask you this question. Does the devil give unbelievers business abilities, success, wealth, fame, and position in this world? Many Christians believe that he does. The reason I call it The Big Lie is because even I, at one time, believed it.

In Luke 4:5-6, Satan claimed to own all the kingdoms of the world, and claimed to be able to give them to whomever he chooses. I used to say that he must have told the truth, because Jesus did not contradict him. How wrong I was. Jesus and the Word of God contradict him many places.

In John 8:44 Jesus says plainly that the devil is a liar, and that there is no truth in him. No truth in him. We should have believed Jesus instead of the devil.

The Word of God in Daniel contradicts the devil word for word.

Dan 4:17

17 This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will, and setteth up over it the basest of men. (KJV)

Daniel 4:17 HB

The judicial sentence is by the decree of the watchers, and the judicial demand is by the saying of the holy ones, to the intent that the living may know by seeing that the Most High is powerful in the kingdom of mortal men, and he gives it to whomever he pleases, and he raises up over it the lowliest of mortal men.

See Daniel 4:25, 32, and 5:32. Note that God rules the earth through men.

Jesus taught plainly in Matthew 5:44-45 that God sends His sunshine and His rain alike upon the saved and the lost. Whatever wealth, success, fame, or fortune that anyone has, God gave it to them, whether they are lost or saved. They are blessed or cursed with that wealth, depending on what they do with what God gave them.

God runs the world. He operates it by the principles He has set up. Those people who go for rulership in any area of life, get it if they put into effect the laws of investment and return which God built into life, whether they are lost or saved. A person can succeed in the material realm of this world, and totally fail spiritually, and miss eternal life. But we who have eternal life, are to strive for success both now and in eternity.

Many Christians have been deceived into believing that the devil is in charge. The devil is not in charge. It is a big lie! God is in charge. He gives to people according to His own laws. Learn those laws in His Word. Obey those laws. God will bless you.

Now look at:

2. THE BIG MAN -JESUS

THE LORD JESUS IS THE MAN IN CHARGE.

We have seen that the devil is not the one in charge. Let us now look at Jesus and our lives more realistically.

God's original purpose was for man to rule in the wisdom and power of the Holy Spirit. Adam failed. God sent another Man, Jesus. Jesus was a Holy Spirit-directed, and Holy Spirit-empowered Man.

John 16:7-16 says two things:

(1) That a Man in flesh, directed and empowered by the Holy Spirit, has reclaimed rulership upon earth.

(2) That through Him we now can rule, directed and empowered by the Holy Spirit.

PICTURES FROM THE LIFE OF CHRIST

I want you to look into eternity with me. Look into heaven itself. See the Son of God in heaven before He came to earth. Watch Him step down from His throne. He is taking off His robe of glory. Now He is clothed in a linen shirt and pants. Now He steps out of heaven and moves toward earth. As He comes down, He reaches up and releases from His mind all His knowledge and memory. Soon He knows nothing, and has no memories.

Watch Him as He gets closer to earth. He becomes smaller and smaller, until He is simply a wisp of Spirit as He enters the body of the Virgin Mary. The Holy Spirit unites Him with the egg in her womb.

Watch Him take on shape after a few weeks. His human head begins to form. Soon He has ten little fingers and toes. All His body parts get bigger and bigger. He has no knowledge and no consciousness. The love of His mother is unconsciously affecting His development. See Him born, and laid in a manger. Then for another one and one-half to two years He has no consciousness of any memories.

At two and three, four, and five He hears for the first time the stories of creation, Adam and Eve, Noah and the flood, the Tower of Babel, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, and baby Moses in the basket on the water, and David, and Solomon and all the rest. You see Him growing in spirit, soul, and body, and going to the temple at age twelve. As a teenager He became more and more powerful in spirit.

At His baptism you see the Spirit of God descending upon Him in fullness. You see the Spirit drive Him into the desert to fast and be tempted of the devil. Watch Him as He uses words of Spirit and power to conquer the devil. See Him as He returns under the direction and power of the Holy Spirit. In the Synagogue at Nazareth He stands up and reads Isaiah 61:1 **The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me**

For three and one-half years, under the direction and power of the Holy Spirit, He preached the gospel, taught His disciples, healed the sick, saved the lost, threw out demons, controlled the elements of nature, fed the multitudes, raised the dead, died on the cross in our place, and God raised Him from the dead. God exalted the Man Jesus to His right hand far above all other powers. In the resurrection and exaltation to the

right hand of the Father He became the totally Holy Spirit-directed and empowered human being, with all authority upon earth and in heaven, so He could pour out the Holy Spirit in power upon every believer.

JESUS IS THE MAN IN CHARGE!

3. THE BIG YOU

***YOU ARE THE ONE
JESUS HAS PLACED
IN CHARGE.***

Review and exhortation:

(1) A Man in flesh, directed and empowered by the Holy Spirit, has reclaimed rulership of the earth.

(2) Through Him we now have a Holy Spirit-directed and empowered rulership in life on earth in our flesh.

These two truths are also stated this way.

(1) Jesus is the Man in Charge, and

(2) He has placed me in charge under Him.

You must take charge of your life. Under Him, you are responsible. If things are not going right in your life, no one else is to blame. It is not God's fault. You cannot blame the devil. He is defeated. You cannot blame others. They are not in charge of your life. The only two responsible for your life are you and the Lord Jesus. If your life is not going right, it is not His fault. There is only one person left. That is YOU.

God has placed the Man, Christ Jesus, in charge over you. The Father has given the Man Jesus everything [John 16:15]. Jesus is now in charge. He has all authority upon earth and in heaven, and you are in charge under Him.

1. HE HAS PLACED YOU IN CHARGE TO RULE FOR HIM.

He wants to give you all these wonderful things. In John 16:13 note the words **all truth**. That means the truth on all areas of your life.

John 16:14, The Holy Spirit takes the things of Christ and announces them to us. The word announce is the Greek word *evangelizo*. It means to announce, to publish an event. It is the word translated gospel, good news.

The Holy Spirit is the Announcer of the things the Lord Jesus is ready to send into our lives.

(2) Jesus is The Authority on human life.

He lived the human life from beginning to the end. He lived a perfect human life. He knows exactly what you need next in your life. He knows exactly the power, the wisdom, the health, the money, and everything you need, and when you need it. He knows whether you have saturated yourself with His Word so He can answer your heart's desire.

***Remember: The Lord does not respond to your needs.
He responds to your faith.***

He knows when your faith and obedience are ready to release God's abundance to you. He has been through it. He watches you, and tells the Holy Spirit what to do. When you are properly prepared, Jesus tells the Holy Spirit what to announce next in your life. The Holy Spirit announces to you things to come. He announces to you the abundance Jesus is ready to send into your life.

Conclusion

Jesus is the Man in charge. He in turn has placed you in charge of your life under Him.

He tells the Announcer to announce the next good event to take place in your life.

If you receive it, and act upon it by faith, God's abundance appears in your life. The things of Christ come into your life.

Every believer has been placed in charge of his future. Under Christ you control your future completely. The Man in Charge has placed you in charge under Him. You are responsible. Jesus through the Holy Spirit gives you direction. He gives you wisdom, knowledge, and joy. He empowers you through His Holy Spirit to do everything necessary to bring it to pass. The Holy Spirit is announcing all these good things to you as Christ tells Him you are ready to receive them.

SPECIAL NOTE:

The truth of your being in charge of your future under the Lordship of Christ is true. But it is also true that everything about your life has been predestined by God from before the foundation of the world. Do not expect to understand this. You simply must believe these two great truths simply because the Word of God states them both plainly and emphatically. This means that you can act with great faith in what you are claiming from God because God has already predestined it in Christ. I cannot explain these truths. I can only state them and believe them.

In John 16:12 Jesus said He had many wonderful things to bring into their lives, but without the fullness of the Spirit they were not yet able to receive them. It is the same with us today. Only by the fullness or baptism of the Holy Spirit can you receive all the abundance the Lord wants to give you. You must follow the direction and the power of the Holy Spirit. He is ready at the instructions of Christ to direct you and empower you into the unlimited abundance of the Lord.

In John 16:7 note that the Holy Spirit is sent to you. He is not sent to the world. He is sent to the believer. Through you the Holy Spirit will convict or convince the world of sin, righteousness, and judgment.

Unbelievers have to be convinced that THE SIN is not having faith in Christ. In some way, they must be convinced that a righteous life is available, although they cannot physically see the only righteous Man that ever lived. In some way, they must be convinced that the devil is defeated, so they will not follow him or fear him.

HOW HAS GOD DESIGNED TO ANNOUNCE THIS TO THE WORLD?

Answer: in the life of the believer. In your life and in mine. The only place the world can see that the worst sin of all is not trusting Christ, is to see believers who by the Holy Spirit trust Christ in everything. The root of all sin is unbelief. The person who trusts Christ will not commit adultery, because he knows that God's laws on chastity and marriage are for our good. If you truly believe, you will not go against anything Christ says, because you believe Christ's way is always best.

The world needs to see believers who believe God in everything, and stop stooping to the same unbelieving tactics that the world uses. The world desperately needs to see believers who have faith. What the world sees is too many Christians who say they believe Christ, and then they stoop to the same dishonest, scheming, greedy, and envious tricks that the world uses. The world cannot see the righteous Christ when Christians do not act righteous. The only way they can be convinced that righteousness is possible, and that righteousness brings abundance is to see the righteousness of Christ and the abundance of Christ in us. Righteousness is absolutely the most powerful force in the world, but worldly people so seldom see anyone who is willing to bring it out and use its full power. There are too many Christians who know almost nothing about the power of righteousness to obtain abundance.

Our righteousness is standing on the righteousness of Christ, and standing on it until you get everything that is right for you to have for the glory of God. It is not right for you to be defeated. It is right for you to be victorious. Abundance is rightfully yours. The world cannot see that the devil is defeated, unless they see that we have defeated the devil. They cannot see that the devil's evil system is destroyed unless they see it is destroyed in our lives. They cannot see that poverty is defeated, unless they see poverty defeated in us. The world is under the illusion that evil is powerful, and God is weak. Most believers act poverty stricken. They have to see us take that step of faith, and break the illusion.

You must decide "Who is in charge?" Is the devil in charge, or is Christ in charge? Make up your mind. Who is the Man in charge? Christ was conceived and

190 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

born under the leadership and power of the Holy Spirit. He grew up increasing in the leadership and power of the Holy Spirit. At baptism He was immersed in the leadership and power of the Holy Spirit. He ministered three and one-half years under the leadership and power of the Holy Spirit. He was in total control, yet the Heavenly Father and the Holy Spirit were in total control of Him. Do not try to explain it. Only believe it!

He was in charge of His life under the Father. He was so successful in the flesh, by the Holy Spirit, that He walked off owning the world. He Is The Man In Charge. If Christ is in charge, where has He placed you? Who is in control of your life? Circumstances? Other people? Inherited weaknesses? The devil and his demons? A wicked world? Poverty? Sickness? Impossibilities? Who is in charge of your life?

I do not know who is in charge of your life, but I know who is responsible. You are! If someone else or something else is in control of your life, it is because you have relinquished the control to them.

Christ invites you to take control. He is The Man In Charge. Place your life under Him. He will put you back in charge. He will give you the Holy Spirit to direct and empower you. You can have all the abundance that is rightfully yours. You can be the man or woman in charge of your life under the Lordship of Christ!

Section Five - Receiving God's Direction

This section deals with learning to hear God's voice, and following His direction. The place to begin to train your spiritual ears to recognize God's voice is by reading the Bible. As you read the Bible you become familiar with what God's voice sounds like. As your heart becomes tuned to God's written Word, you begin to hear the Holy Spirit speak to you directly in your spirit. Your mind will receive God's thoughts from your spirit.

God will begin to talk to you just as He did to the people in the Bible. The Holy Spirit will never tell you something that contradicts what He has already written in the Bible. Therefore, the Bible becomes the instrument God uses to keep you from being deceived by an evil spirit, who poses as an angel of light, and speaks to your heart. When a thought comes to you that does not agree with the Bible, you know it came from an evil spirit, not from the Holy Spirit.

God is such a good God. He has made it possible to speak to you and guide you personally. There would never have been room to write in the Bible all the personal messages God wants to give to each believer. So, He has written in the Bible those things that everyone needs to know, and then He tells each one of us individually by His Holy Spirit what we need to know for our own personal lives. The Lord loves you, and wants to talk with you every day.

In this section you will learn how to receive God's dreams and visions for your life and your ministry. These chapters will show you how to lay hold of God's holy ambitions for your life. You will learn how to know when to move ahead on what you believe God has told you to do.

I have the following words from Dr. Paul Yonggi Cho enlarged and framed in a picture frame and hanging on the wall of my study. I want you to have them:

***“As we set our gaze upon the Holy Spirit,
He takes the brush of faith,
dips it in the ink of the Word of God,
and draws beautiful picture upon the canvas of our
hearts.***

***After He gives us a new picture to strive for,
we find a new internal motivation.
There is no obstacle that can discourage a man
who has been given a vision by the Holy Spirit.
Once God has granted you a vision,
you must spend time dreaming over that vision.”***

Dr. Cho calls this process, “Dreams and Visions.” I encourage you to receive God’s dreams and visions for your life, and fulfill them in the power of the Holy Spirit.

The principles of *logos* and *rhema* are absolutely essential if you are to walk in God’s revelation every day. You may have to read this chapter several times to understand it. The reason is that no one understands *logos* and *rhema* until they begin to actually experience the revelation process in their hearts. So, please study the chapter on *Logos* and *Rhema* very diligently. It will be very rewarding.

Chapter 16

THE IMPORTANCE OF READING THE BIBLE

OUTLINE

Exodus 24:7

1. God taught Adam to read and write.
2. Read the Bible to see God.
3. Neglect the Bible and reap calamity.
4. Read God's Word and prosper.
5. God pronounces a special blessing for those who read the Bible.
6. Many believers have died for you to have the Bible in your language.

Exod 24:7

And he took the book of the covenant, and read in the audience of the people: and they said, All that the LORD hath said will we do, and be obedient. (KJV)

Exodus 24:7 HB

And he took the book of the covenant, and called it out in the ears of the people; and they said, We will do and hear attentively all that Jehovah has spoken.

24:7 called out, *qara*; the only word in the Hebrew Bible for read. The word means to call aloud. There is no such thing as silent reading in the Hebrew Bible. It is the same word used when Adam gave names to the animals. He looked at the animal, saw its nature, and read it, that is, he called out the name that he saw in the character of the animal. That is why it is so important for people to become expert readers, because reading the Word of God aloud is the ultimate source of all knowledge and wisdom, because the Word of God causes us to experience the fear of God, from which comes knowledge and wisdom, Pro 1:7; 9:10. Do you read me?

The purpose of this lesson is to show you the meaning

194 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus
of reading the Bible, and the importance of reading the Bible.

1. GOD TAUGHT ADAM HOW TO READ AND WRITE.

In the beginning God ordained the importance of reading and writing. God told Adam to name God's creatures. Adam did that in the early afternoon of the sixth day. By mid afternoon God had created woman. They had the rest of the day to get acquainted with one another and The Garden before the Seventh Day.

Let us understand the word **read**, and the word **write**. The meaning of the word write is to mark on a surface. We understand what it means to write. Let us understand the meaning of **read**.

The meaning of read is to

- (1) see something,**
- (2) recognize it,**
- (3) and call it out.**

Read is the word used to speak to a person by calling his name. It means to see someone, to recognize him, and call out his name. Reading is the viewing of words or symbols, recognizing their meaning, and calling them out. From the Hebrew let me prove to you that the first thing God did was to teach Adam to read. After he learned how to read, he learned how to write.

Exodus 24:7 says,

And he [Moses] took the book of the covenant, and called it out in the ears of the people.

The word for **called out** is *kahrah*. It is number 7121 in your Strong's Hebrew Dictionary. It is used throughout the Hebrew Bible. Look at Genesis 1:5. **And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night.** The word **called** in both cases is *kahrah* [7121], the only word in the Old Covenant ever translated read. Throughout the creation story whenever you see the words that God **called** something a certain name, it is that same Hebrew word that means **to read**. God created things, saw them, recognized them, and called out their names.

When Adam named the creatures in Genesis 2:19-20 the same Hebrew word is used. God brought every creature before Adam to see what Adam would **call [read]**

them. In verse 20, Adam **called** names to all.... **Called** names is the same Hebrew word, read [7121]. Reading is the calling out of words. Words are symbols we use to designate beings, objects, and ideas. All words are in the very nature of God. He brought everything into existence by speaking words out of His mouth. He said, **Light be, and light was**. All things exist by the words of His mouth.

God could have named all those creatures without Adam, but God's first purpose was to teach Adam to read things as God reads them. Adam was not qualified to handle the Garden, a wife, or any work until he learned how to read. Recognition and calling out words is necessary to thinking. You do not know how to think, unless you think God's way.

***You cannot think God's way
until you learn to see things, recognize things,
and call things the same way God does.***

The problem with the world is that they have not learned how to read as God reads. They look at something, they make up their own idea as to what it is, and call it whatever they desire. And then they cannot understand why things happen as they do. They do not recognize and call things as God does.

All cultures, peoples, and tribes develop their own language. All groups within a community develop their own language. The homosexual movement developed their own language. The Rock music culture developed their own words, and their own meanings. They do not mean the same things by words that the Word of God means. This was the first lesson God gave Adam - to read, to recognize things, and call things in agreement with God. Man did not evolve from a grunting animal into a beautiful intelligent creature able to read and write. I refuse to listen to such confusion. Tell it right. That first man was a beautiful and intelligent creature. God taught him to read and write. Human beings forgot what God taught them, and devolved downward and became a creature that cannot read or write, and grunts and screams. All you have to do to see the evidence is to go to any number of activities where humans come together. Much of the sounds that come out of their mouths make absolutely no sense whatsoever in God's sight.

Now let me prove to you that Adam wrote. Turn to Genesis 5:1. **Book** means a document containing marks. It is a book beginning with Adam. It contains Adam's family records. This book could have been written by no one except Adam. He is the head of the human race. God taught him how to read and write. He is the one who gave that knowledge to his descendants. He wrote this record himself personally, or

196 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

had it done under his direct supervision. God taught Adam to recognize things as God sees them, call things as God calls them, and live by God's words.

God's purpose for reading and writing today is that people recognize the meaning of God's words, and call them into our lives. This is the only way to get God's life into our lives. This is the only way to have eternal life. This is the only way to get God's spiritual and material abundance into our lives. You call it into your life by using God's words. That is how important reading the Bible is!

2. READ THE BIBLE TO SEE GOD.

Note the order of events in Exodus 20 -24. Exodus 20:1. **And God spoke all these words.** Note the word **spoke**. It means to arrange in a proper order. If you want God's perfect will arranged in the proper order in your life, you must learn to arrange your words in the right order. To arrange your words in the right order you must go by God's words.

In chapters 20 through 23 God arranged these words to Moses so Moses could read them to the people. In Exodus 24:3 Moses tallied up all these words to the people. Moses tallied up all these words as in making a record. Moses tallied up these words so the people could write them upon their hearts, as well as on writing material. Verse four, **And Moses wrote all the words of the Lord.** That word means **to engrave**.

Note the order of events.

[1] **God arranged His words, and placed them before Moses, for him to recognize.**

[2] **Moses recognized them, and called them to the people to inscribe them on their hearts.**

[3] **Moses inscribed them permanently, by marking them on writing material.**

[4] **Next they made a blood sacrifice.**

[5] **Next they read the book of the covenant.**

[6] **Next, the blood was sprinkled on the people to signify forgiveness and bringing them into the covenant of the book. And**

[7] **finally Moses, Aaron, Nadab, Abihu, and the Seventy Elders saw God in His glory. Not only did they see Him, They ate and drank with Him.**

This is the outline of God's revelation of Himself to man.

[1] **God spoke His words (the Bible) to a prophet.**

[2] **The prophet spoke God's words to the people.**

[3] **God's words were written down in the Book.**

[4] **The sacrifice was made, and the blood was poured out on Calvary's cross.**

[5] **The Word of God was read [or called out] to all.**

The Importance of Reading the Bible

- [6] We received His blood of the covenant applied to us personally.**
- [7] We saw God, and experienced Him in His glorious salvation, and in the out-pouring of His Holy Spirit.**

I want to make a special point of your having to read the word of God to see God, and to see the abundance God has for you. You had to read the Word of God before you were saved. Whether you read it from a printed page of the Bible, or you heard it from someone's lips, you recognized it as God's Word, and confessed Him with your mouth (Rom. 10:9).

Everything after salvation comes to you in the same way. If you want God to show Himself to you regularly in all His glory and abundance, read the Bible regularly. Read it with faith in the blood of Jesus. Just as Moses applied the blood to the people before they were allowed to make it effective in their lives, so you must read it with faith in the blood of Jesus. Read it with the anointing of the Holy Spirit upon you. His abundance, both spiritually and materially, will pour into your life.

3. NEGLECT THE BIBLE AND REAP CALAMITY.

When people read the Bible they prosper. When they do not, they reap calamity. Remember the meaning of the Hebrew word for read - to see, to recognize, and to call God's words into your life. Solomon did exactly what God through Moses commanded him not to do. Read Exodus 17:15-20. Note three things that Solomon did that Moses commanded him not to do.

- [1] He multiplied horses from Egypt.**
- [2] He multiplied wives to himself. and**
- [3] He multiplied silver and gold to himself.**

Read 1 Kings 10:27-11:11. Solomon did not read God's command to Moses on this, or at least he did not take it to heart if he did. He even built altars to idols for his pagan wives, and prostrated himself before these false gods. What happened to Solomon? He died at age fifty-seven, and the kingdom was split at his death.

Read the Bible - see it, recognize it, and call it into your life, all of it. Solomon neglected that portion of the Word of God. He did not call that portion of it into his life. He brought calamity upon himself and his heirs.

The Bible is filled with such stories of calamity. Always they are due to neglect of God's Word. Let us turn now to stories showing how people prospered when they

read God's Word.

4. READ GOD'S WORD AND PROSPER.

Look at young Josiah. In 1 Kings 13:2, at the pagan altar built by Jereboam, king of Israel, immediately after the death of Solomon [Solomon's son, Rehoboam was king of Judah], a prophet predicted the birth of King Josiah. Josiah reigned in Judah three hundred years later. In 2 Kings 22:1 we read that he was eight years old when he became king. When he was age 24 he commanded the Temple to be cleaned out of the idols and trash that was placed there by previous kings.

Read 2 Kings 22:9-23:8 [Do not continue reading this Manual. Stop and read this section of the Bible and then continue.]

Now note 23:25. Note that the Bible says that Josiah was the greatest king. None greater before him, and none after him. Why? Because he read and obeyed the Word of God to the very letter.

5. GOD PRONOUNCES A SPECIAL BLESSING FOR THOSE WHO READ THE BIBLE.

Revelation 1:3,

Blessed is the one reading, and those hearing the words of the prophecy, and keeping those things having been written in it, because the time is near.

This blessing applies not only to the Book of Revelation but to all the Bible. Look at these examples from the Bible of the devoted practice of God's people down through the ages of reading the Bible both publicly and privately:

The first thing Moses did after receiving the Words of the Law was to read them to the people [Exodus 24:7]

Moses commanded the king of Israel to get a copy of God's Word and read it all the days of his life [Deut. 17:19].

God commanded that His Word always be read in the Temple services. [Deu. 31:11. Joshua 8:34-35].

The great revival under Josiah was due to re-discovering and reading the Bible [2 Kings 22].

A great revival took place under Ezra, in the return from the Babylonian captiv-

ity, by reading the Holy Bible: Nehemiah 8:1-12 [See Nehemiah 13:1-2].

Isaiah commands us,

Isa 34:16

Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and his spirit it hath gathered them. (KJV)

Isa 34:16 HB

Tread seeking out of the book of Jehovah, and call it out; not one of these shall be lacking; shall not the female visit *with* her female associate? Because he has commanded my mouth, and his Spirit, he has gathered them.

34:16 **shall not the female visit *with* her female associate**, is the same identical phrase as in the previous verse. The subject of verse 16 is that the prophecies of God will surely produce their offspring or fulfillment just as surely as the birds of the air reproduce offspring. The phrase, **shall it not visit?** is the word *paqad*, to visit. Nowhere does *paqad* have the meaning of lack or want. The meaning is, just as the female brings forth her reproducing female, shall not God's prophecies make their appointed visit and fulfillment? Visit or *paqad* is the word constantly used to describe God's coming to fulfill His word. It is carried over into the Greek of the New Covenant in the word *episkeptomai*, to visit as the overseer, bishop, pastor; Mat 25:36,43; Luk 1:68,78; 7:16; Acts 6:3; 7:23; 15:14, 36; Heb 2:6; Jas 1:27.

Take special note of these words.

Every promise has its material fulfillment [spouse].

His Spirit will gather people and abundance for you.

Jesus regularly went to the synagogue to hear the Scriptures read, and to read them Himself [Luke 4:16].

The Ethiopian Eunuch was led to the Lord in the desert because his heart was touched by reading Isaiah 53 [Acts 8:28-38].

Paul commanded that his letters be read publicly in the church services [Col. 4:16. 1 Thes. 5:27].

Paul commands the preacher to give attention or time to the reading of Scripture [1 Timothy 4:13].

6. MANY BELIEVERS HAVE DIED FOR YOU TO HAVE THE BIBLE IN YOUR LANGUAGE

200 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Beginning with the 1300's men have been severely persecuted, and some killed, so that you and I could have the Bible in our language. In the 1300's there was a revival of learning in the ancient languages. The priests and the popes of the Catholic Church of the dark middle ages had substituted papal pronouncements for the Bible. With the invention of the printing press in 1457 both the Hebrew Old Covenant, and the Greek New Covenant were soon published. John Wycliffe of England was among the very first to translate the Bible from the Hebrew and Greek into English. The Latin Bible had been available for years, but only scholars still read Latin. Wycliffe was severely persecuted for his work in giving the Bible to the people. He died in 1382. Forty-eight years later he was officially declared a heretic by the Roman Church, his bones dug up, burned, and scattered on the Severn River. Later others were persecuted for translating the Bible into French, Czech, and Italian. Luther was severely persecuted for translating the Bible into German. Men continued to be killed all through the 1300's, 1400's, and 1500's, by the Roman Church, and also by the Church of England when it was separated from the Roman Church, for translating the Bible into the common language of the people. Finally, in 1604 in England King James convened the Hampton Court to consider a new translation, and the King James English Version was issued in 1611. It has been the standard of the English speaking world ever since.

From that great event began to flow translations of the Bible into every language, until today the Word of God is available in all but a few of the most isolated spoken languages on earth. Oh, how thankful we should be to have a Bible we can read. We ought to show our gratitude and our love by reading it diligently every day. It is the genuine channel through which God's salvation, power, and abundance flow into your life.

Chapter 17

HEARING GOD'S VOICE

OUTLINE

John 10:27

- 1. Read the Bible to develop your ability to hear God's voice.**
- 2. Obey His voice to continue to hear His voice.**

John 10:27

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: (KJV)

John 10:27 HB

My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

When God created Adam in the Garden of Eden, Adam heard God's voice as easily as he heard the animals around him. When Adam and Eve sinned, man died in his heart to God. That made it difficult to hear God's voice.

When the Holy Spirit calls you to Christ in the new birth, He restores your capacity to hear God's voice. In the baptism of the Holy Spirit, He greatly increases your capacity to hear God's voice. The most important ability for you to develop is your ability to hear God's voice.

1. READ THE BIBLE TO DEVELOP YOUR ABILITY TO HEAR GOD'S VOICE.

The entire Bible from Genesis to Revelation is a recording of the voice of God. The Bible is God-breathed. That is what the Greek word, inspired, means. God breathed out to create sounds. You have to breathe out to create sounds. You cannot breathe in and speak at the same time. You cannot speak if you do not allow your breath to flow

202 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

out past your vocal chords and your mouth. That is why we call the Bible inspired. God spoke it as He breathed out. So, the Bible is a record of His voice.

If you want to know what God's voice sounds like, read the Bible. Listen to His voice as you read it. Soon you will recognize the sound of His voice. He will begin to speak to you in your heart. Because you have been listening to His voice as you read the Bible, you will recognize His voice when He speaks in your heart. It will sound in your heart just like it sounds in the Bible.

The phrase, **the word of Jehovah was**, is the phrase the Bible writers used to describe the experience when they heard God's voice. The first place it occurs in the Bible is in

Gen 15:1

1 After these things the word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. (KJV)

Genesis 15:1 HB

After these words, the word of Jehovah was to Abram in a vision, saying, Do not fear, Abram; I am your shield, your exceeding great reward.

Take a concordance and find this phrase throughout the Bible. It occurs again and again.

Every minister should read 1 Samuel 3 until that story sinks deep into your spirit. Like Samuel, once you begin to hear the voice of the Lord in your heart, you do only what He commands you to do.

You must follow the exact letter of the written Word of God, in perfect harmony with the personal voice of the Holy Spirit in your heart. People who know only the written letter of the Bible, do not know the voice of God.

A strong, traditional, intellectual knowledge of the Bible, without the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to you personally, makes a person a religious hypocrite. The Pharisees knew the words of the Bible. But they understood them to mean only what their teachers had told them that they meant. They never heard God speak to them.

John 5:37

37 And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. (KJV)

John 5:37 HB

And the Father himself, which has sent me, has borne witness of me. You have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

This same thing happens to many pastors, Bible school teachers, college and seminary professors. They accept the traditions of men as the interpretation of the Bible. As they read it, they use only their rational minds to understand it. Man's rational mind without the revelation of God reasons in a circle. Ask an atheist to explain the Bible. The atheist will explain the Bible based strictly on the information available in his own head. Other information does not exist to him. Ask a Buddhist to explain the Bible. The Buddhist will explain the Bible with the information that is available in his mind. No other information exists for him.

Ask a Christian, who believes miracles ceased with the apostles, to explain the Bible. He will explain the Bible with the information available in his own mind. This is the information he received from his teachers before him. God did not tell him that miracles ceased with the apostles. His teachers told him that. He has not heard the voice of God on that subject. He reads the words of the Bible with the rational mind of one who has been indoctrinated with the traditions of men. He does not hear God's voice when he reads the Bible. He only hears what his own mind tells him.

I pray that you begin to receive the importance of reading the Bible, and hearing the voice of God in your heart while you read it. If you do not hear God's voice when you read the Bible, you have no protection against man-made traditions. You must hear the Holy Spirit speaking to you as you read the Bible. Reading the Bible is the one way to develop an ear for the voice of God.

2. OBEY HIS VOICE TO CONTINUE TO HEAR HIS VOICE

Eli's instruction to Samuel is the most important instruction you will ever receive.

1 Sam 3:9

9 Therefore Eli said unto Samuel, Go, lie down: and it shall be, if he call thee, that thou shalt say, Speak, LORD; for thy servant heareth. So Samuel went and lay down in his place. (KJV)

1 Samuel 3:9,

And Eli said to Samuel, Walk, lie down; and it shall be, if he calls you, that you shall say, Speak, Oh Jehovah, because your servant attentively hears. And Samuel

204 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

walked, and lay down in his place.

God only continues to speak to those who obey His voice. King Saul continued to disobey God's voice.

Finally God would no longer answer Saul when he called. Read 1 Samuel 15:16-23. Read 1 Samuel 28:6-20.

Your goal must be to bring every thought into obedience to the Holy Spirit. You must pull down every thought that rises in rebellion against the voice of God within you. [2 Cor. 10:4-5] You must allow no rational thought that is contrary to the plain statement of Holy Scripture. You must read the Bible with an obedient heart.

As soon as the Holy Spirit speaks to you about a verse in the Bible, you must obey Him immediately. Do not quench the Spirit. Do not neglect God's voice. The Holy Spirit will not force His will upon you. If you resist Him, He will immediately cease to speak. If you resist Him every time He tries to speak to you about something, He will eventually stop speaking to you altogether. Your life will be miserable and powerless until you repent, and become totally obedient to Him.

Hear His voice. Obey His voice.

Chapter 18

HOW TO RECEIVE AND FULFILL GOD'S VISIONS AND DREAMS FOR YOU

OUTLINE

Luke 2:49

Introduction

Jesus at age 12 in the temple with clear dreams and visions.

Follow the three step procedure of words, thoughts, and deeds.

1. I get God's priorities.

- (1) Love God.**
- (2) Love yourself.**
- (3) Love others as yourself.**

2. I work God's procedures.

- (1) I receive God's visions.**
- (2) I speak God's words.**
- (3) I do God's deeds.**

3. I exercise faith for the divine process.

- (1) I work the intellectual process.**
- (2) I work the saturation process.**
- (3) I let God give me the revelation process.**

4. I am developing my potentials.

- (1) I develop my potential to receive.**
- (2) I develop my potential to develop.**
- (3) I develop my potential to give.**

Luke 2:49

49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? (KJV)

Luke 2:49 HB

And he said to them, For what *is it* that you sought me? Did you absolutely not see that it is binding upon me to be in the things of my Father?

At the age of twelve Jesus knew He must be in the things of His Father. He knew what the things of His Father were. At age thirty He publicly committed Himself to the things of His Father, His life, crucifixion, and resurrection. He was tempted by the devil, and won. He conquered the storms of nature. He supplied the needs of the people. He survived the hatred of religious fanatics. He fulfilled the Law of God in every detail. He did not allow the misunderstandings of His family to stop Him. He did not allow the weaknesses of His disciples to defeat Him. He died on the cross because He came into the world to die on the cross.

He accomplished His mission. His faith did not waver when He bore the wrath of God for you and me. He faced it all with perfect faith and obedience. God raised Him from the dead. He walked away from the empty tomb owning the world! He appeared to His disciples for forty days to prove to believers that He accomplished our salvation. He ascended to heaven, and was seated at the right hand of the Father. He is patiently waiting for all who will repent and believe, before He takes over the world completely. I call that SUCCESS! He is still a success. Now! And He gives good success to all those who take Him and obey His vision for their lives.

THE THREE STEP PROCEDURE is thoughts, words, and deeds.

This is what you must do. The Holy Spirit shows you God's vision for you, and you see it. You speak it in the power of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives you power to do it. You see it in your heart. You speak it with your mouth. You do it with your hands and feet. God brings it to pass. God has placed in your saved heart the power to see God's vision for you. He has given you the power to speak His vision for you. He has given you the power to bring it to pass. We are created in the image of God, and this is the way He does it. This procedure is ordained by God for us. It is

plainly set forth in the Bible for all who are willing to see it. Learn God's procedure and use it for His glory.

HOW TO RECEIVE GOD'S VISIONS AND DREAMS

Acts 2:17-18

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: (KJV)

Acts 2: HB

17 And it will be in the last days, says God, I will pour out from my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy, and your youth will gaze upon visions, and your elders will dream dreams;

18 And upon my menservants and upon my maidservants I will pour out in those days from my Spirit, and they will prophesy;

Elders, *presbuteros*, those older. Used of one who is older than another, Luk 15:25; Joh 8:9; used of seniors in age and leaders of Israel, Mtt 15:2; 16:21, Heb 11:2; etc., leaders in the church, Acts 2:17; Acts 14:23; 15:2, 4, 6, 22, 23; 20:17, 28; of elders, men and women, 1 Tim 5:1-2; called overseers; Phil 1:1; Tit 1:5, also called officers (bishops, *episkopos*) Tit 1:7; Jam 5:14; 1 Pet 5:1, 5; 2 Joh 1:1; 3 Joh 1:1; Rev 4:4, 10, etc. According to Joel 2:28 refers to both male and female elders.

Every good thing promised in the Bible is for you. You do not need to pray, "If it be Your will." The plain promises in the Bible are for every child of God who is brave enough to take them..

God does not make promises in His Word, and then reserve them for only a certain privileged few. But, as in the case with our children, some are ready for certain portions of their inheritance, and some are not. A wise father will distribute the inheritance to his children as they are ready for it. So God does with us. You need to talk with the Holy Spirit, and get the vision of what the Son of God wants you to possess now.

What does God want?

1. I GET GOD'S PRIORITIES

I Clearly Focus My Life On God's Top Three Priorities. Mark 12:29-34.

God's three top priorities are:

[1] I love God.

[2] I love myself.

[3] I love others.

If you love someone you serve him.

[1] I serve God.

[2] I serve {develop} myself.

[3] I serve others.

This is the Great Commandment. Start classifying everything you do into these categories. Is this a service to God? Is this self development? Is this service to others? Of course, they overlap. If you serve God, you will certainly develop yourself. If you serve others, you serve God, as well as develop yourself. Order your entire life around these three top priorities.

PROCEDURES

2. I Work God's Procedures.

[1] I receive God's vision.

[2] I speak God's words.

[3] I do God's deeds.

Let me explain these three principles very clearly:

First, I read the Bible and commune with God day after day until He shows me His vision of what I am to do in a specific area of my life. I pray on that subject. I read the Bible on that subject. I may seek wise counsel from someone. When God gives me the vision of what I am to do,

Second, I speak words of Scripture that will bring this into existence in my life. I speak words the Holy Spirit gives me in agreement with Scripture. I speak only words of faith,

**in talking with God,
in talking with myself,
and in talking with others.**

Third, as I see what I am to do, I begin to do it. As I believe I am directed by the Holy Spirit. I take action!

THE PROCESS.

3. I Exercise Faith for The Divine Process to Take Place Within Me.

Let me describe THE DIVINE PROCESS that must take place in you for you to receive God's vision for your life.

[1] The Intellectual process.

[2] The Saturation process.

[3] The Revelation process.

[1] I work the Intellectual Process.

I must become intellectually acquainted with the Bible. I must read and mentally learn what the Bible says is God's will [vision] for my life. The more I become intellectually acquainted with God's total picture in the Bible for my life, the more knowledge of His Word I store in my mind, the more the Holy Spirit can show me God's picture for me. Many Christians' picture of God's will for them is very incomplete. They do not know what the Bible says about their life. It is so easy for the Holy Spirit to give you the perfect picture for your life when you have the Bible available in your heart. That is the mental process. You learn what the Bible says.

[2] I work the Saturation Process.

Once you become acquainted with certain pictures and promises in the Bible, you have to become saturated with those pictures. This is called the saturation process. You saturate almost every moment of your life with God's pictures from the Bible on that subject. If you want something to take place in your life, you must become saturated with it. You search out Scriptures on that subject. Read them into your memory. You write them upon the tablet of your heart [Pro. 3:1-3]. You read them constantly. You pray over them. You say them out loud. You put them on a tape recorder, and have them speak to you day and night as often as possible. You read everything you can find that great pastors have written on this subject. You remove everything that interferes with your becoming saturated with these words.

The process God commanded Moses is found in Deuteronomy 6:6-9. Note the intellectual process, and the saturation process. They are to speak them and hear them constantly. They were to hear their own voices and the voices of others as they spoke with one another the words God gave them. They were to see them. They were to write them on different places in the house. They were to speak them, hear them, and see them twenty-four hours a day. We must do the same thing. We must speak God's Words to one another. Listen to God's Words on a tape recorder. Write them on papers we put by our bed, on our bathroom mirrors, on the refrigerator, and on our desk. This is total saturation.

My wife and I have formed the habit of literally framing special Scripture verses in picture frames, and hanging them upon the walls of our offices, and every room in our house. We practice "single vision." Matthew 6:22. The Greek word for "eye" means "transparent, uncluttered, unclouded, in focus so that the light flows in totally unhindered." That can only happen when you are "focused" on one thing. The words "full of light" are only one word in Greek, and mean "light holder." The verses before it say you cannot have a mixed loyalty, partly to God, partly to money. Then Jesus said, "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." Your heart can handle only one supreme loyalty. If that which is most valuable to you is money, then you cannot focus on God. Your vision of God is clouded and confused. But if your supreme loyalty is God, then you are focused on God. His light flows unhindered into your being. Your entire being becomes a light holder. Your entire being is filled with light. There are no shadows. No dark corners. You have God's picture completely. This can only happen if your focus is "single vision." You are saturated with God's picture for you as revealed in the Bible.

[3] I let God give me the Revelation Process.

At some point in the saturation process, as you become ready, the Holy Spirit gives you a genuine revelation in your heart. It can happen gradually or suddenly, but the picture becomes clear. You know it is God's picture for you. This is God's vision for you. This is God's dream. You have received God's picture. Keep on speaking it. Keep on acting on it. It is on its way to you. No one can tell you how long this process takes. It is like conception, development, and birth. Different dreams in different believers at different times and places require different amounts of time. Some are born easy. Some are born with much labor, but each dream will be born a healthy, bouncing baby, if you do not faint.

YOUR POTENTIAL

4. By God's Grace I Am Developing My Potential.

[I make these statements using "I" to lead you to claim them for yourself. You are to say them using the first person, "I".] Until a procedure becomes automatic within you, you cannot use it effectively. So memorize every good thing you can. Keep it before you in print and on tape until you master it, and it masters you.

We now have PRIORITIES, PROCEDURES, PROCESSES, AND POTENTIALS.

1. We focus on God's Priorities.

2. We work God's Procedures.

3. We have faith as the Processes take place. And,

4. We are developing our Potentials.

1. We focus on God's Priorities.

[1] We serve God.

[2] We develop ourselves.

[3] We serve others.

2. We Work God's Procedures.

[1] We get God's vision.

[2] We speak it.

[3] We put it into action.

3. We exercise faith as the Processes take place.

[1] We get intellectually acquainted with the Word of God.

[2] We saturate ourselves with God's Word on that subject.

[3] We receive God's Revelation.

4. We are developing our Potential. We have an almost unlimited potential [capacity] :

[1] To Receive.

[2] To Develop.

[3] To Give.

Now to the fourth point:

4. BY GOD'S GRACE I AM DEVELOPING MY POTENTIAL.

I stated above that we have an almost unlimited potential or capacity for receiving, developing, and giving. Do not misunderstand my words. God is the only One who is absolutely unlimited. We will never become God or gods. But since we are created in His image, and redeemed by His grace, we have received of His likeness. Our capacity for development must be far from anything we have ever seen in anyone except Jesus Christ Himself. Since none of us have come close to that potential shown us in Christ, we must assume for all practical purposes that our potential for receiving, developing, and giving can go on forever almost unlimited!

[1] I Develop My Potential To Receive.

The most fundamental truth about the human being is our capacity to receive. God created us that way. We originate nothing. We create nothing. We provide nothing. We have nothing we did not receive [1 Cor. 4:7]. God made us so we could receive of His fullness. {Because out of his fullness we all have taken, and grace on top of grace [John 1:16]. God gives and gives, giving upon giving, pouring one gift upon another. The first thing you learn is

HOW TO RECEIVE [TAKE is the word used in the Greek].

Your receiving is conditioned by your acting responsibly with what you receive. You must DEVELOP all God gives you. GIVING to God and to others is part of that development. You must get over your feeling that it is wrong for God to give to you. You feel you do not deserve anything from God. You think God's will is to make life as hard on you as possible. No. God designed you to TAKE from God. God delights to give to you. He made you worthy in the Beloved. He wants to give His abundance to you. He will help you live His holy laws. Within yourself you deserve nothing, but in Christ you are worthy to receive all things. God created the earth and all its beauties and resources. He gave it to you and me. He then gave us the authority and power to control it and develop it for our good and God's glory. When man sinned and lost it, God redeemed us and it, and then gave it back to us. God so loved the world that he gave.... [John 3:16].

You must obey God, and bring His tithe to His church. Every pastor must tithe. Tithing opens the windows of heaven, and God pours out His abundance [Mal. 3:10-11]. You must get into the receiving and giving attitude. Nothing happens from God except in the "Giving and Receiving Mode!"

[2] I Develop My Potential To Develop.

The parable of the Talents in Matthew 25:14-30, refers not only to possessions but to ourselves. The Lord called his servants and, delivered unto them his possessions. The word "possessions" in the Greek means, "from the One Who originated them." The word "talent" means "weight," meaning value. This means that the Lord, from Himself as the Original Source, has poured His own weighty value, Himself, into us. Two servants in the parable doubled their talents. You and I are to develop our potential. We must multiply what God has placed in us to the greatest degree possible.

One servant hid his talent, and did nothing with it. If you do nothing to develop yourself as God wills, you lose all. God has poured His own weighty character into me through Jesus Christ. I am valuable, important, precious, in His sight. He has invested Himself in me. That means my potential for development is almost unlimited. To the extent I can exercise His faith (again, which He gave to me in Christ), to that extent I can keep on developing. It is a sin not to develop my potential. I would be cheating

216 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

God out of the glory He designed to receive from me. I would be cheating myself of what God planned for me. I would be cheating others. They would not receive the benefits I am capable of giving them. I must develop my full potential. I must receive all God has to give. I must develop it to its fullest extent. That is the abundant life Jesus came to give.

[3] I Develop My Potential To Give.

Jesus said to the Apostles, **Freely you took, freely give** [Matt. 10:8]. The word “freely” in both instances means, “without a cause, for no reason at all, except that the person giving simply wants to give.” God gives simply because He delights to give. You have no other way to get anything. A man absolutely does not have power to take anything, unless it is given to him out of heaven. The word take means “to take hold of, to get your hands on.” You cannot get your hands on anything unless it is given to you out of heaven. The Lord has laid down the rule that to receive, you must give. The more abundantly you give, the more abundantly you receive. God has designed you to be a channel through which His blessings flow.

We are to be like a river. His “stream” flows through us to others. As His stream passes through us it makes the banks of our river green.

We not only are the channel of the stream, but we are also the tree planted by the rivers of water [Psa.1:3]. We are not just a channel, untouched as the blessings flow through ”- just an humble channel that makes others rich while we ourselves remain poor”- No, a thousand times, No! The blessing of Jehovah, it makes rich, and he adds no sorrow with it [Pro 10:22]. Develop your potential to give. Open up your channel.

Develop your full potential, your full capacity

[1] TO RECEIVE.

[2] TO DEVELOP.

[3] TO GIVE.

Develop your full potential

to receive God’s vision for your life,

to speak it in agreement with God,

**to put it into action in your life,
so you can give more to God,
so you can give more to yourself,
so you can give more to others,
so you can receive a bigger vision from God,
so you can speak greater things,
so you can do greater deeds,
to reach your full potential**

**TO BE LIKE YOUR ELDER BROTHER, THE LORD
JESUS. PRAISE THE LORD! WAKE UP YOUR POTEN-
TIAL TO RECEIVE.**

Rom 13:11

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. (KJV)

Rom 13:11 HB

Also this, seeing the time, that even now it is an hour to awake out of sleep, because now our salvation is nearer than when we believed.

You cannot wake up your potential to receive unless you realize it has been asleep. Realize what time it is in your life. Wake up your potential to receive!

Chapter 19

THE PRINCIPLES OF LOGOS AND RHEMA

OUTLINE

1 Peter 1:23-25

Introduction

This message is on how to receive God's revelation for your life.

1. The principles of logos and rhema

(1) The logos principle is intellectual knowledge of the Bible and a willingness to obey.

(2) The rhema principle is the Holy Spirit speaking to you through a specific Scripture at a particular time and place.

Logos is the collected Word of God.

Rhema is God's speaking to you through it.

2. You must act upon the logos, the Bible, for God to speak, rhema, to you.

3. The logos principle is collecting the Word of God into your mind on a subject.

4. Rhema is the Holy Spirit speaking to you through those Scriptures.

5. Rhema is the actual experience of the Word on a subject becoming real to you.

Application

Use the various references to illustrate and teach your people

1 Pet 1:23-25

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word

which by the gospel is preached unto you. (KJV)

1 Peter 1: 23 HB

Having been begotten, absolutely not of decaying seed, but of undecaying, through the living word of God, and remaining forever. See Note-Confession Luke 8:11

24 On the very account that all flesh is as vegetation, and all the glory of man as the flower of vegetation. The vegetation dries up, and its flower falls off,

25 And the spoken word of the Lord remains forever. And this is the spoken word announced as the good news to you.

Introduction

This lesson is on how we receive God's revelation; how we receive God's vision. The Logos Principle is the Intellectual and Saturation Processes. The Rhema Principle is the Revelation Process. I will define them more specifically shortly. I constantly work these Procedures and Processes together. What I mean by, "I constantly work these together," is as follows:

To the EXTENT that I see the picture of what God wants me to do, I speak it. I speak it in my prayers, in my talk with myself, and to the extent it is wise with my friends. If it is wise not to speak of it to others, I make it a deliberate point not to contradict my vision in talking with others. I also continue to read Scriptures that apply to my vision.

I very deliberately protect my vision from all negative remarks from myself as well as others. My vision is a tender plant, and I must protect it from being damaged from any direction. The Holy Spirit is grieved very easily. Unbelief and criticism can darken God's vision within you.

At this point I must distinguish between degrees of **vision**. To whatever extent I perceive the picture of what God wants me to do, I do it. Most visions are at first on the intellectual level. A person hears the gospel for the first time. He has to intellectually get acquainted with the thought. Most of the time this takes place long before there is any real spiritual revelation to him about his need, the eternal consequences of the information, etc. It is the same with the Bible teaching on abundance and power, or any other subject.

You first get acquainted with the subject. You are exposed to the idea. You are considering it, but it has made no inner, spiritual, powerful impact on your thinking and life yet. To whatever extent I see the truth of something, I begin to work it, regard-

220 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

less of the level of my reception. Do you understand? As I speak it my insight becomes clearer. My vision becomes more detailed and more nearly complete. As I perceive what I am to do, I immediately obey. I do what I am to do now. As I speak it, as I do the part I am to do now, my vision becomes clearer. The clearer it becomes, the more precisely I can speak it and do it. Finally my vision is born into a beautiful, healthy reality. It is manifested in my life for all to see and enjoy.

This is what I mean by working all three together. You do not wait until all details of the vision are complete. You work it deliberately and faithfully as soon as you are intellectually convinced of the truth of it.

Do not run ahead of God. Do not lag behind. Follow the prompting of the Holy Spirit. Speak, and do what you believe the Spirit is directing you to do. As you do, the whole process becomes clearer and clearer until the full grown answer is manifested to physical sight.

With that introduction you are now prepared to grasp the Principles of Logos and Rhema.

1. THE PRINCIPLES OF LOGOS AND RHEMA

These are two Greek words used in the New Covenant for **word**. They are used of the Word of God. Logos means a **collection**, referring to the entire Bible. Also it refers to the Lord Jesus [John 1:1. Heb. 4:12]. Rhema means that which is spoken, referring to the act of speaking, meaning the personal communication to the individual heart, the actual experience of hearing God's voice in your heart [John 17:7. Rom. 10:17].

(1) The Logos Principle is:

An intellectual or head knowledge of the Scripture with an honest willingness to obey.

(2) The Rhema Principle is:

A Holy Spirit revealed Scripture that is speaking to your heart at a particular time and place. You are to act on it

and have it come to be in your life

I did not understand these principles until some years ago, although I had used them all my Christian life. I had heard others refer to this, but hardly anyone ever gave a clear explanation of what they meant. Jesus is the Word, the Logos, the Collection, the Man, in whom all of the God-ness is collected. All the riches of God are collected in Him. He is God's total communication to us. You spend your entire life discovering all the communication that is in Jesus. He is the Logos. But when He becomes a Rhema, a spoken word to us, we actually experience Him. As long as He remains only the Logos, we know the riches are there, but we do not experience them. He and His Word have to become a Rhema, a word spoken directly to us by the Holy Spirit, at a particular time and place.

The Logos principle is that when you take Jesus, you take all God has for you. But the Rhema is that you appropriate His riches step by step, day by day, at specific times and places when the Holy Spirit gives you a specific word for right now. The Logos Principle is accepting the Bible as the Word of God, reading it, becoming intellectually acquainted with it, and obeying it as sincerely as you know how. This is the studying to show yourself approved [2 Tim. 2:15]. This is the reading, and meditating, and memorizing, and storing it up in the heart. Going to church and hearing the man of God preach the Word. Reading good books that help you intellectually understand the Bible.

All of this is the Logos Principle. It is collecting it in your own memory bank, so it is available within you at anytime the Lord Jesus sees that you are ready to receive a specific word [Rhema] for your life. This is as far as many faithful Christians ever go with God. They know the Word of God intellectually, but His Word has never really spoken to them in their hearts. They do not hear God's voice. They do not know what it means for the Holy Spirit to lead them moment by moment.

The Rhema Principle is the Holy Spirit revealing to you at a given moment exactly what the Lord Jesus says you need and are ready to receive at that moment. The Lord Jesus has been through the human life process. He knows from Holy Spirit directed human experience what is needed at every stage, at every point, in every situation of life. He knows from His own human experience exactly the growth process, the procedure, the timing, the tools and resources, the wisdom and knowledge, and the precise acts necessary to carry any project to a successful conclusion.

As the Lord Jesus perceives your exact needs, He tells the Holy Spirit what He wants next in your life, and the Holy Spirit ANNOUNCES it to you [John 16:13-14].

222 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

This is Rhema. The Holy Spirit announces to me the things of Christ for me at this time and place in my life. As I perceive the picture [vision] the Holy Spirit is giving me, I take it by faith. It is conceived in my heart. What I have known intellectually as being available for me, I now know is conceived in me. I know now from the actual inward Witness that it is simply a matter of time, and I will give birth to it.

However, I must nurture and feed my vision. I must protect it so that it is not injured and aborted. But I now know in a different way. Before, I knew it simply because I was aware of it intellectually from reading the Bible. Now I know it in my inward knower, from the voice of the Holy Spirit to me directly. If I protect it from all negative forces, if I nurture it properly upon God's words, and my words of faith, and if I act wisely, it will be fulfilled.

Because I understand the Logos Principle, and the Rhema Principle, I am getting acquainted with all of the Lord Jesus, and all of the Bible. I am cooperating with the Holy Spirit so He can give me the word [the rhema] on what the Lord wants next in my life!

2. Here is an extremely important truth: You must act upon the Logos until you receive Rhema.

In other words, you must act upon your intellectual grasp of the simple statements of the Bible, until the Holy Spirit makes it real and personal to you.

You must become mentally acquainted with the Word of God, and you must mentally agree with it, whether you understand it or not. You must obey it to the extent you can, until it catches fire in your inner being by a specific, Holy Spirit-given Rhema to you personally. As you practice this procedure, the Holy Spirit will personalize the Word of God to you on a daily basis. Each day and each project will be born a beautiful, healthy SUCCESS!

I will repeat the meanings again so you clearly gain the distinctions:

3. The Logos Principle is your collecting the Word of God and all its principles on any given subject into your mind.

4. The Logos principle is saturating yourself with those words and truths in preparation for God's speaking to you.

5. The Rhema Principle is the actual experience when God's words, on that subject become real in your own heart. You have heard His voice speaking directly to you in your innermost being that He has given it to you.

Grasp this next statement as the practical road to specific revelation [Rhema] for the rest of your life:

If you will regularly place the Word of God in your heart intellectually from day to day, week to week, year to year, and deliberately obey every strong thought you have in your heart that agrees with the Word of God that will move you toward your goals, you will KNOW, you will have that Rhema, every time you need it for the rest of your life.

At the right time and place you will know what you need to know to win. As you practice deliberate obedience to the voice of the Holy Spirit within your heart, abundance and power will flow in you. You will have to ask for wisdom to use it all properly! Plant the Logos in your mind. The Holy Spirit will give you the Rhema.

Study everything you can find that the Word of God says on the subject of your need. Place it in your heart as a seed. Feed it, cultivate it, sleep on it, and work faithfully in all areas of your life. One morning you will wake up, and it will be as clear as day as to what to do - at least the next step.

Do that.

Then the next step will appear in your heart. You will see it. Sometimes the whole thing appears all at once. Sometimes it comes in steps and stages. But have faith, and be faithful. The revelation and its accomplishment will come. You will be abundantly wealthy.

Read Proverbs 6:20-23.

The law of your father and mother here is identical to the law of Jehovah.

224 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Prov 6:20-23

20 My son, keep thy father's commandment, and forsake not the law of thy mother:

21 Bind them continually upon thine heart, and tie them about thy neck.

22 When thou goest, it shall lead thee; when thou sleepest, it shall keep thee; and when thou awakest, it shall talk with thee.

23 For the commandment is a lamp; and the law is light; and reproofs of instruction are the way of life: (KJV)

Pro 6:20-23 HB

20 My son, guard your father's commandment, and do not thrust off the law of your mother;

21 Bind them upon your heart continually; lace them firmly about your neck.

22 When you walk, it will lead you; when you lie down, it will hedge you about; and when you awake, it will cause you to ponder;

23 Because the commandment is a lamp, and the law is light; and the way of life is rebuke in corrective discipline,

24 To hedge you about from an evil woman, from the smooth tongue of an adulterous woman.

Guard it in your heart, and practice it in your life. Notice that God's Word leads you, hedges you about, and talks to you. This is the Rhema, God's Word speaking to you. But it cannot do these things for you unless it has been intellectually placed in your heart. Your memory must be saturated with it, so that it is readily available to do this for you.

Many people fail at this point: they are not faithful in the routine of intellectual preparation. Since they receive nothing in the first twenty-four hours, they assume it does not work. They quit. You must faithfully practice these principles day and night, always. You may go for long periods of time, and seemingly nothing significant is happening. Then suddenly you receive the light of revelation. You see it. It dawns like the clear morning. There it is. Remember. Good things come only to those who are prepared for them.

Let me give you a few examples from the Bible where logos and rhema are used. Matthew 24:35-...**my words (logos) shall not pass away**. The written words of God shall never pass away. Many people will not receive them. They will remain collected in a book, but they will never pass away. Matthew 4:4, **Man shall absolutely not live**

by bread alone, but by every spoken word (rhema) that goes out through the mouth of God. You do not live by the whole Bible taken at once. Just like you do not live by all the food in the world. You live each day by the particular food you actually eat. It is the same with the Word of God. You do not live by the whole Bible all at once. You live each day on that portion of it that God reveals to you. You gather all of it you can, and store it in your inner storage rooms, but the rhema that gives you life each day is the word that becomes real to you today.

The Lord Jesus tells the Holy Spirit to announce to you what you need now. You live by every rhema that goes out of the mouth of God. He has a menu prepared for you each day, and announces it to you. It is up to you whether or not you eat what is on the menu. If you eat it, the menu (blessing) of Jehovah, it makes you rich, and he adds no sorrow with it [Proverbs 10:22]. Every day you have the perfect leadership of the Holy Spirit for that day. You must believe that. You must practice it.

Read John 16:13-15.

The Holy Spirit takes out of the things of Christ, and announces them to you.

Luke 5:5-9

5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.

7 And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: (KJV)

Luke 5:5-9 HB

5 And Simon answering, said to him, Master, working hard all through the night we took not even one, but on your spoken word I will let down the net.

6 And having done this, they shut together a large multitude of fish, and their nets were being torn.

7 And they nodded to their partners, those in the other boat coming to take hold together with them, and they came, and filled both the ships, so that they were sinking.

8 And having seen it, Simon Peter prostrated himself at Jesus' knees, saying,

226 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Go out from me, because I am a sinful man, Lord,

9 Because amazement held him completely, and all the ones with him, over the catch of the fish which they took together;

Many of you have toiled all your life, and feel that you have taken nothing. You feel that you have always come up empty. What you must do is learn how to get rhema from the Lord. You can learn the Principles of Logos and Rhema, live each day by every rhema to you personally that goes out of the mouth of the Lord, at His rhema let down your net, and you will regularly bring up a full net, a full blessing. You will receive beyond what you are able to ask or exercise your mind upon, according to the power supernaturally working in us [Ephesians 3:20].

In Luke 5 Peter was in a bad frame of mind because he had tried all night, and failed. Nevertheless, because the Lord told him directly to do it, he did it. He was gloriously surprised by the results. It will be the same with you. If you will DO what He says to you in your heart [that agrees in principle with the Bible] you will be gloriously surprised by the results. You will have power and abundance to bring salvation to your people.

John 15:7, **If you abide in me, and my spoken words (rhema) abide in you, whatever you will, you will ask, and it will be to you.** Whenever you have received God's revelation on any subject to you personally, you can ask anything you will in that area of His Word, and it will be. When we agree with Him, and He agrees with us - it happens. Whenever you have the personal leadership of the Holy Spirit on a particular thing, you can then by His help make it take place in your life. Note the word **abide**. Jesus said that His rhemas have to abide in you for you to ask what you will, and have it be to you. You can have Scripture verses, the logos, recorded in your mind, and still not receive the answer to your prayers. But when you receive the rhema of the Lord, what you will, you will ask, and it will be. When the Holy Spirit makes the verse real in your spirit, what you ask is done.

As a child I heard about salvation in Jesus. That part of the Word of God became stronger and stronger in me until at age 14 when I took the Lord Jesus. Before age 14 I had the Logos in my mind. At 14 I received the rhema into my heart, and salvation was real. At that moment His rhema on personal salvation entered my heart to abide forever. I abide in the permanent enjoyment of that salvation. I have, from the day I received that rhema had whatever I wanted with reference to personal salvation. I could list many other areas where I personally have experienced His rhema on that subject. It has stayed in me since that time. I never had any more problems in that area.

The same thing happened with reference to my physical health. I was sick much

of my youth. By age 29 I was struck down with arthritis. When I was thirty-nine years of age I received a rhema from the Lord that I need not be sick. The rhema came to me in exactly the manner I have described to you in *The Pastor's Manual*. It all began by a seemingly unimportant, routine event. I was preaching in Glendora, California, as a guest speaker. The pastor and I went to the shopping center for him to pick up some things. He said he was going into the grocery market. I said I would wait for him. I wandered into a health food store, and casually picked up a paper back book on fasting. I bought it to have something to read. In that book I received a rhema from the Lord. For the next several years I read every book on natural health I could find. I read through the entire Bible, every word of it, searching out every passage on health, food, and healing. I saturated my mind with all these truths. I began to fast regularly, several days at a time, and then weeks at a time.

I discovered health. The rhema from God on health entered me. I ask whatever I will on my health and I receive it. My wife and I take God's Word intellectually on the subject of our need. We saturate ourselves with it, cultivate it, make it dominant, until we receive the revelation, the rhema, personally. Then later the material equivalent of that revelation appears in our lives. It is a habitual lifestyle with us.

If you are struggling on any subject, you cannot ask what you will, and it be to you. You have to hear from God on that subject. The promise is in the Bible, but you have to get it in your heart, and let the Holy Spirit make it alive to you. You can have the information on any subject, know it well enough to tell everyone how it is, but until you personally hear from God in your heart on that subject, you cannot do it. A head knowledge by itself will not accomplish it. It must get down into your inner being, and into your daily practice by the power of the Holy Spirit.

Picture yourself as a tea percolator. Putting the dry tea in the top of the percolator is like getting the information in your head. When the heat is turned on, the water begins to boil, and the steamed water begins to percolate through the leaves, the essence of the tea falls down into the container, and you have the results. It is the same with you. Dry information in the mind is necessary, but you need more than dry information. When you plug into God, and turn up the spiritual heat, the Spirit of God begins to steam through your collected thoughts. Reality is filtered out by the Holy Spirit, and appears down deep inside of you. It will look right, sound right, smell right, feel right, and taste right. You will know it in your knower! Let the Holy Spirit begin to fill you with Holy Spirit given rhema on the subject of your need!

You must get the word from the Lord about stopping the thief. The devil is a thief, a destroyer, a devourer, a waster. Most of us receive much, but it is stolen or devoured by the waster. You must put a sword in your hand to stop the thief. For years

228 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

I did not realize how much the devil was stealing from me. Even when I realized the devil was stealing from me I did not know I had the right and power to stop him. You must put a sword in your hand to stop the thief.

Read Ephesians 6:17; Malachi 3:10-11.

James 4:7

7 Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. (KJV)

James 4:7.

Arrange yourselves therefore under God. Stand against the devil, and he will flee from you.

As a child of God you have the right and power to stop the devil from stealing from you. Here are some extremely important points:

Do not pray to God to defeat the devil for you.

I used to pray to God to please stop the devil from working in my life. I discovered that God had defeated the devil. It was now left up to me. I discovered according to Revelation 1:18 [and many other Scriptures] that the Lord Jesus has already defeated the devil. He roars as a lion [1 Peter 1:8], but he is nothing but an old dilapidated, de-fanged, cat. I discovered that the thief was already defeated. The Lord has already **rebuked** the devourer as He said He would - for those who obey the Lord, and bring the tithe. The thief is **rebuked**. He is defeated. I no longer have to allow him to steal from me. All I have to do is resist him, take my stand against him. But I do have to stand against him. God will not do that for me. I learned I could keep the hands of the devil off my property. Someone said, "The devil follows me home every night, and stays all night with me." Another said, "He follows me home, but I have learned to not let him in the house. I make him wait outside the door. But when I get up to go to work, he's standing right there with me, and jumps into the car with me, and troubles me all day."

I discovered:

I discovered the power of the name of Jesus to keep the devil off my property, out of my car, and out of my business. I ordered him off of my property and out of my business in the name of Jesus. When he tries to tell me he has a right to give me trouble, I simply take my stand against him by the righteousness of Christ, and he leaves me alone. When he comes by my house, he knows not to walk on the sidewalk. When he passes my house he leaves the sidewalk, and very quietly goes by out in the middle of the street. Someone said, "I would be afraid to talk like that. I would be

afraid I would make the devil angry at me, and he would do something to just show me he can." I said, "No, friend. I am not afraid. In fact, I say it specifically for his benefit, so he will know exactly what I will not allow."

You cannot defeat the devil in your fleshly pride. You have to get the knowledge of the devil's defeat from the Bible, saturate yourself with it until you get a rhema from the Lord. Then it is real in your own heart. Then, acting under direct orders from the Lord Himself, you order him out of your life, and keep him out by faithful resistance to his every effort to re-enter. You can do this only when you have reached this stage in your actual experience of that portion of the Word of God. The Word of God on that subject becomes a sword in your hand when you know and experience the Holy Scriptures that spell out the exact truth about the defeat of the devil.

Many of you have lived for years with no battles with the devil on the subject of your eternal salvation. Why? Because you know the Bible on that subject, and it has become an abiding revelation [rhema] in your heart. The devil knows he is whipped in your life on that subject. You have a sword in your hand on that subject.

It is the same on other subjects. Once you know what the Bible teaches, experience the revelation of it for real in your heart, you will never have any more struggles in that area. Oh yes, from time to time you will have to remind yourself and the devil, and use the sword in your hand, but the battle over that area is won. The devil attacks, but you resist him, and he is defeated. You can do that only after you put the sword in your hand on that subject. If you receive the rhema of the Lord, cultivate it, and keep it dominant in your life, it will abide forever victorious in your life [1 Peter 1:23{logos},25 {rhema}].

The Bible, the written Logos, abides forever true under all circumstances. It will not fail. The Holy Spirit given Word to you personally, the Rhema, abides forever. His leadership, His direction, His Rhema to meet your personal needs and desires will never fail you. You will always know what to do.

You can take that sword of truth

on that subject,

always defeat the devil,

and always remain victorious

in the Covenant of Plenty [Deut. 8:18].
Section Six – Your Warfare

This section is about your spiritual warfare to establish the kingdom of God in your domain.

Chapter 20 is about the invisible battle that Satan and his demons are waging now to defeat God's children in the earth. The Lord Jesus has already defeated Satan by His life, death, and resurrection.

Chapter 21 gives you instruction on the delegated authority Christ has given you and me to establish His kingdom in the earth in our domain.

Chapter 22 gives specific details about our armor and our warfare against the evil spirits opposing us.

Chapters 23 - 25 show how we lay hold of the power of the Holy Spirit through prayer and the spoken word to pull down Satan's strongholds, and to destroy every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God.

Chapter 26 describes the service God's angels render to us in this warfare.

Chapter 27 explains very clearly how we can establish heaven on earth in our domain.

Since I am a general in the Lord's army, let me exhort you to enter into the battle for the Lord with your whole heart. Many Christians never put on the whole armor of God, so, they cannot fight. They are still sitting at home thinking that they are neutral, not realizing that if they are not for us, they are against us.

Others put on the armor, but all they do is attend parades where they show off their armor to a friendly crowd. It is time that we not only put on the armor, but that we get out and enter the battle. Go to the front lines, and engage the devil and his unclean spirits in battle. The whole armor of God is not just for parades at church. The whole armor of God is given to you to move the devil off of God's territory. Get out there and get the devil's blood on your sword. Thrust him and his demons with the sword of the Lord, and make him move off of the lives and territory that Jesus bought with His precious blood! God bless you.

Chapter 20

THE BATTLE FOR THE PLANET EARTH

OUTLINE

- 1. The invisible battle rages continuously.**
- 2. You can win in your ministry because there is a vast difference between God and the devil.**
 - (1). God is the creator and Satan is a creature.**
 - (2) God is everywhere. Satan can be at only one place at a time.**
 - (3) God is unlimited in authority and power. Satan is limited in authority and power.**
- 3. You and I are at the center of the battle for the world.**
- 4. There are two opposing strategies in the battle.**
 - (1) Satan's strategy is to accuse, condemn, and destroy.**
 - (2) God's strategy is to forgive, justify, and save.**
- 5. What you must believe to win.**
 - (1) You must believe that Satan can do to you only what God permits.**
 - (2) You must believe that God allows what you allow by faith or lack of faith.**
 - (3) You must believe that God loves you and allows only that which is for your good.**
 - (4) You must believe that your redeemer has broken the power of the enemy.**
 - (5) You must believe that God can and will keep you from falling.**
 - (6) You must believe that you will have glorious victory at the last.**
- 6. Some strategies you must follow.**
 - (1) Be conscientious in what you know is right.**
 - (2) Never blame God for your troubles.**

232 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

(3) Do not allow well-meaning friends to contradict the Bible.

(4) Put a bridle on your tongue.

All around us an invisible battle rages, twenty-four hours a day, for this planet and everyone and everything on it.

1. The Invisible Battle Rages Continuously.

You and I see only a very small part of what happens on earth. It is amazing how much of what happens never comes into our conscious thought. People constantly tell you things which you do not hear. If you do not see and hear much of what happens around you in the physical world, just think of all that happens in the spiritual world that you do not see.

Beyond the visible realm there is an invisible battle raging right now for planet earth, for every human on it, and for all the material wealth. That battle is between God and Satan – twenty-four hours a day. Most people are totally unaware of this battle.

This battle is described in Job 1 and 2. God blessed Job. He was a godly and a rich man. In heaven the angels came before God. Satan came also. The Lord asked Satan where he came from and what had he been doing. In verse 7, Satan answered,.. **traveling the earth**. Satan was running back and forth in the earth to control it. Most people are deceived by Satan. He becomes their god, ruins their health, their finances, and their lives. Wherever people know and apply the victory over Satan Jesus purchased on the cross, their lives prosper. If you are to obtain and use the power God wants for you, you must know certain things about God and the devil.

2. You Can Win In Your Ministry Because There Is A Vast Difference Between God And Satan.

(1). God is the creator and Satan is a creature.

God created the angels. He created Lucifer an innocent angel. He led the other angels in worship of God. Lucifer made a free choice to rebel against God. He tried to become God. Instead he became Satan, the Adversary. [See Isaiah 14:12-22 and Ezekiel 28:12-19]

God is the Creator, and Satan is only a creature. Realize the vast difference between the person of God and the person of the devil. When dealing with God you

are dealing with the Almighty Creator of the universe. When dealing with the devil you are dealing with a mere creature. Therefore, know that God is powerful, and the devil is weak.

Understand this. The devil is more powerful than humans without Christ, but Jesus Christ won over the devil. Jesus said, **All authority in heaven and upon earth was given to me** [Mat. 28:18]. Since the Man, Jesus, has all authority in heaven and upon earth, and He has given that authority to us, that leaves no authority for the devil, except what humans allow him.

The Lord Jesus gave every human the authority to believe into Him and to have authority over the devil. If a person refuses to believe, the devil has power over that person. That person has by choice given the devil authority over him. But we who have taken Jesus have His authority within us. In Christ we have authority over the devil. The devil has no authority against us.

(2) God is everywhere at the same time. Satan can be only one place at a time.

We talk about the devil being everywhere, but he is not. His demons are posted throughout the world. Satan travels the earth telling his demons what to do, but he can only be in one place at a time. Demons do not wish to leave their locality. Demons are often passed down from generation to generation in the same place in the same family of those who hate God. Demons look for opportunities to get into your life to destroy you and your resources.

If you know the Word of God, and how to apply it, you do not have to allow that. Demons resist the flow of the Holy Spirit, salvation, healing, and deliverance. Demons resist a person's business. He steals from people constantly. He destroys the economy and finances of a nation or a community if the people allow it. If you fail to use the power of the name of Jesus against demons they will take away what you have, and prevent you from taking what you need.

Resist demons with a specific rebuke in the name of the Lord Jesus. [There is a time to fast and pray to build spiritual power to uproot the strongholds demons have built in people's lives, Matthew 17:21, and there may be times when you have to travail in long prayer to remove demons from people's lives.]

(3). God is unlimited in authority and power. Satan is

limited in authority and power.

God allows Satan's mischief only if you have violated some Scripture or failed to act in faith. Your main weapon against the devil is knowing that he is limited by God's rules and regulations [in the Bible], and using those rules and regulations against him. If you really want to win over the devil you must learn God's rules on how to forbid the devil to operate in your affairs. Satan is limited. We have the victory over the devil through Jesus Christ, Praise the Lord!

3. You And I Are At The Center Of The Battle For The World.

Notice in Job 1:6-12 that Job is the point of contention between God and Satan. God is for Job. The devil is against Job. The battle rages over who shall sit on the throne of Job's heart. Who shall have control and authority over Job's life. Right now, inside of you, there is a battle taking place between God and the devil. The battle is to determine if the devil or the Lord shall sit on the throne of your heart. You are at the center of the battle. God is battling Satan over the throne room of your heart. You cast the deciding vote. If it is to be, it is up to me.

THE ONLY WAY THAT SATAN CAN GET AT GOD IS THROUGH YOU.

Satan is no temptation to God. The devil cannot even open his mouth in God's presence unless God gives Satan permission. The only way the devil can get at God is through a human being. The one key element that Satan must gain control over to rule the earth is the will of man. Your will is the key to all earthly power within your domain. If he is to ruin your ministry, he must get control of your will. God does not take control of your will. He sets you free, and gives you guidance. God enables you with His power to rule yourself.

Gen 1:26-28

26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

28 And God blessed them, and ~~God said to them, Be fruitful,~~ multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and ~~the land in Rome Earth~~ the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (KJV)

Genesis 1:26-28 is the key. HB

26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness, and let them tread over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over the animals, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth.

27 And God created the man in his image; he created him in the image of God; he created them male and female.

28 And God knelt down with goodness to them, and God said to them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the earth, and tread it down; and tread over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over every living thing that creeps upon the earth.

Tread in verse 26. Man is the only creature who **treads**, *radah*, over all else. *Radah* means to tread down and crumble off so you can re-form it for God's glory and your good. Animals do not rule. Only man rules.

Tread in verse 28. The Hebrew is *kabash*, to tread down, to conquer by walking upon. *Radah* and *kabash* are synonyms with *darak*, used of walking in battle and removing the enemy from the land so as to possess it, Num 32:22. All three words mean to walk on the land and conquer animal and plant and all that hinders man's conquering and developing the earth for the good of man and the glory of God.

God gave total authority for this earth to Adam and Eve and to us, their descendants. He gave man freedom of choice and said, "It is yours. Rule it for My glory and your good. I have given you authority. I will not interfere with your authority. I have given you a responsibility. I will never take it away. Regardless of what you do, I will not take it back from you. I have created you in My image. I give you authority over the earth."

The devil deceived Adam and Eve into giving their authority over the earth to him. Jesus Christ came on the cross, defeated the devil, and redeemed the planet earth and everything on it.

But the authority of Jesus to rule the earth can be effective now only in those who believe into the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan is ruling that part of the earth where people are deceived. Satan has authority over them. God has redeemed the earth, and has given the authority back to man through the Man Christ Jesus - for all those who believe.

236 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

In your life Satan's Authority has been broken. You can, by the grace of God, will to will the will of God. It is whether or not you are willing to exercise it. The only thing that is keeping you bound in any area of your life is your will. It is not the power of Jesus that is not able to free you. It is your will that refuses to act in His name. It is not the power of the devil that is holding you. It is your own refusal to use your will in Christ to rule for God. If I take authority in the name of Jesus, Satan's power is broken. I can exercise my authority for the glory of God. God put the power to have victory in the earth in our hearts when we took the Lord Jesus and His Holy Spirit.

I will to will the will of God. I will to obtain my portion. If Satan can freeze your will with guilt, fear, or other blockages, he can win over you. 1 Peter 5:8 says, **Be sober, keep awake, because your adversary *the devil*, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking anyone he may gulp down.** Note it says, AS a roaring lion. He does not have the ability to bite and gulp you down if you refuse him in the name of Jesus. He can only roar.

He has the ability to ROAR, but not to gulp you down if you refuse to let him. When an old lion's teeth are gone he circles his prey. He roars and scares his prey into running. Finally his prey is exhausted, and he can catch it. He is roaring because he is toothless. His power has been broken.

The devil makes a lot of noise because he is toothless. We praise God for the power of Jesus that has broken the devil's power over us. The devil tries to get at God by frightening you. Fear freezes your will. But if you exercise your will the devil cannot get to you. God has placed your will as the key to power in your life.

STRATEGIES IN THE BATTLE

4. There Are Two Opposing Strategies In The Battle.

(1) Satan's main strategy is to accuse, condemn, and destroy.

Those are his three steps. He accuses you. He condemns you. He destroys you. You cannot do your best under a load of guilt. One of three things will happen. You either get your guilt forgiven by the blood of Jesus, or you rationalize it away, or you commit suicide. If you do not learn how to deal with guilt through the forgiveness of the blood of Jesus, you will either spend the rest of your life rationalizing things, or else you will commit suicide. Cancel out all your past mistakes by the blood of Jesus. Make a clean new start now.

(2) God's strategy is to forgive, justify, and save.

In Job 1:8 notice God's declaration about Job.

Job 1:8

8And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? (KJV)

Job 1:18 HB

And Jehovah said to Satan, Have you put your heart on my servant Job, because there is none like him in the earth, a complete, and an upright man, one who fears God, and turns away from evil?

That is God's opinion of Job. God declared Job righteous.

God did not bring up the subject of Job in order to put Job through unexplained trials by Satan. Satan had already set his heart on Job, and God was bringing up the subject because He intended to limit what Satan could do to Job. Because Job did not yet know how to resist the devil with the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God, Eph 6:17, Satan had a right to try Job, Luke 22:31. All God could do was sustain Job until Job learned that you overcome the devil by resting in the righteousness of God instead of your own righteousness, 2 Cor 12:9, and using the Word of God against him, Jms 4:6-8.

If God had desired, He certainly could have found several things wrong with Job. Do you think God could find anything wrong with you? He would not have to look long, would He? But what does God say about you? You are righteous in Jesus Christ. God's business is to justify all those who receive Him.

Look at the devil's business. In verse 9, **Does Job fear God for nothing?** "Job is serving you for what he can get from you. You have blessed him, and made him rich and happy. Take that away, and Job will bless you to your face, but Job will be a hypocrite." The devil accused Job. He was trying to destroy Job. Always remember this, and it will help you settle many problems. If you are genuinely trusting and obeying God, just say, "God's business is to justify me. Satan's business is to accuse me. From which one did this come?" You will know immediately from whom the thought is coming. After you have taken your sins to Jesus, and claimed His forgiveness, Satan comes back and says, "You are still no good, and do not deserve to suc-

ceed.” Where did that come from, God or the devil? You must apply that standard to every thought. God justifies. The devil accuses. You will have victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

5. What You Must Believe To Win.

(1) Satan can do to me only what God allows.

Always remember that. If the devil is attacking, remember it is what God has allowed.

(2) God allows what you allow with your faith or lack of faith.

God will back up any promise of His you are willing to put into effect, and stand to it. But He will not step in, and stop a catastrophe which you have allowed. If you realize your mistake, repent, and make correction, you can reverse what the devil has done to you. That is why God says in

Joel 2:25,

And I will make the years complete to you that the multiplying locust has eaten, the young licking locust, and the ravaging locust, and the devouring locust, my great army which I sent among you.

Have you ever walked into a yard where a gigantic dog leaped at you with his mouth wide open? In mid-air he was jerked back. He was on the end of a chain, but you did not know that. That was frightening. Now, you can stand over on the other side of the yard, and laugh at the dog, because you know he is chained. However if you walk into his territory, you are going to get mangled.

You must learn how to chain the devil out of your territory, and how to stay out of his territory.

Anything under your responsibility is your territory or your domain. You have the right to chain him out of it. When you get into other people’s territory, it is their responsibility. If they allow the devil in their territory, and you have become partner with them in violation of God’s rules, the devil will devour you along with them. That is why the Bible says, **Do not become unequally yoked together with unbelievers** [2

Corinthians 6:14].

Let me tell you plainly why the devil was able to bring the calamity on Job. He allowed fear of circumstances to cause him not to trust God fully, not understanding the righteousness and grace of God.

Read Job 3:25

For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me. (KJV)

Job 3:25 HB

Because the fear I feared has arrived, and that which I feared has come to me.

Job worried about his children. He talked about his worries and fears. He acted upon his worries and fears. His fears became a reality in his life.

Read Job 1:4-5. You see that Job worried instead of trusting God. He did not know that they had sinned. He simply suspicioned that they had. He acted on his suspicions. Many people do this. They suspicion that the situation is bad. They confess that it is bad. They try to prevent it by worrying and talking about it. Do not make arrangements for the devil to steal from you by expressing your fears. Job created his own financial catastrophe by talking about his fears. His thoughts, his words, and his actions brought on his catastrophe. He did not get out of that calamity until he had a revelation-encounter with God that changed his thoughts, his words, and his actions. Forever thereafter he did not speak his fears. He spoke his faith in the righteousness of God.

(3) God loves me, and will allow only that which is for my good.

If you are a genuine child of God [and there are no other kind] God is causing everything that happens to you to work for your good, Rom 8:28. Even the calamities you allow, God is working. God is working to help you see the light, and learn what to do to change. He has planned good things for you. He loves you, and will allow only what is for your good. You must believe that. That was difficult for Job to believe at first, but later he believed.

(4) I know my redeemer has broken the power of the enemy.

240 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Job 19:25

25 For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: (KJV)

Job 19:25 HB

I know by seeing that my redeemer lives, and he will rise at the last day upon the earth;

Job never gave up. He believed that his Redeemer had broken the power of the enemy. At the time he did not know how to obtain that victory over the devil. Even though he was confused about many things, he continued to believe God until he saw how to win over the devil.

(5) I know God can and will keep me from falling.

The big question in the book of Job is not, “Why do the righteous suffer?” The question is, “How is man made righteous, and kept from falling?” When I realize what Job went through and what Job said that he should not have said, I am amazed at the grace of God. God kept him from falling in spite of the way he accused God of mistreating him. I am thankful that I know my God can keep me from falling. Some people say “I know that He can keep you from falling, but will he?” Yes, He said He will. Once saved always saved is true. It is by God’s grace, and not my works. I heard a country preacher from North Carolina say, “I believe in the eternal security of the believer, once saved always saved, so strong, I could swing out over hell on a rotten cornstalk and sing Amazing Grace.”

You must believe that, if you are going to win over the devil. You must believe that the Lord will keep you from falling. You must believe he can and that he will. That does not mean you can go out and sin any way you desire. If a child of God continues to do something displeasing to God, God will discipline that believer until the pain of God’s discipline brings him to repentance. If it does not, God will take him on to heaven where he has to live right. There is a sin unto death which a believer can commit, but you cannot be lost, if you are genuinely saved. God will help you learn anything and everything you need to learn to cooperate with him so He can bless you.

(6) I will have glorious victory at the last.

I may be going through trials now, but God will make it end right. I may be going through torment now, but Bless God, I will win. I will obtain my inheritance on earth and in heaven too. Job went through torment, and lost everything. Later he

received more than he had before. Believe it. Do not quit. Keep on. You will win for the glory of God.

6. Some Strategies You Must Follow.

(1) Be conscientious in what you know is right.

Job was sincere. He was doing all he knew to do. He was sincerely wrong about some things, but he was sincere and genuine. He continued until the truth of God on that subject was revealed to him. When he saw the truth, he immediately changed his thoughts, his words, and his actions. When he changed he became twice as wealthy as he was before. Do what you know is right. God will bless you. What you do not know God will reveal to you, if you continue to search His Word, and listen to the Holy Spirit.

(2). Never blame God for your troubles.

In Job 1:21-22 Job thought God was the One who took away his family, his riches, and health. He did not think God acted foolishly by doing so, but he still believed that God did it. In the sense that God allowed it God did take them away, but God was not to blame. At that point Job did not know that he himself was to blame. He screamed at God and to others that God had falsely accused him, and would not answer him. He later learned differently. When God did answer Job, he discovered it was not at all like he thought.

Do not ever blame God for your troubles. I cause my problems by deliberate disobedience or through ignorance, or it is an outright attack of the devil. Persecution for righteousness comes from the attacks of the devil. You have to learn to discern if you caused this by disobedience or ignorance, or is this persecution from the devil because you have done God's righteousness.

(3) Do not allow well-meaning friends to contradict the Bible.

The book of Job is a series of speeches between Job and friends that came to counsel him. They were Eliphaz, Bildad, and Zophar [Job 2:11]. They told him that he had committed some great moral sin to cause this calamity. Job had done wrong by speaking his fears, but he certainly had not committed any immorality. He did not

242 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

know what he had done. His friends did not know what he had done wrong, but they accused him anyway. They were self righteous, proud, and ignorant of God's ways.

Be extremely cautious about people who come to you uninvited to tell you what is wrong with you. Do not let well-meaning friends pour guilt and unwanted advice on you. Do not allow them to contradict the Bible.

(4) Put a bridle on your own tongue.

Speak only what the Bible Speaks. God said to Job, "Job, who is this who is speaking things that he knows nothing about?" [Job 38:2.]. Job became silent. Then Job said, "Lord, I have said that which I knew not. I am sorry Lord. I talked when I should have been listening. God forgive me." This is the major cause of failure - talking about people and things you know little or nothing about. Be conscientiously honest in all that you do. Never blame God for your troubles. Do not allow well-meaning friends to tell you what is wrong with you, and give you bad advice. Put a bridle on your tongue. If you do these things you will conquer your part of the earth for the Lord. You will have a part in helping the Lord reclaim the earth now and when he comes. I am looking forward to ruling this earth with Him when He comes!

Chapter 21

EXERCISING DELEGATED AUTHORITY

OUTLINE

Mat 28:18

Introduction

- (1) The man Jesus has all authority.**
- (2) Spirit always has authority over matter.**
- (3) Spiritual authority is the highest authority in the world.**

- 1. The ultimate question is who shall have authority.**
- 2. No one is to rule until he has experienced authority.**
- 3. Our most important responsibility is to learn to obey God by means of His delegated authorities.**
- 4. You must know authority in the name of Jesus.**
- 5. You must know the meaning of authority.**
 - (1) Authority is the power to effectively control all things under your responsibility.**
 - (2) Authority is freedom of choice.**
 - (3) Authority is the power to resist and drive away the bad.**
 - (4) Authority is the power to receive and use the good.**

INTRODUCTION

(1) The man Jesus has all authority.

I do not believe God wants anybody defeated except the devil and his demons. God wants all lost people saved and victorious. God wants his people to have all

244 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Matt 28:18

18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. (KJV)

Matthew 28:18 HB

Jesus talked with them, saying, All authority was given to me in heaven and upon earth.

The word authority in Greek is *exousia*. It is our word executive. An executive is one who has authority delegated to him to manage for someone else.

God the Father gave all authority to the Man Jesus. He lived a perfect life, died on the cross, and rose from the dead. He received from God the Father all executive authority to manage all things in heaven and in earth for the Father.

(2) Spirit always has power over matter.

God Who is Spirit brought matter into existence. The greatest and highest authority in the universe is spiritual, not material. That is why money can not buy true power. Spirit is over money. Spirit is over flesh. Spirit is over soul. That is why God's Spirit is more powerful than the human mind. People have their minds stirred. They make tremendous decisions, but they do not carry them out. Why? Because their spirit has not been moved to follow God. You must get God's words in your spirit, and learn to use spiritual power.

(3) Spiritual authority is the highest authority in the world.

God wants you to have spiritual authority. Jesus said, All authority has been given to me in heaven and upon earth. Here, I give it to you. Go and take authority in my name. Win people to salvation. Bring peace to the troubled mind. Bring health to the sick. Bring abundance to the poor." We have spiritual authority over every area in the world because Spirit is over matter.

1. THE ULTIMATE QUESTION IS WHO SHALL HAVE AUTHORITY.

The ultimate question is who shall have authority? God or the devil. God is THE authority. The devil has been fighting Him since as Lucifer he decided to rebel in

heaven and was thrown out. God placed the earth under the rulership of man. Man lost it. The Son of God as a Man came and redeemed man and the earth. Jesus has now by His grace put us back in authority - under Him.

Now there is freedom of choice. We can choose to submit to God, let Him place us in control, or be deceived, and the devil takes control. God has placed you in authority, under Christ, over everything in your life. If it is to be, it is up to me

2. NO ONE IS TO RULE UNTIL HE HAS EXPERIENCED AUTHORITY.

Many people want authority. They want authority over people and wealth. This is a God ordained ambition. But many people are not ready to exercise authority over people and wealth, because they have not experienced authority. Many people that want authority do not know what to do with it.

You are not ready to have authority over people and wealth until your authority has been crushed. You must first experience His authority. Your human authority must be overturned, crushed, broken, and shattered before you know how to exercise the delegated authority of the Lord Jesus. Once you have come to know through experience the authority of God Almighty, you are very cautious about what you want and what you do with it when you get it.

Let me explain to you what I mean by the words, "the over-turning of your authority," by using the conversion of Saint Paul. On the road to Damascus Saul thought, "I have authority. I have power. I will stop these Christians. I-I-I-I..."

He spoke out of his own selfish opinion. When he came head to head with God's authority Saul was crushed. He became like an humble child. "Lord, what do you will that I do?" Saul would have never known how to bring salvation and blessings to people if his own authority had not been overturned by the Lord.

From that day forward Saul was never concerned about the authority he had. He was always concerned about the authority God had over him. It was not what Saul could do, but what God wanted done. You will never, never, never, never have the power of God in your life until your own authority has been crushed. It must be no longer what I want, but what God wants. You must experience authority. When God puts you in a position of responsibility, ruling over people, abundance, and circumstances, you will rule very cautiously. You will feel the heavy hand of God on your shoulder. You know if you make one step out of line, God will put you in your place. It

is not a matter of what I am going to do. It is what God has told me that I must do. Therefore I am not so much conscious of the authority that I have, as I am conscious of His authority over me. I hope you will learn that with all your heart. It is the secret of success with money, people, yourself, everything, and everyone.

3. OUR MOST IMPORTANT RESPONSIBILITY IS TO LEARN TO OBEY GOD BY MEANS OF HIS DELEGATED AUTHORITY.

From the day you are born in this world till you leave this world you are under God's ordained, delegated authorities. As a child you were under your parents' authority. When you became grown and under your own authority, you were still under other authorities. You are under the authority of the government, good or bad. On the street you are under the authority of the policeman. On the bus you are under the authority of the bus driver. In the store you are under the authority of the store owner and manager. In someone's home you are under their authority. In the church you are under the pastor's authority. Even if you are the pastor, when you are in another pastor's church, you are under that pastor's authority.

Wherever you go, you are under some human's authority, and they are under God's authority. They are God's delegated authorities in that area to maintain order in that area. I know that many of these authorities are corrupt and evil, but it is still better than total chaos.

Wherever you go, your first responsibility is to discover who is in authority there, and immediately place yourself under that authority.

4. YOU MUST KNOW THE POWER IN THE NAME OF JESUS.

Review a moment. You must understand that the burning question everywhere in the universe is,

First, Who shall have authority, God or the devil?

Second, you are not prepared to rule until you have experienced God's authority.

Third, your most important responsibility is to learn to obey God under His delegated authorities.

Fourth, you must know the power that is in the name of Jesus.

Acts 19:10-16

10 And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

13 Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

(KJV)

Acts 19: 10-16 HB

10 And this continued over two years, so that all those residing in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 Also God did works of power, absolutely not normally attained, through the hands of Paul;

12 And therefore head towels or aprons were carried from his body upon the weak, and the diseases were released from them, and the evil spirits went out from them.

13 And some of the wandering Jews, exorcists, undertook to name over them having evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We put you under oath to Jesus whom Paul preaches.

14 And some seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish head priest, were doing *this*.

15 And the evil spirit answering, said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are you?

16 And the man in whom was the evil spirit leaping upon them, and oppressing them, was strong against them, so that they fled out of the house naked and wounded.

17 And this became known to all, both Jews and Greeks residing at Ephesus,

248 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

and fear seized upon them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

If you want authority to perform your ministry you must learn what is in the name of Jesus. You can go around flippantly, and carelessly saying “In the name of Jesus” I do thus and so. It will not work. You must know Him personally and what is in His name. You must bury your heart in the Word of God, and find out who Jesus is, instead of playing around. You must get acquainted with Him throughout the entire Bible until you know Him intimately. Then you can walk out and say, “I take authority to perform my ministry in the Name of Jesus because I know from the Word of God and personal experience that that name has power. The power to fulfill your ministry will flow in your direction because you have experienced Him and His authority is in your heart.

Matt 18:19

19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.
(KJV)

Matthew 18:19 HB

Again, Amen, I say to you that, If two of you will agree upon the earth about any matter whatever they will ask, it will be to them alongside of my Father in heaven.

John 14:13-14

13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. (KJV)

John 14:13-14 HB

13 And whatever you may ask in my name, that I will do, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If you will ask anything in my name, I will do it.

To give someone the power of attorney means that you have signed a document giving that person the power to sign papers in your name, write checks in your name, spend your money in your name. This person with that authorization can do anything he pleases. You would not have trusted him with it if you did not have faith in him. His signature on any document is the same as yours. Jesus said, “I give you the power to sign my name wherever you will.” Bless God, that is a lot of trust. “I give you authority wherever you need to minister to sign my name, and receive it. I give you the power of attorney to act on my behalf.” If you ever discover and start exercising the authority that is in the name of Jesus, He has delegated to you, the devil knows he is defeated on the spot. He might as well go whimpering out the door now because he has lost the battle. The devil is not the one which gives wealth, even to lost people. The devil

Exercising Delegated Authority

destroys ministry every way he can. Once you learn the power to produce and exercise authority in your ministry that is in the name of Jesus, the devil has to back off. He is defeated, and knows it. When you know it, and exercise it, he leaves you alone. You can only exercise the power of the name of Jesus as you experience the nature of His name. Jesus is the son of God, the perfect Man, the Lamb of God Who died upon the cross, the Man Who rose from the dead, the Mediator seated at the right hand of the Father, made Lord of all. Exercise that spiritual authority.

5. YOU MUST KNOW THE MEANING OF AUTHORITY.

(1) AUTHORITY IS THE POWER TO EFFECTIVELY CONTROL ALL THINGS UNDER YOUR RESPONSIBILITY.

Notice my statement says, **all things**. The **all things** is limited by **under your authority**. Is Russia under your authority? Then why not just turn that over to God? Pray about it, and turn it over to God. Is the threat of war in the Middle East under your control? Then why not just turn that over to God? There is nothing you can do about it anyway, but pray. It is not your responsibility. All you can do is pray. If the average person would keep his mouth closed about things that are not his responsibility there sure would be a lot less wasted time and effort. I am not minimizing the power of prayer, nor your world wide responsibility. However, you must stop worrying and fretting over things that are not your responsibility. Focus on your responsibility. The authority God has given you is sufficiently powerful to handle anything within your responsibility. If it is not your responsibility, do not focus on it. If people would quit worrying about things that are not their responsibility it would eliminate ninety percent of all worry.

Be concerned about those things that are under your responsibility, and take authority in the name of Jesus. Start controlling those things that pertain to your life by the power of Jesus. Turn the rest of it over to God.

Limit your focus to your domain.

That is spiritual authority.

(2) AUTHORITY IS FREEDOM OF CHOICE.

God has given us the capacity of freedom of choice. He gave Adam and Eve that freedom of choice. They threw it away, and immediately became enslaved by the devil. The Lord Jesus purchased for us the freedom to choose Him, and all His riches. You are now free to choose all the good treasures in Christ Jesus. You are free to choose the promises of God in the Bible on all subjects.

Exercising authority is exercising choices.

It is your choice - weakness or power, poverty or wealth. Choose.

(3) AUTHORITY IS THE POWER TO RESIST AND DRIVE AWAY THE BAD.

Claim Luke 10:19 to resist and drive away the bad. When I say the “bad” I mean the devil and everything that is evil.

Luke 10:19

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. (KJV)

Luke 10:19 HB

Behold, I have given to you the authority to trample on snakes and scorpions, and over all the power of the one hating you, and absolutely not one thing will by any means do unrighteousness to you.

Claim right now that nothing can by any means do unrighteously to you. You cannot do something unrighteous to me unless I let you. The devil cannot work unrighteousness against me unless I let him. People cannot hurt me unless I allow them. My wife, husband, children, employer, employees, friends or enemies cannot do anything that will make me unrighteous or affect my righteous status, or do damage to me that the righteousness of God in me cannot resist and overcome. Economic circumstances cannot hurt me unless I allow it. God said, **Not one thing will by any means do unrighteousness to you.** Therefore, spiritual authority is the power to resist and drive away the bad, so that it cannot damage me. I have the authority, the choice, in the name of Jesus, to put poverty, lack, failure, financial calamities out of my life. I exercise that authoritative choice!

(4) AUTHORITY IS THE POWER TO RECEIVE AND USE THE GOOD.

Psalm 84:11 says that I have the power to receive and use the good.

Ps 84:11

11 For the LORD God is a sun and shield: the LORD will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly. (KJV)

Psa 84:11 HB

Because Jehovah God *is* a sun and shield; Jehovah will give grace and heavy glory; he will not withhold good from them who walk in completeness.

He will not withhold good from them who walk in completeness! That means I have the power and authority to receive every good thing, and God has declared the fulfillment of my ministry to be **good**.

Have you ever tried to give a child something he did not want to take? I watched my daughter and son-in-law try to give my granddaughter a pill the other day. They gave Nikki that pill, and said, "Here, take it." She just looked at them. The second child is supposed to be the humble child. It does not always work out that way. She would not take it. They insisted. My daughter put it in her hand. She would not do anything with it. Eventually my daughter took her hand, and put it in Nikki's mouth. She stood there, and held it. They put water in her mouth. She drank the water, but the pill did not go down. They kept insisting, "Nikki, you take that pill!" She did not argue. She did not do anything. She just would not take it. She would not take the pill. My son-in-law put it way back in her throat, and said, "You drink this water." She drank the water, but the pill was back on the end of her tongue. It just would not go down. Eventually I saw him take his finger, and push it down her throat and that was the last we saw of the pill! It went down. She took it whether she wanted it or not. Now God is not going to take it like a pill and cram it down you. You must take it. In fact the Bible uses the word **take**. All of God's treasures are there for the taking, but you have to take them. He has given you the capacity to take them. Take them from God! Authority is the power to take and use what God wants to give you. There is no need to go around poverty stricken when God's hands are full. He wants you to take them by the power of His authority, by the name of Jesus Christ our Lord. God delights to give His children His treasures. Get in a delightfully receiving frame of mine!

Chapter 22

SPIRITUAL WARFARE

OUTLINE

Ephesians 6:10-11

- 1. The Lord Jesus gave you power over Satan.**
- 2. Jesus has given us power to throw out demons.**
- 3. You must know Jesus in righteousness and power to throw out evil spirits.**
- 4. You must put on the whole armor of God.**
- 5. Fast and pray to release the power of Christ within you.**
- 6. Demons enter people when they are invited in.**
- 7. Demons enter people when they are weak and unprotected.**
- 8. Christian can have demons.**
- 9. Babies and children receive demons when not protected by those over them.**
- 10. Protect your children by the following actions.**
 - (1) Exercise firm loving discipline over them as described in the Bible.**
 - (2) Plead the blood of Jesus and pray Bible verses over them.**
 - (3) Obey the Word of God, and teach them to obey the Word of God.**
 - (4) Ask forgiveness and make a new start when you fail.**
 - (5) Ask to counsel with your pastor if you need help in dealing with your children.**
- 11. To become stronger and more skilled in throwing out demons do the following.**
 - (1) Read in the Gospels and Acts how Jesus and the apostles dealt with demons.**
 - (2) Read the letters of instruction of Paul, James, Peter, John, and Jude.**
 - (3) Read good books by those who have experience in dealing with demons.**
 - (4) Receive training on how to deal with demons from those who have experience.**
- 12. Overcome the devil and his demons by doing the following.**

- (1) **Plead the blood of Jesus against Satan and his demons.**
- (2) **Tell demons that you are righteous in Christ, and acting as Christ's representative.**
- (3) **Love God more than you love yourself.**

Prayer to throw out evil spirits.

Ephesians 6:10-11.

As pastor of your congregation, and as an individual believer, you are engaged in spiritual warfare against Satan and his demons, and for the Lord Jesus Christ.

I will list for you some extremely important principles from God's Word that you must know and practice.

1. The Lord Jesus gave you power over Satan.

Jesus defeated the devil in the Temptation [Matthew 4:1-11], in His life [John 14:30], and in His death on the cross [Revelation 1:18]. When He rose from the dead, and ascended to the right hand of the Father, He stripped the demons of their power [Colossians 2:14-15]. In His death and resurrection Jesus forever destroyed the devil's power over us [Hebrews 2:14-15]. He gave this authority over the devil to His disciples when He was here in earth, and we still have that authority today [Luke 10:17-21]. When we resist the devil he has to flee from us [James 4:7].

2. Jesus has given us power to cast out demons.

He gave authority over all unclean spirits to His disciples when He sent them out to minister [Matthew 10:1,8]. The seventy had power to throw out evil spirits [Luke 10:17]. Every believer has the power to throw out evil spirits if he or she will only use it [Mark 16:17]. The Lord Jesus Who is within us is greater than all the demons in the world [1 John 4:4].

3. You must know Jesus in righteousness and power to throw out evil spirits.

In Acts 19:13-20 some Jewish exorcists tried to throw out evil spirits by using the words, **We put you under oath to Jesus whom Paul preaches.** They did not know Jesus themselves. They tried to use the name of Jesus without knowing Jesus. The demons in the man leaped on them, and beat them severely. They ran out of the house wounded and naked, because the demonized man tore off their clothes. There is no magic in the name of Jesus. The power is in personally knowing Jesus, and being in

4. You must put on the whole armor of God.

You should take Ephesians 6:10-19, and saturate yourself with the armor of God. You should put on the whole armor of God, and regularly check yourself to be sure the armor is always in place.

Realize this: the different parts of the armor are different aspects of the Person and Character of the Lord Jesus. Your girdle of truth is the Lord Jesus. He is the truth [John 14:6]. The breastplate of righteousness is the Lord Jesus. He is our righteousness [1 Corinthians 1:30]. The shoes of the preparation of the gospel of peace is Jesus. Jesus is our Gospel of Peace [1 Corinthians 15:1-4]. Our shield of faith is the Lord Jesus. Jesus is our faith [Galatians 2:20]. Our helmet of salvation is the Lord Jesus. Jesus is our salvation [Hebrews 5:9]. The sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God is the Lord Jesus. Jesus is the Word [John 1:1].

Therefore, putting on the whole armor of God, means putting on the totality of Jesus Christ our Lord. If we put on Christ, we make no provision for the devil and the lusts of the flesh [Romans 13:14]. As long as you are clothed in the total Person of the Lord Jesus, you can attack the devil, and he will flee from you. The reason is that since you are clothed in Christ, the devil sees Christ instead of you, and he runs from Christ. Praise God for the victory.

5. Fast and pray to release the Power of Christ within you.

When Jesus and the three disciples came down from the Mount of Transfiguration, the other disciples had tried and failed to throw an unclean spirit out of a father's son. After Jesus had thrown out the evil spirit, His disciples asked Him why they could not throw him out.

Matt 17:20-21

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.
(KJV)

Matthew 17:20-21 HB

20 Jesus said, Because of your unbelief; because, Amen, I say to you, If you have faith as a grain of mustard, you will speak to this mountain, Change places

from here to there, and it will change places, and absolutely nothing will be without power to you.

21 **But this kind absolutely does not go out except in prayer and fasting.**

Their faith was not strong enough to throw the demon out because they had not exercised enough spiritually through fasting and prayer to build up their faith to that point. It is the same with you and me. We have Jesus' faith within us, but the power of that faith cannot be released unless we are in complete harmony with that faith by fasting and prayer.

6. Demons enter people when they are invited in.

Some people have chosen to worship the devil, and have deliberately invited the evil spirits to come into them. When people do this, demons readily come in and take over that person.

The one thing that demons must get control of to enter is the human will. When people willfully open their hearts and bodies to the devil, he sends in his demons to control that person. You cannot throw these evil spirits out unless the person who is demonized wants to be delivered. Your only weapon is to pray for the person, and bind the demons' activities within that person, until the Holy Spirit gives them a desire to be delivered from his or her demons. Once the person wants to be delivered, then you can minister deliverance to that person.

7. Demons enter people when they become weak and unprotected.

Many people have demons who did not deliberately invite the demons to come in. Many received demons without realizing that the demons came in. The evil spirits took advantage of a weak moment, and entered by deception. These demons do not wish to be made known. They desire to control that person's life by deception. These people can be delivered only when they realize they have demons, and want to be delivered. The pastor needs to become skilled in detecting the presence of demons, and then very tenderly show that person how the demon has deceived them, and how they can be delivered.

8. Christians can have demons.

Christians cannot be **possessed** by demons, because the Lord owns all Christians, but Christians can have demons. The Bible in the original languages never uses the term demon possession. This is an invention of the translators of the Bible. The

Greek original language has demonized, which means to be exercised by a demon, not possessed by a demon. Demons can deceive a Christian in some area of his life, and enter that area of the believer's life. Demons enter when a believer gives ground to the devil in a weak moment [Ephesians 4:27]. In Luke 13:16 we find a daughter of Abraham, a true child of God, bound by an evil spirit of sickness. In a weak moment the spirit of sickness came in, and refused to leave. For eighteen years she was too weak to make that spirit of sickness leave. In the presence of Jesus she received courage to be healed.

Many children of God have become weak in body and mind. They began to take prescription drugs for sickness and pain. Then they became dependent on the drugs, and both the spirit of sickness and drugs refused to leave. With others it is alcohol. With others it is lusts. Many children of God struggle with many different kinds of demons that bind them in various areas of their lives. It is the pastor's responsibility to show them their bondage, to show them that Christ has won the victory for them, and minister deliverance to them from all these bondages in their lives.

9. Babies and children receive demons when not protected by their parents.

In Mark 9 is the story of the epileptic boy that the disciples failed to heal while Jesus and the three disciples were in the Mount of Transfiguration. In Mark 9:21 Jesus asked the father of the boy when this demon of sickness came upon him, and the man answered, as a child. The demon of sickness came into this young man when he was a small child. The story does not tell us how this happened, nor how the parents failed to exercise authority to keep out this sickness.

The parents or guardians are a child's protection the Lord has placed over him. If the parents fail to exercise spiritual and physical authority over the child, the devil moves in to take advantage of a helpless child. Let me further describe this to you so that you can better understand it. If parents do not physically feed a baby the baby will grow weak. If the baby is old enough to crawl or even walk, he may find some food on his own, but it will not be the right kind nor will it be enough. Eventually the child will starve to death or at least become extremely ill. If the child is old enough to walk and run, and the parents exercise no control over the child, soon the child will be going anywhere and everywhere. Soon he will be stealing. With no one to control him he may soon be run over by an automobile, or killed by a gang. He may be kidnapped by those who use and abuse children sexually. The child cannot protect himself. He is not old enough or wise enough.

Most parents protect their children physically by feeding them, and controlling where they go and what they do, but many parents do not know they have to exercise spiritual authority over their children to protect them from the devil. The parents allow their children to watch evil movies, and play evil video games. They allow their children to read pornographic books. Many parents do not know how to protect their children from the curses that people cast on others in many of the pagan religions around the world. They do not know how to protect their children from drugs, alcohol, gambling, and gangs that exist in most communities.

You must take authority over the devil by the power of the name and the blood of Jesus, and bind the devil and his demons away from your children. As your children become old enough to understand, you must teach them how to bind the evil spirits away from their lives by the Holy Scriptures.

10. Protect your children by doing the following.

(1) Exercise firm loving discipline and control over them as described in chapter six of this *Manual*.

(2) Plead the blood of Jesus over them, and pray Bible verses over them in your private prayers, and in family prayers with them.

(3) Obey the Word of God, and teach them to obey the Word of God.

(4) Ask forgiveness when you fail, and make a new start for the Lord.

(5) The parents and children should ask the pastor to counsel them about defeating the attacks of demons. Ask the pastor to lay hands on both the parents and children to remove the demons from their lives. Pastor you must teach your people to do this.

11. To become stronger and more skilled in throwing demons out of the lives of your people, and the lost people in your community:

(1) Read the stories in Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, and Acts of how Jesus and the apostles threw out evil spirits.

(2) Read the teachings of the letters of Paul, James, Peter, John, and

258 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Jude to see the victory Christ has given us over Satan and his demons.

(3) Read good books written by those whom God has given special power in throwing out evil spirits.

(4) Receive personal training from the powerful ministers available to you.

Finally:

Never be afraid of the devil nor any of his evil spirits. They are totally defeated by the Lord Jesus, and you have power over them through the name of Jesus. They will come at you sometimes like a roaring lion to frighten you. Remember that fear is the devil's greatest weapon against you. Use the power of the name of Jesus against him, and he will be nothing more than a whining kitten.

The following Scripture describes what will yet take place at the beginning of the Great Tribulation, but it does give us the principles by which we win over the devil now.

Rev 12:7-12

7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels,

8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. (KJV)

Revelation 12:7-12 HB

7 And there was caused to be war in heaven; Michael and his *heavenly* messengers were at war against the dragon, and the dragon was at war and his *evil spirit* messengers,

8 And they absolutely did not have strength, and absolutely no place was found for them any more in heaven.

9 **And the great dragon was thrown - the original snake, being called Devil, and Satan, the one leading the entire inhabited earth astray - he was thrown into the earth, and his *evil* messengers were thrown with him.**

10 **And I heard a loud voice saying in the heaven, Now salvation is caused to be, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers is thrown down, the one formally charging them before the face of our God day and night. Job 1:6; Zech 4:3ff; Luk 22:31**

11 **And they conquered him through the blood of the Lamb, and through the word of their witness, and they absolutely did not love their souls unto death.**

12 **Therefore be in a good frame of mind, the heavens, and those tabernacling in them; woe to those housed in the earth and the sea, because the devil came down to you, having great hard breathing, seeing that he has a short time.**

12. Overcome the devil and his demons:

(1) By pleading the blood of Jesus against them.

(2) By testifying before them that you are righteous in Christ, and are acting as Jesus' representative in the authority of His name.

(3) By loving God more than you love life itself.

Prayer To Throw Out Evil Spirits

“I plead the blood of Jesus against all of you unclean spirits in this man, and I command you in the name of Jesus to come out. I am the representative of the Lord Jesus Christ. I am righteous in Him. Jesus gave me authority over you, and you have to obey me. You have no right to be in this man. I plead the blood of Jesus over Him, and command you to leave now. “

Lead the man in a prayer to ask God to forgive him of his sins. Lead him to tell God that he is forgiving all those who have sinned against him. Lead him to repeat the words that you used to command the evil spirits to leave. Then lead him to commit himself to the Lord to be saved, if he is not, or to renew his commitment to the Lord if he is already saved. Finally, praise the Lord for his or her deliverance. Praise the Lord!

Chapter 23

THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

OUTLINE

Acts 1:8

Introduction

Words used to describe the experience of the Holy Spirit.

- 1. The Holy Spirit is the power of God.**
- 2. How to take the baptism of the Holy Spirit.**
- 3. Prayer to receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit.**
- 4. The evidence that you have received the baptism of the Holy Spirit.**

Acts 1:8

8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. (KJV)

Acts 1:8 HB

But you will take power, the Holy Spirit coming upon you, and you shall be witnesses to me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and Samaria, and until the last *place* on earth.

Introduction

Jesus promised His disciples, You will take POWER, the Holy Spirit coming upon you. There is no power until the Holy Spirit comes upon you.

The Holy Spirit was already a resident in the apostles' hearts. They received the Holy Spirit from Jesus after His resurrection, and before His ascension.

John 20:22

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: (KJV)

John 20:22 HB

And having said this, he breathed on them, and says to them, Take the Holy Spirit.

Jesus gave them the Holy Spirit to live inside of them after He rose from the dead. They had the Holy Spirit within them before Pentecost, just as all believers have the Holy Spirit within them when they get saved. But the Holy Spirit did not come upon them in power until the Day of Pentecost.

So it is with you. If you have genuinely been born from above, you have the Holy Spirit within you. He lives inside of you to give you eternal life. But after you are saved, you must receive Him in power.

This experience is called **baptized in the Holy Spirit** in Acts 1:5. In Acts 1:8, Jesus said, **But you will take power, the Holy Spirit coming upon you.** The same experience is called **filled** with the Holy Spirit in Acts 2:4. In Acts 2:17-18 the Holy Spirit is **poured out upon** them. The experience is called **the promise of the Holy Spirit** in Acts 2:33. In Acts 2:38 it is called **the gift of the Holy Spirit.** In Acts 4:8 this continuing experience is called **filled** with the Holy Spirit. In Acts 4:31 those who were already baptized with the Holy Spirit were filled again with the Holy Spirit. Believers who have received the baptism of the Holy Spirit are to remain **full** of the Holy Spirit. Acts 6:3, **Therefore, brothers, look for seven men of you, witnesses, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may place over this need.** Stephen remained **full** of the Holy Spirit and faith, Acts 6:5. When Stephen finished his message, just before he died, he was still **full** of the Holy Spirit, Acts 7:55.

In Acts 8:15, they prayed for the Samaritan believers that they might **take** the Holy Spirit, **Because he had absolutely not yet seized upon them,** Acts 8:16. When the apostles laid hands on them the Samaritans **took** the Holy Spirit. Saint Paul was **filled** with the Holy Spirit when Ananias laid hands on him, Acts 9:17. Acts 10:38 says that Jesus of Nazareth was **anointed** with the Holy Spirit. In Acts 10:44 as Peter preached to the Gentiles in the house of Cornelias, the Holy Spirit **seized upon** them. They were born from above and filled with the Holy Spirit in the same experience. The **gift** of the Holy Spirit was **poured out** on them, Acts 10:45. Peter explained that they had **taken** the Holy Spirit, Acts 10:47. In Acts 11:15-16 when Peter goes to Jerusalem and tells the apostles what happened, he said the Holy Spirit **seized upon** them. He then explained that it was a fulfillment of Jesus' words, Acts 11:16, [see Acts 1:5] **John indeed baptized with water, but you will be baptized in the Holy Spirit**

262 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus
absolutely not many days after. Read Acts 11:24. 13:9. 13:52. 15:8. 19:2. 19:6.

Some Christians today prefer to use one term. Another group prefers to use another term. Do not argue over terms. We must not argue over the power of the Holy Spirit. Our first concern is to be sure we have His power in our lives.

1. The Holy Spirit is The Power of God.

The first truth I want to give you is that the Holy Spirit is the power of God. God's power comes to you through His Holy Spirit. You must be empowered with the Holy Spirit.

Jesus is our pattern in everything. You and I must be like Jesus. The power in His life was the Holy Spirit. When Jesus was baptized the Holy Spirit descended upon Him in the form of a dove. Immediately He received power to battle Satan in the temptations [Luke 3:22. 4:1-13]. After the temptations Jesus returned in the power of the Holy Spirit [4:14]. In the synagogue in Nazareth He read Isaiah 61 to announce the words, Luke 4:18, **The Spirit of *the* Lord is upon me; therefore he anointed me to announce the good news....** God the Father anointed Jesus with the Holy Spirit. See Acts 4:27, and 10:38.

I will not list all the other references to show how Jesus ministered in the power of the Holy Spirit. It will be a great blessing to you if you will search out all verses in the Gospels which describe the power of the Holy Spirit on Jesus. We read in Hebrews 9:14, **Christ, who through *the* eternal Spirit offered himself unblemished to God....**

Everything Jesus did, He did it in the power of the Holy Spirit. He lived, died, and God raised Him from the dead, so He could pour forth His Holy Spirit upon us. That is the great significance of this age. We live in the age of the Holy Spirit. A Man, Jesus, came. He lived the perfect law of God in His life because He was filled with the Holy Spirit. He was anointed with the Holy Spirit. That is why He is called Christ. Messiah in Hebrew, and Christ in Greek, mean, the Anointed One, anointed with the Holy Spirit. That is why we are called Christians. We are Anointed Ones. We are anointed with the Holy Spirit like Jesus. We have taken Jesus Christ within us. We now have the same anointing of the Holy Spirit upon us.

I am praying that you will understand this. You must have the anointing of the Holy Spirit upon you to have the power of God. You must have His power to fulfill His ministry in your life. The Holy Spirit is the power of God.

2. How To Take The Baptism Of The Holy Spirit

You take the baptism of the Holy Spirit the same way you took Jesus. You confess with your mouth, and believe in your heart. If you will study all the Scriptures in the Acts you will see that believers took the fullness of the Holy Spirit in different ways. On the day of Pentecost they were praying. Suddenly the Holy Spirit seized upon them. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit. So, someone might say you have to pray for a long time and the Holy Spirit will seize you. In Acts 2:38 Peter commanded them to be baptized in water and take the gift of the Holy Spirit. So, someone else will say that you must be baptized in water to take the Holy Spirit. In Samaria in Acts 8:17 they did not take the Holy Spirit until the apostles laid hands on them. So, someone will say that you must have hands laid on you by apostles to take the Holy Spirit. In Acts 10:44 Peter was preaching a great sermon when the Holy Spirit seized upon them. So, someone will say that you must be listening to a great sermon to take the Holy Spirit.

Simon Magus made the mistake of thinking that if he paid enough money he could make the Holy Spirit go anywhere he laid his hands. Do not make the same mistake. You cannot make certain rules that one way is the only way the Holy Spirit is poured out upon believers. The truth is that believers take the baptism of the Holy Spirit whenever and wherever they believe to take Him in power. I took the baptism of the Holy Spirit at age 18 in my ordination service before they laid hands on me.

If you see the truth of Holy Scripture, and if you want to take the baptism of the Holy Spirit, you can do so now. Simply confess the Holy Spirit with your mouth, and believe Him in your heart. You will immediately be baptized with the Holy Spirit.

Prayer To Receive The Baptism Or Fullness Of The Holy Spirit

You can pray a prayer like this [or pray whatever prayer you feel led to pray]:

Father, in the name of Jesus, I am Your child.

Jesus lived, died, and rose again, to give me the power of the Holy Spirit.

Cleanse me with the blood of Jesus, so I will be a clean vessel for the mighty filling of the Holy Spirit.

I know that I am helpless without the power of the Holy Spirit.

264 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus
In the name of Jesus, I take the fullness of the Holy Spirit, now!

Baptize me in the Holy Spirit, now!

Fill me with Your power to serve You.

Anoint me with Your Holy Spirit as You did Jesus of Nazareth.

My life is Yours. I hold nothing back from You.

I want Your will more than I want anything in all the world.

Here and now I take the baptism of the Holy Spirit.

The Evidence You Have Received The Baptism Of The Holy Spirit

What is **THE EVIDENCE** that you have taken the baptism of the Holy Spirit? Different Christian groups will give different answers to this question. Just as there was no set pattern in the Acts for taking the Holy Spirit, there is no particular physical evidence that is always manifested. Some will say that you must speak in tongues, or you did not take the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Some will require other things.

Let me tell you what is the absolute evidence that you have taken the fullness of the Holy Spirit. It is this:

***The absolute evidence that you
have taken the baptism of the Holy Spirit
is Christ-like integrity in your heart,
and power in your life to do anything
God wants you to do to serve Him.***

Do not allow anyone to place requirements on you beyond that. The Word of God places these requirements on you, but nothing more. Let me state it again: Christ-like integrity in your heart, and power in your life to do whatever God calls you to do. This is the baptism of the Holy Spirit. This is the power of the Holy Spirit. This is the anointing of the Holy Spirit. This is what it means to be a Spirit filled Christian!

Chapter 24

HOW TO PRAY

OUTLINE

Luke 11:1

Introduction

How to pray is a spiritual skill you can learn.

Praying the Lord's Prayer

- 1. Worship the heavenly Father.**
 - 2. Rehearse God's names and what they mean.**
 - 3. Pray for God's kingdom to come on earth.**
 - 4. Pray for daily material needs.**
 - 5. Ask for forgiveness.**
 - 6. Pray for God's leadership to overcome evil.**
 - 7. Praise God and give Him glory.**
- Special prayer notes.**

Luke 11:1

And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. (KJV)

Luke 11:1 HB

And it was, in his being in a certain place praying, as he stopped, one of his dis-

266 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus
ciples said to him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples.

Introduction

How to pray is something you can learn to do. Just as you can learn to ride a bicycle, you can learn to pray. Riding a bicycle is a physical skill. Praying is a spiritual skill. It takes time and effort to learn how to ride a bicycle. It takes time and effort to learn how to pray.

The disciples requested Jesus to teach them to pray. They had seen the disciples of John the Baptist praying. Seeing the disciples of John praying inspired them to want to learn how to pray. You and I should want to know how to pray. In this lesson we will learn how to pray as Jesus taught His disciples to pray.

Jesus said to the disciples, **In this manner therefore pray** [Matthew 6:9ff. What Jesus said was, “Here is the model prayer that shows you how to pray. When you pray include these elements in your prayer.”

The Lord’s Prayer, sometimes called The Model Prayer, lists in it the main elements that should be included in your prayers. You can say the words of The Lord’s Prayer in just a few seconds, but you can pray for hours if you use the different elements to guide you in forming your prayers.

Matt 6:9-15

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you:

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (KJV)

Mat 6:9-15 HB

9 In this manner therefore pray: Our Father in heaven, Holy is your name.

10 Your kingdom come. Your will be done upon the earth as *it is* in heaven.

11 Give us today our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.

13 And do not carry us into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one, because yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.

14 Because if you forgive men their transgressions, your heavenly Father will

also forgive you;

15 And if you do not forgive men their transgressions, your Father will absolutely not forgive your transgressions.

Let me outline to you the main points to guide you in your prayers.

1. **Worship your Heavenly Father -Our Father in heaven.**
2. **Rehearse God's names, and what they mean to you – Holy is Your name.**
3. **Pray for God's kingdom and will to be done in you on earth as it is in heaven - Your kingdom come. Your will be done upon the earth as *it is* in heaven.**
4. **Pray for daily material needs - Give us today our daily bread.**
5. **Ask for the forgiveness of your sins and forgive others. And forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.**
6. **Pray for leadership to overcome sin and the devil - And do not carry us into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.**
7. **Praise God and give Him glory - For Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.**

WHY SHOULD WE USE THE LORD'S PRAYER?

We should use The Lord's Prayer because Jesus commanded us to use it as the guide for our prayers. Jesus was saying to us the following thoughts:

Here is the outline to follow in your prayers.

First, come into the Father's presence in the Holy of Holies. Worship Him through the shed blood of Jesus and His righteousness. Worship your heavenly Father.

Second, make His names very holy in your life. Say the various names of God that are recorded in the Bible. All His names describe to you His nature and power. Calling out loud His names causes His nature to grow in you. The more you use and know His names, the more powerful you will become. You will be able to do more and more for His glory, and the good of others as well as yourself.

268 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Third, pray that His kingdom fill every moment and every deed of your day. Pray for God to reign in you this day. Pray that His kingdom and His will, will be in you on earth, today, exactly as His kingdom and will are in heaven. Pray that God's will be done in all those around you. Pray that God's kingdom reign today in the officers of government, in the body of Christ around the world, and in everyone on your list today.

Fourth, ask God to give you the food, clothing, and shelter you need today. Ask Him for the strength you need to work. Ask Him to prosper you today, and give you the money you need to meet all your needs, and the needs of those around you. Pray for your prosperity.

Fifth, ask Him to forgive you of your sins. Go over the past twenty-four hours, and confess any sins He brings to your mind. If you know of something you did that was wrong, ask Him to cleanse it away by the blood of Jesus. Ask God to show you how to avoid that sin the next time you face that temptation. Use some Bible verses that will strengthen you against that sin. Claim the power of the Holy Spirit to be victorious over that temptation from now on.

Then, forgive anyone who you feel has sinned against you. Do not wait for them to ask your forgiveness. You may need to forgive them in their presence later when they ask you, for their sakes, but you need to forgive them now for your own sake. God will forgive you only if you forgive others.

Sixth, ask God to lead you so that you overcome all temptations of sin and the devil. Carry us not into temptation, means, "Carry me so that I am able to resist temptation." You must not be careless in your walk. You need God to carry you so that you avoid being close to sin. You do not open a bottle of liquor, sit it in front of you where you can see it and smell it, and then pray to God not to be tempted by it. You need God to lead you so that sin is not sitting in front of you staring you in the face. Ask God to direct every step you take, so that you avoid situations where temptations are overwhelming.

Confess the victory you already have in Christ over the devil. Quote Bible verses directly to Satan, and declare to him that he is defeated in your life this day.

Seventh, praise the Lord, and glorify His name. Spend some time simply praising the Lord. Give Him honor and glory for being so good to you. Confess that He has all the power, and that you can do only what He enables you to do.

Let me state the idea again very clearly. The Lord's Prayer is ^{How To Pray} the outline for all our prayers. Each phrase in The Lord's Prayer represents a whole area of prayer. You should take each one of these seven areas, and regularly include all of them in your prayers. Now I will give you an outline of some of the things to include under each point of The Lord's Prayer.

PRAYING THE LORD'S PRAYER

Pray on each point until your heart is satisfied that you have prayed everything you should pray on that subject. Then move to the next.

1. Worship your heavenly Father. Our Father Who is in heaven.

[1] Come into His presence by the blood of Jesus.

[2] Thank Him that you are in the family, and that Jesus is your elder brother.

[3] Tell Him how much you love Him for meeting all your needs.

[4] Thank Him for all your brothers and sisters in heaven and in earth in the body of Christ.

2. Rehearse God's names, and what they mean to you – Holy is Your name.

Some names of God:

Elohim - the sovereign God.

Jehovah - the self-existent God

Jehovah - the God of the covenant

El Shaddai - the almighty God

Jehovah-M'kaddesh, The Lord Who has sanctified me. Leviticus 20:8.

Jehovah-Shalom, The Lord Who is my peace and prosperity. Judges 6:24.

Jehovah-Ra'ah, The Lord Who is my Shepherd. Psalm 23.

Jehovah-Tsidkenu, The Lord Who is my righteousness.

Jehovah-Shammah, The Lord Who is always there with me. Ezekiel 48:35.

3. Pray that God's kingdom and will be done in you on earth as it is in heaven - Your kingdom come. Your will be done upon the earth as *it is* in heaven.

[1] Pray for God's kingdom and God's will to come upon you for this day.

[2] Pray God's kingdom rule and perfect will upon each member of your family.

[3] Pray for God's kingdom and God's will to be done in the leaders of government.

[4] Pray for God's kingdom and will to be done in your church.
Include other people and things God leads you to pray for.

4. Pray for daily material needs - Give us this day our daily bread.

[1] Name before God your specific needs for food, clothing, and shelter.

[2] Pray over your financial goals, and quote your Bible verses on financial prosperity.

5. Ask for the forgiveness of your sins - Forgive us our sins, as we forgive those who sin against us.

[1] Confess all sins the Holy Spirit brings to mind.

[2] Always confess that the only way you are righteous is by the righteousness of Christ.

[3] Constantly remind the devil that your sins are forgiven, that you are righteous in Christ, and that the devil has no claims on you.

[4] Claim the blood of Jesus to cover all the sins you know about, and the ones you do not know about.

[5] Ask the Holy Spirit to make you very sensitive to sin and righteousness, so that you are immediately aware of anything you do that is contrary to God's leadership.

6. Pray for leadership to overcome sin and the devil - Carry us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

[1] Declare your faith that the Holy Spirit is carrying you right now. He is leading you what to pray as well as every step you will make this day.

[2] Ask Him to lead you so that you avoid the devil's traps.

[3] Ask Him to make you wise as a serpent, and harmless as a dove.

[4] Ask Him to keep you clean and pure so you will be strong against the devil.

[5] Always go over the different parts of the whole armor of God, and be sure you have it on.

Eph 6:14-18

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girded all around in truth, and putting on the breastplate of righteousness,

15 And having put shoes on the feet in the preparation of the good news of peace,

16 Above all, having taken up the large shield of faith, in which you will have power to extinguish all the fiery missiles of the evil one.

17 And receive the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the spoken word of God,

18 Praying through all prayer, and petition, in all times, in *the* Spirit,

7. Praise God and give Him glory - For Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.

[1] Remember that the Lord inhabits your praises. In your heart see the

272 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Lord Jesus enveloped and rejoicing in your praises.

[2] Praise Him for answering your prayers. Thank Him for the answers now. Do not wait until you see them with your eyes.

[3] Spend time looking into the invisible realm and seeing God's kingdom ruling over all.

[4] Wait before Him in praise and in quietness, for Him to tell you anything He wants to say to you. Praise the Lord.

Special Prayer Notes

1. Always pray to the Father. John 16:23

2. Always pray to the Father in the name of Jesus. John 16:23

3. Always pray to the Father in the name of Jesus, in the power of the Holy Spirit. Jude 1:20

5. Desire God's will more than you desire anything else in all the world. Matthew 6:10;26:42

6. Ask. Seek. Knock. Matthew 7:7.

Ask God for it.

Go out and seek it.

When you find the place you think it is, knock on the door. If the door opens, go in and take the answer to your prayer.

Chapter 25

PRINCIPLES ON EARLY MORNING PRAYER

OUTLINE

Mark 1:35

- 1. Seek God's face before you are too occupied to find time.**
- 2. You need God's guidance for that day before it begins.**
- 3. God is not justified in intervening for us unless we ask Him before we begin.**
- 4. Jesus prayed in the morning.**
- 5. Get God's reality into focus first.**
- 6. Who we are and what we are in Him are the reality for today.**
- 7. Pray before the normal activities of the day.**
- 8. Pray before you get involved with people.**
- 9. Go to the place of prayer.**

Mark 1:35

And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. (KJV)

Mark 1:35 HB

And at dawn, rising up while it was yet night, he went out and went away into a

wasteland place, and there he was praying.

Early in the morning is not the only time to pray, but it should be one of our most important times to pray.

1. SEEK GOD'S FACE BEFORE YOU ARE SO OCCUPIED YOU CANNOT FIND TIME.

We need to pray before everything else. Once we start our day's work, it is very difficult to find the time and place to pray. There is always something that needs to be done, and something else that requires our attention. Once we get started in the day, our normal habits and responsibilities take over. There is simply no time to take out for prayer.

2. YOU NEED GOD'S GUIDANCE FOR THAT DAY BEFORE IT STARTS

We need to seek God's face and His perfect will before we head into the day's responsibilities. We need God's direction. We need His counsel. We need to get our minds in harmony with Him before we start conducting business. He knows what is coming up in our day. We do not. He knows where the devil is going to attack us.

3. GOD IS NOT JUSTIFIED IN INTERVENING IN OUR LIVES TO HELP US UNLESS WE HAVE GIVEN HIM JUSTIFICATION BY ASKING FOR HIS HELP BEFORE WE START.

He wants to intervene on our part, but He cannot unless we ask Him. If we do not take the time to ask Him, the natural course of events takes place, and the devil defeats us in our day. We want the victory. We want God to intervene in our day to prevent the devil from plundering our day. We want the victory so we can glorify God and receive His blessing. Prayer is the only thing that justifies God's coming to our aid. We need to pray at the beginning of every day (or at least the night before we go to bed. I am sure God will honor whatever time that seems best in your schedule, but prayer must be a priority in our schedule.)

Mark 1:35

And at dawn, rising up while it was yet night, he went out and went away into a wasteland place, and there he was praying.

4. JESUS PRAYED IN THE MORNING.

He obeyed the Word of God as recorded in Ps 5:3

My voice shalt thou hear in the morning, O LORD; in the morning will I direct my prayer unto thee, and will look up. (KJV)

Psalm 5:3 HB

Oh Jehovah, you shall attentively hear my voice in the dawn; I will arrange for you in the dawn, and will lean out, peering into the distance

These are God's holy words telling us what to do. God wants to hear our voice in the morning. He wants you to direct your prayer to Him in the morning.

5. GET GOD'S REALITY INTO FOCUS THE FIRST THING IN THE MORNING.

He wants us to "look up" to Him the first thing in the morning to get our view of reality into focus. The Lord is our Reality.

6. WHO WE ARE IN HIM, AND WHAT WE HAVE IN HIM ARE THE REALITY FOR THIS DAY.

Put on the girdle of truth early in the morning, and through all the circumstances of this day. You will not hear what reality is from the world. You will hear negative falsehoods from the news media, from fellow workers, and from the evil spirits that motivate and deceive the world. Get your view straight from God before you go out and face all the illusions of the devil.

7. PRAY BEFORE THE NORMAL DAY'S ACTIVITIES BEGIN.

276 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Jesus obeyed

Ps 119:147.

I prevented the dawning of the morning, and cried: I hoped in thy word. (KJV)

Psalms 119:147 HB

Oh Jehovah, you shall attentively hear my voice in the dawn; I will arrange for you in the dawn, and will lean out, peering into the distance

8. HE PRAYED BEFORE THE OTHER ACTIVITIES AND PEOPLE OF THE DAY WERE OPERATING, SO HE COULD TALK TO GOD WITHOUT INTERRUPTION.

He talked to His heavenly Father before the normal day's activities began, even before the dawn of the day. You need time with God before everything else and everyone else get started. Once everyone else is on the move to work, you have to carry out your responsibilities in relationship to everyone else. It is difficult to go get alone with God when you are expected to be in contact with people and your responsibilities. People and your work will place certain responsibilities on you that require your presence among people. You cannot be alone with God when you are required to talk to people. Get in God's presence before everyone else requires your presence.

We are to pray without ceasing. We are to have a prayer on our heart and on our lips at all times - going to sleep, in our dreams, while we are waking, while we are driving to work, while we are working, and on the way home. Your spouse would not accept your thinking about her or him all day as a substitute for spending quality time and undivided attention with the one you love.

If your spouse, or your child, requires quality time, how much more does God require quality time. Give God some quality time, before you start dealing with everything and everybody else.

9. GO TO THE PLACE OF PRAYER.

Jesus went out into a solitary place. In each part of the country where Jesus was ministering, whether Galilee, or Judaea, or Jerusalem, He had special places where He went to pray. We know that He often prayed in the Garden of Gethsemane. We think primarily of His prayer in Gethsemane the night He was betrayed, but this was one of the places where He prayed regularly when He was in Jerusalem. You need a private place of prayer, and you need a place where you pray with others. Jesus did both, and you and I should do both.

John Mark says, Mark 1:35,

And at dawn, rising up while it was yet night, he went out and went away into a wasteland place, and there he was praying.

I want to urge all of you to start forming this habit. It may take quite a bit of effort, and a long period of time to establish it in your life. But start where you are, and ask God to help you.

Prov 8:17

I love them that love me; and those that seek me early shall find me. (KJV)

Proverbs 8:17 HB

I love them who love me; and those who seek me early shall find me.

Early in Proverbs 8:17 means before the dawn; literally - before the rising of the sun gives daylight. It means to do a particular thing before other things related to it begin to take place.

The Wisdom of God in Person is speaking in Proverbs 8. **WISDOM** in this chapter is the same as the **WORD** in John 1. **THE PERSON SPEAKING IS THE SON OF GOD.**

He says to you and me.

OUR NATURE IS SUCH THAT GENERALLY WE DO NOT CALL ON GOD FOR HELP UNTIL AFTER WE NEED IT.

This means we do not seek Him because we love Him, but because we need Him for something. God wants to meet our every need, but, for our good, He wants our love first. If you seek people's friendship simply for what you can get out of them, it is a sin. We must love God and desire His presence and fellowship, first and foremost, for His own sake and glory, and only secondarily because He meets our needs. The Son of God says,

I LOVE THEM THAT LOVE ME AND THOSE THAT SEEK ME BEFORE THEY NEED MY HELP, AND BECAUSE THEY LOVE ME, SHALL FIND ME.

I LEARNED YEARS AGO TO DISTINGUISH BETWEEN THE RULES THE WORD OF GOD ACTUALLY LAYS DOWN, AND THE RULES THAT PREACHERS INVENT.

278 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

I have heard preachers all my life lay requirements on people that simply were their own way of doing things, rather than a plainly stated requirement of Scripture.

God leaves us free to implement our own rules that work good for us, that are in harmony with the principles of the Word. A minister has the right to ask His congregation to conform to certain rules that are not clearly stated, but are in harmony with the Word, that help keep the congregation going in the same direction. But he does not have the right to exhort others to conform to rules that are simply his own way of doing things.

I want to give you the Scriptures that have convinced me that God wants us to seek His face before all other activities.

THE WORD EARLY MEANS BEFORE THE DAWN. THE PRINCIPLE IS THAT YOU SEEK GOD'S FELLOWSHIP AND DIRECTION BEFORE YOU DO ANYTHING ELSE.

It is possible that you can have your prayer at night for the activities of the next day, and this would be acceptable with God. Maybe that works better for you, but be sure that you seek God faithfully before all things

NOW READ THESE SCRIPTURES:

Ps 63:1

O God, thou art my God; early will I seek thee: my soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh longeth for thee in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is; (KJV)

Psalms 63:1 HB

Oh God, you *are* my God; I will seek you early in the dawn; my soul thirsts for you; my flesh longs for you in a parched and thirsty land where water fails

Isa 26:9

With my soul have I desired thee in the night; yea, with my spirit within me will I seek thee early: for when thy judgments are in the earth, (KJV)

Isaiah 26:9 HB

***In* my soul I have desired you in the night; yes, *in* my spirit within me I will seek you in the dawn, because when your judgments are in the earth, the dwellers of the inhabited earth will learn righteousness.**

Ps 55:17

Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud: and he shall

hear my voice. (KJV)

Psalms 55:17 HB

Dusk, and dawn, and at noon, I will ponder and cry aloud, and he will attentively hear my voice.

Ps 59:16

But I will sing of thy power; yea, I will sing aloud of thy mercy in the morning: for thou hast been my defence and refuge in the day of my trouble. (KJV)

Psalms 59:16 HB

And I will sing of your power, and I will shout loudly in the dawn of your mercy, because you have been my lofty cliff, and refuge in the day of my oppression.

Ps 88:13

But unto thee have I cried, O LORD; and in the morning shall my prayer prevent thee. (KJV)

Psalms 88:13 HB

And I, Oh Jehovah, have cried to you for help, and my prayer shall come before you in the dawn.

Ps 143:8

Cause me to hear thy lovingkindness in the morning; for in thee do I trust: cause me to know the way wherein I should walk; for I lift up my soul unto thee. (KJV)

Psalms 143:8 HB

Cause me to attentively hear your mercy in the dawn, because I trust in you; cause me to know by seeing the way that I should walk, because I lift up my soul to you.

Isa 33:2

O LORD, be gracious unto us; we have waited for thee: be thou their arm every morning, our salvation also in the time of trouble. (KJV)

Isaiah 33:2 HB

Oh Jehovah, stoop down in grace to us; we have bound ourselves in expectation for you; be their outstretched arm every dawn, also our salvation in the time of distress.

Isa 50:4

The Lord GOD hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know

280 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning, he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned. (KJV)

Isaiah 50:4 HB

The Lord Jehovah has given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to hurriedly support him with a word who is exhausted; he wakens dawn by dawn, he wakens my ear to attentively hear as the learned.

Notice that God wakens your ear morning by morning to hear His voice as a believer especially learned in the things you need for that day.

Lamentations 3:21-24

21 This I recall to my mind, therefore have I hope.

22 It is of the LORD's mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not.

23 They are new every morning: great is thy faithfulness.

24 The LORD is my portion, saith my soul; therefore will I hope in him. (KJV)

Lamentations 3:21-24 HB

21 I turn this back to my heart; therefore I have hope.

22 It is of the mercies of Jehovah that we are not finished because his compassions have not ceased.

23 They are new every dawn; your faithfulness is abundant.

24 My soul says, Jehovah is my allotment, therefore I will hope in him.

Whatever you do, and whenever you form the habit of scheduling it, make your prayer time a definite priority in your life before everything else.

Chapter 26

ANGELS ARE OUR SERVANTS.

OUTLINE

Hebrews 1:14

1. Angels are ministering spirits sent to serve us.

- (1) **Angels are our servants.**
- (2) **They serve at their own expense.**
- (3) **They serve us freely and gladly.**
- (4) **They hasten after us to meet our needs.**

2. God's angels come to perform our words.

3. Jesus gave His blood to restore to us the His angels as our servants.

Heb 1:14

Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation? (KJV)

Hebrews 1: 14 HB

Are they absolutely not all officially ministering spirits, set apart and sent out to minister because of those about to be heirs of salvation?

1. Angels or heavenly messengers are ministering spirits sent to serve you and me.

They are God's official ministers to us. The word refers to officials in the Roman Empire who served in a public office at their own expense. For example, a man owned a shipping company, and had plenty of money. He took the government job,

282 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

served the government and the people, and paid all of his own expenses, including travel. We had a mayor here in Los Angeles who was elected, and never took a salary. He served the entire term at his own expense. This is unusual, but he is a wealthy man.

Angels are our servants, and they pay their own expenses. I said, **Hallelujah**. Praise the Lord. If the angels sent me a bill for everything they do for me I would be bankrupt real fast. I am thankful to God that angels who serve us, go at their own expense, and out of God's resources. They never charge us for anything. To minister is the word deacon in English. They are sent to deacon for those who shall be heirs of eternal life.

Deacon in the Greek has two specific definitions. First, **to render service freely**. Second, **to hasten after the one he serves, to be there at any time to do anything that needs to be done**.

- (1) **Angels are our servants.**
- (2) **They serve at their own expense.**
- (3) **They serve us freely and gladly.**
- (4) **They hasten after us to meet our needs.**

2. GOD'S ANGELS COME TO PERFORM OUR WORDS

In Daniel 9, Daniel understood by reading the words of Jeremiah that the captivity of Judah in Babylon was to last seventy years. Then the Jews could return home. Since Jews were taken captive to Babylon at three different times over a period of twenty years, he did not know the exact year God began to count to reach seventy. Daniel began to pray that that prophecy would now be fulfilled by God's starting the counting with the earliest date.

In chapter 10 Daniel fasted three weeks, and again was praying for the fulfillment of the Word of God in the life of Israel.

Dan 10:12

Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. (KJV)

Daniel 10:12 HB

And he said to me, Do not fear, Daniel, because from the first day that you gave

your heart to understand and to look down on yourself with harshness before the face of your God, your words were attentively heard, and I have come for your words.

Psalm 103:20 goes with this verse in Daniel.

Ps 103:20

Bless the LORD, ye his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word. (KJV)

Psa 103:20

Bless Jehovah, you his *heavenly* messengers, who are mighty in power, who do his words, attentively hearing the voice of his word.

God's has instructed His angels that when they hear God's words in our mouth spoken in faith, they are to come and perform those words for us. Daniel prayed the words God promised in the Bible. As soon as the angel assigned to Daniel heard those words in Daniel's mouth he went to perform those words. In this case the angel had a hindering demon prince over Persia who battled him for three weeks, but with help the angel won and had now come to bring the words of Daniel into reality.

Psalm 103:20 says that the angels hear the voice, or the sound, or tone quality, or character of God's words in our mouth. They hear His words in our mouth, and bring them into reality in our lives. So, keep God's words consistently in your mouth, and your servant angels will fulfill them.

This is what happened to the three Hebrew children in Daniel 3:16-18. They believed Isaiah 43:2, that the flame would not burn them. The Lord sent His angel, and delivered them [Dan. 3:28].

This is one of the main ways God has designed to bring abundance into your life. When that angel began to move empires to answer Daniel's prayer, the angel also arranged for all the money to do it. Cyrus the Great, king of Persia, and his successors, gladly paid for the entire return of all the Jews who wanted to take advantage of it. That is performance. They will perform for you in the same way, if you will get God's promises in your mouth, speak them with the right heart attitude. Speak the answer from the Word of God to your need, and take consistent action in faith.

3. OUR LORD GAVE HIS LIFE BLOOD TO RE-

STORE TO US THE ANGELS AS OUR SERVANTS.

When God created Man in the Garden of Eden in a state of innocence God gave angels to serve them. Man sinned. They turned against God and Jehovah drove them out of the Garden. He cut off their freedom and resources. Our Lord Jesus was made a little lower than the angels. He died upon the cross, and paid the sin debt. Jesus said, "I have paid for your sins. My angels will now serve you. They are now available because you are made righteous through the blood of Jesus".

Eph 1:20-23

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,

23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all. (KJV)

Ephesians 1:20-23,

20 Which he supernaturally worked in Christ, raising him out of the dead, and he seated him in his right hand in the heavenlies,

21 Far above all head rule, and authority, and power, and lordship, and every name being named, absolutely not only in this age, but also in the one about to be,

22 And has arranged all things under his feet, and gave him *who is* head over all to the church,

23 Who is his body, the fullness of the one filling all in all.

Jesus became a Man, and died. He rose again, above the angels (far above all principality). So now he can order the angels to meet our needs through His precious blood.

Chapter 27

HEAVEN ON EARTH ESTABLISHED IN MY DOMAIN

OUTLINE

Genesis 28:10-22

Introduction

- (1) God has established the kingdom of heaven in the Man Jesus.**
- (2) Now the Lord is establishing heaven on earth in the church and the life of the believer.**
- (3) One day the Lord will establish the kingdom of heaven in the whole world.**

Jacob's Ladder

**Hear Jacob's dream.
Hear Jesus' explanation in John.**

- 1. Jesus Christ is the Ladder connecting me and my part of the earth to heaven.**
- 2. God's angels are ascending and descending upon the Lord Jesus, bringing heaven's resources to us on earth.**
- 3. God is standing at the top of the Ladder, actively working in my life for my good.**
- 4. God has actually spoken to me.**
- 5. God has told me that I am a child of Abraham by faith.
List the blessings of the covenant.**
- 6. God is with me.**
- 7. I have awaked from my sleep, and my dream is a reality.**
- 8. It is awesome to realize that wherever I am there is the gate of heaven.**
- 9. In response to His unconditional promises to me, I make an unconditional vow to Him.**
 - (1) Jehovah God is my God.**
 - (2) I arrange my possessions to take care of the house of God**
 - (3) I tithe to Him ten percent of all my profits.**

Gen 28:10-22

- 10 And Jacob went out from Beersheba, and went toward Haran.
- 11 And he lighted upon a certain place, and tarried there all night, because the sun was set; and he took of the stones of that place, and put them for his pillows, and lay down in that place to sleep.
- 12 And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.
- 13 And, behold, the LORD stood above it, and said, I am the LORD God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed;
- 14 And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.

286 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

15 And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.

16 And Jacob awaked out of his sleep, and he said, Surely the LORD is in this place; and I knew it not.

17 And he was afraid, and said, How dreadful is this place! this is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven.

18 And Jacob rose up early in the morning, and took the stone that he had put for his pillows, and set it up for a pillar, and poured oil upon the top of it.

19 And he called the name of that place Bethel: but the name of that city was called Luz at the first.

20 And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on,

21 So that I come again to my father's house in peace; then shall the LORD be my God:

22 And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God's house: and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee. (KJV)

Genesis 28:10-22 HB

10 And Jacob went out from Beer Sheba, and walked toward Haran.

11 And he impinged upon a place, and stayed there, because the sun had gone *down*; and he took of the stones of that place, and put them at his head, and lay down in that place to sleep.

12 And he dreamed, and lo, a ladder was stationed on the earth, and its head reaching to the heavens; and lo, the messengers of God *were* ascending and descending on it.

13 And behold, Jehovah was stationed over it, and said, *I am* Jehovah, the God of Abraham, your father, and the God of Isaac; I will give the land on which you lie to you, and to your seed;

14 And your seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and you shall break out to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and toward the Negev; and all families of the earth shall be blessed in you, and in your seed.

15 And behold, I am with you, and will hedge you about in all places where you walk, and will return you to this land, because I will not leave you until I have done what I have spoken to you.

16 And Jacob awoke out of his sleep, and he said, Surely Jehovah is in this place, and I did not know by seeing it.

17 And he feared, and said, How fearful is this place! This is none other than the house of God, and this is the gate of the heavens.

18 And Jacob loaded up in the dawn, and took the stone that he had put at his head, and put it for a memorial column, and poured oil upon the head of it.

19 And he called the name of that place Bethel, and the name of that city was

Luz at first.

20 And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will hedge me about in this way that I walk, and will give me food to eat, and clothing to put on,

21 And I return to my father's house in peace, then Jehovah shall be my God,

22 And this stone, which I have set for a memorial column, shall be the house of God, and I will tithe the tenth to you of all that you give me.

Introduction

Scripture upon Scripture teaches that Jesus gave us the right and power to establish Heaven On Earth In Our Domain. Now! There are 744 references to heaven in the Bible - 451 in the Old Covenant, and 293 in the New Covenant. Some of them refer to the atmosphere surrounding the earth, but they all refer to God's authority and blessing [or in some cases His judgment]. The main idea is that everything on earth is under the authority of Heaven. To those who obey, heaven is opened, and God gives heaven on earth to those who obey Him, and believe.

The Gospels makes it plain that Jesus came to bring The Kingdom of Heaven to earth. The message of John the Baptist and Jesus was that the kingdom of heaven has come near [Matthew 3:2; 4:17]. This means the kingdom of heaven is within reach, where you can take possession of it.

Remember these three points:

[1] God the Father has already established the kingdom of heaven in the Man Jesus.

In His earthly life Heaven totally ruled. Wherever He went the authority and blessings of Heaven totally surrounded Him. Nowhere was He bound by earth's sinful limitations. In everything He did He established **Heaven on earth in His domain**. He brought Heaven to everyone He touched.

[2] Now the Lord is establishing Heaven On Earth in the Church and the life of the believer.

Every church body can have heaven on earth. The fact that many do not does not negate the fact that heaven on earth is God's will, and is available. Every believer

288 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

can have **heaven on earth**. The fact that many do not does not negate the fact that it is available. This message is to teach you that you can have **heaven on earth**.

[3] One day the Lord will establish the kingdom of heaven in the whole world.

He is now seated at the right hand of the Father, waiting until all His enemies are made His footstool. One day the kingdom of heaven will fill the whole earth. That is yet future. Let us return to the present, and **Heaven On Earth Is Established In Your domain**.

JACOB'S LADDER

Read Genesis 28:1-11.

Jacob had to leave home because of the threats of his brother, Esau. Jacob had always obeyed God and His parents. He lived a righteous life. When Jacob traded with Esau a pot of beans for the birthright, Jacob acted from pure spiritual motives. Esau acted out of fleshly lust. Jacob had to leave home for his own safety. That first night he was greatly troubled. God gave Jacob this revelation and promise of **Heaven On Earth** because of Jacob's obedience and craving for spiritual things.

Genesis 28:12. The Dream.

God appeared to Jacob during his sleep. Your spirit is strengthened when you are quiet before God. Throughout the Bible you see that God revealed Himself to people when they were either asleep, or if awake, they were usually still and alone. Often it was while they were fasting and praying. John the Baptist and Jesus spent much time in the desert alone with God. It was the same with many of the prophets. You must get your body under control, and the activities of this world off your mind for your spirit to become strong.

Gen 28:12. The Ladder.

Look at **John 1:45-51** to determine what the Ladder is. Nathanael did not expect Jesus to be the Messiah, because Jesus was of Nazareth. When Jesus declared that Nathanael was pure in heart, and told him He knew this because He had seen Nathanael under the fig tree, Nathanael exclaimed that Jesus was the Messiah.

Fig trees were regularly grown beside Hebrew homes. Fig trees were a regular place of prayer and meditation. When Jesus spoke so pointedly of Nathanael's time

under the fig tree that very day, which Jesus could have known only by a supernatural revelation, Nathanael was immediately convinced. Then Jesus said in

John 1:51

And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.
(KJV)

John 1:51 HB

And he says to him, Amen, amen, I say to you, From now on you will gaze at heaven opened, and the *heavenly* messengers of God ascending and descending upon the Son of Man.

Jesus very clearly is referring to Himself as the Ladder Jacob saw, upon which the angels are ascending and descending. The Ladder is Jesus.

Gen 28:12. The Ladder.

Note that the **Ladder** is set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven. The starting point of the Ladder is earth. This says that Jesus is a Man, and that our salvation began on the earth. Yes He was the Son of God from heaven, but the Son of God as the Son of God did not save us. Even God Himself according to His own rules could not save us as God. He had to become a Man to save us. That started in the womb of the Virgin Mary when the Holy Spirit conceived Jesus as both God and Man. That the Ladder reached to heaven shows that the Man Jesus ascended into heaven and accomplished this as a Man. He ascended into heaven and was enthroned there as the Man who had become the new Head of the human race. This Man reached unto heaven. Anyone who tries to climb up any other way is a thief and a robber, and will be thrown out [John 10:1].

Gen 28:12. The Angels.

The angels are going up and coming down. The starting point is the earth. This again emphasizes the humanity of Jesus. He redeemed us on earth. The angels are going up and coming down, not down and up, on the Ladder. They are ascending and descending on Jesus. Jesus gave us the ministry of God's angels. If it were not for Him, the angels would have no way of going up to heaven and bring heaven down to us.

Gen 28:13. Jehovah stood above it.

In this vision of Jesus as the Ladder reaching from earth to heaven we see God standing. Not seated. Standing. This means He is up, working for us.

Gen 28:13-14. The Lord repeats to Jacob the Covenant promised to Abraham. This states again as the Bible has so often that Jesus is the One who fulfilled the promise made to Abraham. It is to all the seed. It is not only to the Jewish believer. but also to the believers of other races.

Gen 28:15. God promised to be with Jacob until the promise is fulfilled. He promises to be with you and me until His covenant is fulfilled in us.

Gen 28:16. Jacob realized God's presence was with Him everywhere he went.

Gen 28:17. The house of God is where God dwells.

The gate of heaven is where God conducts business, makes decisions, and executes actions. The gate of heaven is the authority of God. Here is the awesomeness of what Jacob saw. Jacob saw that God had come down to dwell with him, and that God's authority stood with Jacob to fulfill the covenant. God had personally authorized Jacob to bring heaven on earth in Jacob's domain. That is what is so AWESOME.

Gen 28:18-19. He set up the House of God.

He took stones, and stood them up as a pillar. Then he poured oil upon it to sanctify it as the house of God. He named it, House of God - Beth = House; El = God. Bethel.

Gen 28:20-22. The Vow.

Jacob made the vow to God because God promised to be with him forever. The promise is both physical and spiritual. God promised to give him food, clothing, home, and peaceful relationships. God also promised spiritual fulfillment and eternal life.

Jacob vowed that:

[1] Jehovah God would be his God.

[2] He would take care of God's house.

[3] He would always pay the tithe.

God kept His promise, and Jacob kept his. No one could harm Jacob. Everything he touched prospered. He returned to his father's house with a large family,

wealthy, and in peace. This is heaven on earth.

Malachi 3:10 is a direct reference to Jacob's vow to tithe. If you tithe God promises pour out to you and prosper you as He did Jacob.

Now let us study the following points on **Establishing Heaven On Earth In Your Domain.**

1. Jesus Christ is the Ladder connecting me and my part of the earth to Heaven.

The bottom of the Ladder is in my in my heart which is my Holy of Holies. The top of the Ladder is in Heaven, in the Holy of Holies, at the Throne of God. In the Holy of Holies there is the Ark of the Covenant. The top of the Ark of the Covenant is the Mercy Seat. Inside the Ark of the Covenant are The Law of the Lord, the Pot of Manna, and Aaron's Rod that Budded. The cherubs guard the mercy seat and the ark of the covenant, which means they guard our relationship to Jesus. Jesus is our Ark of the Covenant. The Law of the Lord is written in the heart of Jesus now inside of us. Jesus is our Pot of Manna. We feast on Him as our continuous feast. His name is the Rod of Delegated Authority, the witness of the Holy Spirit within us. That Rod has budded in our hearts, which means, He has given us delegated authority to establish heaven on earth in our domain. Aaron's Rod was dead, but God supernaturally made it live and bear fruit. This means the God raised Jesus from the dead, and caused Him to save us. We are His fruit. His living Rod in our hearts means that His resurrection power is alive in us. By the name of Jesus we have authority to use resurrection power to do God's work in our lives. The name of Jesus in our hands is filled with resurrection power.

2. God's angels are ascending and descending upon the Lord Jesus, bringing Heaven's resources to us on earth.

God's angels are our servants, bought and paid for by the blood of Jesus. God's words in our mouth release the angels to protect us, to strengthen us in spiritual warfare, and to establish God's Covenant in our lives. They render all services necessary to make our domain a genuine heaven on earth.

3. Jehovah God is standing at the top of the Ladder, actively working in my life for my good.

He stands up for me. He loves me. I am important to Him. He is attentive to my every need.

4. God has actually spoken to me.

I have heard His voice. I have received His Word. He talks to me regularly - through His Written Word, and through the voice of the Holy Spirit. I have put out of my domain every noise that interferes with my hearing His voice. Anything and everything that distracts my attention from hearing God's voice, including my own thoughts and words, I have ordered out of life. His voice and picture come in clearly on my screen. I allow no transmitters or receivers to operate within my domain that would in any way cloud or distort my reception.

5. God has told me that I am a child of Abraham by faith.

I am in the Covenant God gave to Abraham, which Jesus Christ ratified. God's purpose in His Covenant is to establish heaven on earth. In the Covenant I have both spiritual and material blessings.

The blessings of the Covenant included in the Messiah are:

- [1] Forgiveness of sins and eternal life.**
- [2] To own and live on productive land.**
- [3] An adequate and comfortable dwelling.**
- [4] A large godly family.**
- [5] Plenty of good, healthy food.**
- [6] A good supply of quality, beautiful clothing.**
- [7] To be a producer, holder and dispenser of large amounts of wealth.**
- [8] To have physical and spiritual safety.**
- [9] To have a long, healthy, spiritually fulfilling life.**

I possess all these things in the Covenant now. I am living in the reality of them. As He prospered Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, spiritually and materially, so He is prospering me. He is enabling me to obey, and have faith, so He can prosper me. His purpose is to give me a part of the earth, and empower me to establish heaven on earth in my part of it. Through the Ladder that connects me to heaven I am spreading to the east, to the west, to the north, and to the south. I am participating in the kingdom of heaven which is saving and blessing all families of the earth.

6. God is with me.

He hedges me about in all places I go. He has brought me safely to my ultimate destiny - my Father's house. He has brought me to the likeness of His Son, Jesus Christ. He will not leave me. He will be with me until all His perfect and successful will is fulfilled in me.

7. I have awaked from my sleep, and my dream is a reality.

I have realized that God is in this place, and I did not know it. God has shown me that He is in every area of my life. I see God at all times and in every place. Heaven on earth is established in every part of my domain. I see God where I previously did not see Him. I am awe-struck to realize that wherever I am, God is there. God dwells wherever I go. How awesome to see God in every part of my domain.

8. Also it is awesome to realize that wherever I am there is the gate of heaven.

All governmental decisions are made in the gate. The gate of the City of Heaven is the authority of Heaven. How awesome that He has delegated His authority to me. Wherever I go He has authorized me to establish heaven on earth in my life.

The gate at the bottom of the Ladder moves with me wherever I go. I am, then and there, on the spot, deputized to establish heaven on earth. I say regularly to myself, "How awesome is this place. This is none other than the house of God. This is the gate of heaven."

9. In response to His unconditional promises to me, I make an unconditional vow to Him.

[1] Jehovah God is my God.

I keep His Great Commandment. I love Him with all my heart, and soul, and mind and strength. I love myself, and I love others. I have made a no-turning-back commitment. Jehovah God is my God.

[2] I arrange all my possessions to take care of the house of God.

I rule all my material possessions for the glory of God, I see to it that they do not rule me. I am ruled from heaven, and I rule for heaven. Heaven on earth is established in my heart, and I have established heaven on earth in my body and in all material possessions that I rule. I see to it that I myself am a walking house of God, and I maintain the public house of God, my church and where my church meets.

I see to it that God's public house of worship is built and maintained. As Jacob took the rock which had been his pillow, turned it upright, poured oil upon it, and made it a house of worship, I take the possessions God has given me and turn them into a public place of worship. I carry out my responsibility to see to it that that place is set aside specifically to God by appropriate sanctification and anointing of the power of the Holy Spirit. I arrange my material possessions to take care of my church and of the place of public worship of the church. I arrange every material possession under my control to promote God's work. I arrange everything to fulfill His purpose in my life to establish His kingdom. I arrange everything in my life to point to the fact that heaven has opened to me, and that I have heaven on earth. Showing my gratitude to Heaven is the normal way of life for me.

[3] I tithe to Him ten percent of all my profits.

I make a profit every day. I prosper because through Jesus Christ I am a child of Abraham. In every way that I prosper and profit I pay tithes of all. In this way the windows of heaven are kept open. He pours out so much I constantly have to enlarge my domain of operation. That is why I keep growing. Each day as He pours out more I increase my domain so as to handle and give out more to others. God has established heaven on earth in my heart through Jesus Christ. He has delegated to me His awesome authority to establish heaven on earth. I have established heaven on earth in all my domain.

My heart, my home, my life,

are officially chartered:

HEAVEN ON EARTH!

Section Seven - Your Words

This section teaches you the power that is in your words, and how to get control over your words. By your words you are justified, or by your words you are condemned. By your words you are delivered, or by your words you are destroyed.

The way a person gets saved is by confessing the Lord Jesus with his mouth, and believing in his heart [Romans 10:9-13]. You receive every victory from God every day of your life by confessing your faith with your mouth, and believing it in your heart. This is always the way of victory for every believer.

Study thoroughly each of these chapters on words. You should memorize the outline of Mark 11:23-24 in the chapter on "Speak To Your Need," then absolutely saturate yourself with chapter 31, "Five Steps To Power."

Make full proof of your ministry. 2 Timothy 4:5

Chapter 28

THE POWER OF THE SPOKEN WORD

OUTLINE

Mark 11:23-24

Introduction

Proverbs 18:21, The hand on the end of your tongue.

- 1. The greatest force in the world is the spoken word.**
- 2. The ultimate accomplishment is the embodiment of the spoken word in flesh.**
- 3. The spoken word and faith are inseparable.**
- 4. The spoken word brings the miracle of change.**
- 5. The all powerful Word can be stolen, resisted, and choked.**
 - (1) Stolen.**
 - (2) Resisted.**
 - (3) Choked.**

Mark 11:23-24

23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (KJV)

Mark 11:23-24 HB

23 Because amen I say to you, That whoever says to this mountain, Be lifted up, and be thrown into the sea, and does not judge through *it* in his heart, but believes that what he says will come to be, it will be to him, whatever he says.

24 Therefore I say to you, All things whatever you ask, praying, believe that you receive, and it will be to you.

The Bible says that you have the control over your life in your words. You must

be extremely disciplined in what you say. Many people are careless about what they say. If you intend to take control over your ministry, and fulfill a good ministry God wills for you, you must get control of your words.

Proverbs 18:21 says,

Death and life *are* in the hand of the tongue, and they who love it shall eat its fruit.

Look at the word **hand** in verse 21. Underline it in your Bible. Hand is the literal word in Hebrew. Death and life are in the **hand** of the tongue. You have a hand on the end of your tongue. It hands out death, or it hands out life, depending upon what you put in the hand of your tongue. You hand out salvation or hopelessness, depending on what you place in the hand on the end of your tongue.

It is the same word in the Bible where it says, **The hand of the Lord was upon me**, meaning that God had touched that person. We touch ourselves and others with our tongues. The words we give out with our tongue control our lives and the lives of others.

It is the same word as to give the hand in pledge. When you shake hands on an agreement, you give your promise. The Bible commands us that our word should be our bond. When you tell somebody something, you should live up to your word.

You have a hand on the end of your tongue. That hand must hand out life, not death, health, not sickness, abundance, not poverty, and blessings, not curses. What is on your tongue? Your tongue has the power to make you powerful, or to make you weak.

1. THE GREATEST FORCE IN THE WORLD IS THE SPOKEN WORD!

The whole purpose of this message is to inspire you to speak with your mouth powerful words so that you can fulfill your ministry. God has so ordained that if you confess His words, and believe them in your heart by acting upon them, you get what His Words provide. Learn how to confess His Words. In Genesis 1:3 God said, "Light be." When God said those words, there was light immediately! Throughout the Bible it says, **And God said**. A large percentage of the Bible is direct quotations from God.

First, the Bible was spoken and written in heaven before the world was [Psalm 119:89, 152].

Second, it was spoken with the voice of God to the prophets who heard it and gave it to God's people.

Third, it was written down so we could read it and speak it.

The most powerful force in the world is the words of God in our mouth and in our heart. God wants you and me to order our conversation according to the words of the Lord recorded in His Book. We are to speak His words in our daily conversation, while we are awake and while we dream. This is the most important thing in your life.

2. THE ULTIMATE ACCOMPLISHMENT IS THE EMBODIMENT OF THE SPOKEN WORD IN FLESH.

Look at John 1:14,

And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us (and we looked closely at his glory, glory as of the only begotten with the Father) full of grace and truth.

Underline **the Word became flesh**. God brought the man Jesus into the world. Jesus lived not by bread alone, but by every spoken word that goes out of the mouth of God [Deut. 8:3. Mat 4:4]. Jesus so perfectly lived and spoke the words of the Lord that the Heavenly Father gave Him a name. That name is **The Word**. He so perfectly embodied the words of the Father in His flesh, that God said, "I call you **The Word**." Our goal is to have God's Word embodied in our flesh. We have **The Word**, the Lord Jesus, in our heart. We need to have His life saturate our entire being, so that we are literally a walking and living Bible. We want to so perfectly live the Word of God that when people look at us they see the Word of God. The ultimate accomplishment is to have His words embodied in our flesh - in our spirits, our souls, and our bodies. We want His life manifested in every area of our lives.

Look at Rom 8:29

For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. (KJV)

8:29 HB

Because whom he foreknew, he also predestinated to be shaped like the image of his Son, into his being the firstborn among many brothers.

What God wills is that as the spoken word was embodied in the flesh of Jesus, so the spoken word will be embodied in our flesh. This is the greatest miracle of all, that God can take a sinner and change him into a saint! That is a miracle! It is the greatest miracle that His words can live in us. We are to think, live, breathe, move, pray, and speak so that every word of the Lord is packed into us like a little brother or a little sister of our Elder Brother, the Lord Jesus. In this way, **The blessing of the Lord, it makes rich, and he adds no sorrow with it** [Proverbs 10:22].

Get the Word of God into your flesh. Jesus came in the flesh that our flesh could be saved. Our spirits and souls live in our bodies of flesh. The Lord Jesus came in the flesh to save us. His coming has made it possible to get His words embodied in our flesh. It is God's will that we be holy in spirit, soul, and body. Embody His words in your flesh by speaking them with your mouth. Write them upon the tablet of your heart. This is the way the power of God comes into our lives.

3. THE SPOKEN WORD AND FAITH ARE INSEPARABLE.

Romans 10:17 is a passage you should have marked in your Bible, and memorized. Romans 10:17 is the key to all the Scripture:

Rom 10:17

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (KJV)

Rom 10:17

So faith is out of hearing, and hearing is through the spoken word of God.

Notice that faith and the Word of God are inseparable. What connects faith with the revealed (rhema) Word of God? Hearing! You hear God's revealed (rhema) Word, you speak it, and faith develops. Faith and the spoken Word are inseparable.

Rom 10:14-15

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

Romans 10:14-15 HB

14, How therefore may they call on him into whom they have absolutely not believed, and how may they believe *him* of whom they have absolutely not heard, and how may they hear apart from a preacher?

15 And how may they preach, if they have not been set apart and sent? As it has been written, How beautifully timely *are* the feet of them who announce the good news of peace, those announcing the good news of inherent good things! Isa 52:7

Note again how God brings this about.

The first step is that God has to send somebody

with the Word. God sent His prophets.

The second thing is that the prophet has to speak those words.

The third thing is that the person has to hear it.

The fourth thing is that the person has to call on the name of the Lord. He has to speak it, confess it with his mouth!

Now look at Romans Rom 10:9-13

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (KJV)

10:9-13 HB

9 That if you will confess in your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in your heart that God raised him out the dead, you will be saved,

10 Because with the heart man believes into righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made into salvation,

11 Because the Scripture says, Everyone who believes upon him will absolutely not be shamed down,

12 Because there is absolutely no difference between the Jew and the Greek, because the same Lord over all is rich to all who call upon him,

13 Because whoever calls upon the name of the Lord will be saved.

You cannot know which comes first, faith or speaking, speaking or faith. They are inseparable. In verse 9 God puts speaking first - **That if you will confess in your mouth the Lord Jesus.** He puts confession with the mouth first. Then comes faith. But in verse 10 God turns it around. With your heart you believe, then you confess it with your mouth. I ask you. Which comes first, speaking or believing? You cannot tell me.

Here is the way it happens. The grace of God touches your heart, but you do not have faith yet. You know you are a sinner, and that Jesus died and rose again to save you. You want to be saved, but how do you believe? Well, you just believe the Lord. But how do you believe. You have tried to believe, but you cannot yet believe.

I say to you the following: "You want to be saved, right?" "Yes, I want to be saved." "You know that Jesus is the Son of God, that He died on the cross, and rose again to save you?" "Oh yes! I know that. I have known that a long time. I have been wanting to be saved! How do I get saved? How do I believe?" "Alright, repeat after me. God, I know I am a sinner. I believe Jesus died on the cross for me. I believe He rose again from the dead. I take Jesus as my Lord. Forgive me of my sins, and save me. From this day forward, my life is yours. In Jesus' name, Amen." Then I say, "You meant that as sincerely as you knew how?" "Yes". "What does it say in verse 9? It says if you do that you shall be what?" "Saved!" "Can God lie?" "No!" "Then what did He do for you?" "He saved me!" You did not know that until you finished saying the prayer. You see, you confessed it with your mouth. As a result you believed Him in your heart. As soon as you believe in your heart, you have to open your mouth and confess it! Now which came first? The spoken Word or faith. You cannot tell me. You cannot separate them. So faith and the spoken Word, the spoken Word and faith, are inseparable.

Now these three points are the foundation for everything from now on in your life. From the day you were saved through eternity here is what you want more than anything:

[1] The Spoken Word

[2] Embodied in your flesh [your soul and body], Through Jesus our Lord, Who was made flesh

[3] Received by faith.

To become saved, to be healed, to have power in your ministry, to have God's abundance, to do anything -

**You get God's spoken Word (on that subject),
in your very soul, (that is, in your mind, emotions, and will so that guides
your soulical and bodily actions)
by faith.**

Let me explain how I am using "flesh" in these statements about embodying God's words in my flesh. The word "flesh" is used in at least two senses in the Bible. Flesh means the actual physical body. God sent His Son in flesh. The human spirit and soul made one with the Son of God was born in a fleshly body, the baby Jesus, lived a perfect life in a fleshly body, died on the cross in His fleshly body, and rose from the dead in His fleshly body, which flesh was glorified and made supernatural and eternal in His resurrection. The entirety of the Word of God spoken by the Holy Spirit through the prophets was embodied in the Lord Jesus. So when I use the phrase, this is what I mean. Flesh also means the sinful nature with its inherent weaknesses, sin and sicknesses, that we all inherited from Adam. I am using flesh in this message in the sense that the Son of God became flesh, and I am using it to refer to our physical body. Our fleshly efforts

302 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

cannot save us, but our flesh can and must be saved. Our fleshly bodies must be saved to live for Him in the here and now, and saved eternally by being raised from the dead. When we are saved the words of God are written in our spirits by being born of God. The entire Bible comes into our spirit when Jesus enters because He is the Word of God. All of God's words are embodied in Him. Our born-of-God spirits cannot rule without the submission of our soul. Our soul by nature, especially by our sinful human nature, wants to respond first to the appetites of the body, both the normal moral appetites as well as the immoral appetites. By submitting our souls to God after we are saved, getting His Word into our souls [minds, emotions, and wills], so that spiritual power can flow from God through our new born spirits, the Word of God will literally get into our flesh to control our bodies morally and righteously for God, and the Word of God will actually get into our flesh and give us health. So when I say that we want the Word of God embodied in our flesh, I mean that the actual words of God working from within control and energize our flesh, our bodies, to live for God and stay in good health. Just as people saw the Word of God and the life of God in the actual fleshly, bodily, actions of the Lord Jesus, so we want to get the Word of God embodied in our flesh so that we live for God and stay in good health. We want people to see God in us. We want them to see the Word of God embodied in us.

As that happens the results are manifested in your life. That is the purpose of God in your life after you are saved – for the spoken Word to be embodied in your flesh, received by faith! When I dig into God's Word, and study it, and speak it, I get it in my flesh -from my spirit, into my soul, it affects my body, and I receive it by faith. It is amazing how the transformation takes place day in and day out when you do this. More and more I am transformed into the likeness of Jesus Christ. I am speaking His words. More and more His power is growing and being manifested in my life.

4. THE SPOKEN WORD BRINGS THE MIRACLE OF CHANGE.

James 3 talks about the power of the tongue, and the power of the spoken word. In verse 11 he speaks about a sweet fountain and a bitter fountain. What he is saying is: You cannot bring forth power and weakness out of the same heart. Either your heart has been changed, or it has not. If your heart has not been changed unbelief comes out of your mouth. If you have been changed by the power of God, God's faith comes out of your mouth. It is one way or the other, not both. You have received the miracle of the changed life, or you are still in your unbelief.

You cannot bring unbelief and faith out of the same heart. If your heart has become literally transformed by the teaching of Holy Scripture on faith, then nothing but faith comes out of your mouth. But if your heart is still filled with unbelief, you cannot get faith to come out of your mouth. Once the true words of God on faith have been planted in your heart, you bring faith out of your heart by speaking words of

faith. At first you may feel that you have to force out your words of faith. But it is like anything else. All new things at first feel awkward. Words of faith will begin to feel normal and good as you make yourself speak faith. As you get God's Word on faith in your heart, begin speaking the words of faith. As God rewards your faith with victories you will be encouraged. It will become easier and easier to speak God's words of faith.

James 3:6

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell. (KJV)

James 3:6 HB

And the tongue is a fire, the world of unrighteousness; so the tongue is placed among our members, the thing soiling the whole body, and sets on fire the course of nature, and is caused to blaze by hell.

Those words describe the tongue and heart of an unbeliever. A fire of ungodliness is burning on the inside of the lost human heart. That fire is fueled by the devil of hell. He is adding the fuel of chaos, confusion, ruin, waste, hate, and poverty to that fire of unbelief.

James 3:7-8

7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind:

8 But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. (KJV)

James 3:7-8 HB

7 Because every nature of both beasts and birds, and both of reptiles and sea animals is tamed, and has been tamed by the nature of man,

8 But the tongue absolutely not one man has power to tame; it is an unstable worthlessness full of death dealing poison.

The word tame in the Greek is the word from which we get domicile, domestic, and domesticated. It means to be at home, to be in harmony. You cannot, in your own strength, domesticate your tongue. You cannot make your tongue act in harmony with God.

Matt 15:18-20

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defileth not a man. (KJV)

304 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Matthew 15:18-20 HB

18 And those things going out of the mouth, issue out of the heart, and they make the man common,

19 Because out of the heart issue evil reasonings, murders, adulteries, promiscuity, thefts, false witness, blasphemies;

20 These things are the ones making the man common, and to eat with unwashed hands absolutely does not make the man common.

You cannot tame your tongue, but God can. But God cannot tame your tongue unless you follow His divine procedure for getting control of your tongue. Only the miraculous power that the Word of God brings to the human heart can get control of your tongue. Your tongue will keep on speaking confusion, loss, deterioration, and defeat until you bring it under control by Holy Spirit empowered Words God has written in His Book. That demon of defeat and poverty that harasses you day and night will be defeated only when you get God's words in your heart and in your mouth. His words must become alive in you. God given faith miraculously rises up within you. God's words begin to flow from your mouth. You have the victory. This is the normal Christian life.

In I Corinthians 12:3, underline the last half of that verse which says... **and absolutely no one has power to say, Lord Jesus, except in the Holy Spirit.** But you cannot say **Jesus is Lord** in yourself. Only by the help of the Holy Spirit can you change your words, and speak the words of deliverance. Only by the power of the Holy Spirit within you can you speak faith instead of unbelief.

Now look at Matthew Matt 12:34-35

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. (KJV)

12:34-35 HB

34 Offspring of vipers, how do you, being evil, have power to speak inherent good, because out of the super-abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.

35 The inherently good man out of the inherently good treasure of the heart throws out the inherently good, and an evil man out of the evil treasure throws out evil.

If you are going to have victory in the Lord Jesus, you must fill your life to overflowing with the words of the Lord. You must speak out of the overflow. You cannot get a few verses here and few verses there, and become victorious. You have to get full of the whole Word of God. You must become so full that it runs over. You have to speak out of the overflow. You must have a treasure of the Word of God in your heart. A few verses will not do it. You must have huge amounts of the words of God in

your heart. Out of that super-abundance of the words of God in your heart, the Holy Spirit will guide which words to choose for each situation. He will lead you to choose the right words for the right time and place.

Matt 12:36-37

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned. (KJV)

Mat 12:36-37 HB

36 And I say to you, That every idle spoken word whatever men may say, they will give back concerning their word in *the* day of judgment,

37 Because out of your words you will be justified, and out of your words you will be condemned.

Idle words are words that are useless, or not the right words for that need. It is like someone who does not know how to use tools. You need a hammer to drive a nail, but in your ignorance you try to drive the nail with a screwdriver. You will fail. It is the same with the Word of God.

You have to **Make earnest speed to stand yourself alongside of God approved, a workman unashamed, rightly and precisely slicing the word of truth. [2 Tim. 2:15].**

Rightly and precisely slicing are *orthotomounta*; *orthos* = right as in perpendicular, erect, honest; and *tomotos* = cutting as in a decisive and precise stroke, a precise single slicing as in serving the proper slice of meat. The picture is that of rightly and precisely slicing of solid spiritual food to serve to the hearers' needs.

You must be filled with all the words of the Lord. Then you will have the words and the skill to pull out the right words at the right time so your work is established [justified], and does not fall apart [condemned].

5. THE ALL POWERFUL WORD CAN BE STOLEN, RESISTED, AND CHOKED.

Luke 8:5-7

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. (KJV)

306 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

In Luke 8:4-7 HB

5 The one sowing went out to sow his seed, and in his sowing, the one fell alongside of the way, and it was trampled, and the birds of the heaven ate it down.

6 And another fell upon a massive rock, and growing, it dried up, because of not having moisture.

7 And another fell in the midst of the thorns, and the thorns growing up with *it* drowned it.

A sower went out to sow. As he sowed, some fell by the wayside; and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell upon a shallow soil with a rockledge underneath. As soon as it sprang up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. Some fell among thorns which choked it.

First, it was stolen by the birds.

Second, it was resisted by the hard rock in the soil.

Third, it was choked by the thorns.

Stolen.

The same thing happens in people's hearts with the seeds of the word of God. Often when the seeds of the Word of God are planted in the hearts of people by the preacher, the devil steals them before they can sprout. He diverts our attention, we forget. And he snatches them away. Sometime a person will get a seed started, but the hard underlying rock of unbelief resists God's words, and it withers and dies. Or the seed sprouts and begins to grow rapidly, but the preoccupying thoughts of the world outgrow faith, and chokes it.

Even after you are saved this can happen to you in certain areas of your life. You can be a child of God, and be defeated as a pastor. I am sowing the word of victory and power in you right now. Some pastors will be careless, and the devil will steal this word of victory from them. Others will receive it, and make a quick start. But their hearts have been hardened over the years with doubt, greed, and hypocrisy. They will soon fall back into their old ways and be defeated.

You must get your heart thoroughly plowed, fertilized, and watered so that your heart is responsive to God's Word of power and victory. You must root out all the hard rocks of defeat that prevent God's victory from taking root in your heart.

Luke 8:11 says specifically that the seed is the Word of God. Verse 12 says the devil took the Word away from their hearts.

In the fields there were trails where people walked. They made the ground hard by walking across it. The seed could not penetrate, and the birds picked it up from the hard ground. People's hearts become hard because people walk over them. People get kicked and knocked down and walked on. Their hearts become hard and despondent. When they hear the good news about power and victory they are too hardened by defeat and hurt to hear and believe. Some people have a path right across their lives where things and people have hurt them. People hear the message of God's love and victory, but in their heart they cannot believe. They have been so hardened by hurt and defeat.

Also the devil steals it when you do not immediately take it into your heart. By the time I finish giving you this message on victory, if you do not cling to it, believe it, and act upon it immediately, the devil will steal it from you. The opportunity will be gone. The Word is all powerful, but the devil will steal it from you if you do not take action.

The Bible says some seed fell upon a rock. The seed fell into shallow soil on top of a rock.

Resisted.

Some people feel the impact of God's truth about victory. They feel the emotional excitement and sweet anticipation of being victorious in the Lord. They say they will do it. The Word sprouts up real quick. But there is a hard rock of feeling defeated in their heart. They start resisting the Word. They begin to wonder why they ever thought they could be victorious. They feel they made a fool of themselves. Their excitement fades. They fall right back into their same defeated attitude. The Word did not profit them because they resisted it.

Choked.

Others receive the truth on victory in their mind, but they never seem to find time to work it. They continue in the ways of the world, leaving God and His Word out of their lives. The world chokes their faith, and they are defeated. The spoken word is the most powerful force in the world, but for it to be powerful in your life, you must speak it, and keep on speaking it, consistently, without stopping. You must continue until it flows from your heart in an abundance of Victorious Action. In this way God's words produce faith and victory in your life.

Repeat after me:

I shall have what I say. Therefore, I am very disciplined about what I say. According to Proverbs 18:21 I have the power of life or death in the hand on the end of my tongue. The most powerful force in the universe is the power of the

spoken word. This is how God created the world. This is how He does everything He does. I must use the power of the spoken word to bring the unlimited abundance of God into my life. The ultimate accomplishment is to get God's words of faith and victory into my flesh. The Lord Jesus came in the flesh, so I could have victory in flesh. He had victory in His flesh by the Father's thoughts and words. So can I. He has given me His faith and His victory. He has given me His words in the Bible so I can read them, understand them, and repeat them after Him. I have His spoken words, embodied in my flesh, by faith. Speaking His words in my mouth from my heart brings the miracle of change - from defeat to victory. I cannot bring forth defeat and victory from the same fountain. I have, by His words, changed my fountain into a fountain of faith. I have removed the source of defeat. I have reckoned my old nature crucified with Christ. By the power of the Holy Spirit, I have called Jesus, LORD. Since He is my Lord, He is the Provider. There is no lack in my life.

I know that God's words of victory can be stolen, resisted, or choked. I refuse to allow the devil to steal them from me. As soon as I learn a truth from God's Word I put it into words and action. I have rooted out the hard rock of feeling defeated from my heart. I do not resist His word. I cause it to be firmly rooted in me. I keep my priorities straight. I refuse to allow the ways and activities of the world to overgrow God's words. I deliberately cut out every thorn and weed that interferes with my growth in Christ.

**Praise the Lord
for the power of the spoken word.**

Chapter 29

SPEAK TO YOUR NEED

OUTLINE

Mark 11:23-24

Introduction

Speak out loud to your needs.

- 1. Exercise delegated authority.**
- 2. Identify your mountain.**
- 3. Speak to your mountain.**
- 4. Do not judge through it in your heart.**
- 5. Believe what you say.**
- 6. Make your desires and your words agree.**
 - (1) Stop speaking what you do not want.**
 - (2) Start speaking your desires in agreement with Holy Scriptures.**
- 7. Believe you have received.**
 - (1) On Calvary's cross Jesus bought and paid for everything we will ever need.**
 - (2) But I receive it personally only when I appropriate it by faith.**
- 8. Plant the seed of the Word of God.**

Mark 11:22-24

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (KJV)

Mark 11:22-24 HB

~~310~~ ~~Equipping Pastors with Fertile Soils to Disrupt~~ ~~Have Faith of God.~~

23 Because amen, I say to you, That whoever says to this mountain, Be lifted up, and be thrown into the sea, and does not judge through *it* in his heart, but believes that what he says will come to be, it will be to him, whatever he says.

24 Therefore I say to you, All things whatever you ask, praying, believe that you receive, and it will be to you.

The one MAIN element that Jesus teaches in this passage is that you are to speak out loud to your needs, by faith, and remove them from your life. You are to speak out loud to the hindrances in your ministry, and remove them, so that you can accomplish your goals. In order to successfully speak to your needs and remove them, you must

1. EXERCISE DELEGATED AUTHORITY

Jesus said to them, **Have faith of God.** The words in Greek are literally, **Have faith of God.** That means, exercise the faith that originates in the heart of God. In Genesis 1:26-28, God told Adam and Eve to have dominion over all creation. He used a number of words to command man to take control of God's creation, and exercise God's delegated authority over all God's resources. God has absolute authority over all things. He has authority over our needs. But he has delegated to us the authority to meet those needs. We are to take control of ourselves and all things around us by His divine grace. We are to lay hold of all the divine resources that are provided to us through Jesus our Lord. We are to claim them. This is the number one principle you are to use in your ministry.

When God brought the world into existence, He spoke it into existence. When God called forth a man to be the founding father of a great nation, He spoke to him. The phrase, **The word of Jehovah was,** is the phrase used over and over in the Bible. He has given us His words in the Holy Book. The way that we exercise delegated authority to be a good and successful pastor is by speaking the authoritative words He has given us in His Holy Book.

We are to exercise God's faith. It is not our faith that we are exercising. It is His faith.

He originated faith. God has all faith. God is never in doubt about anything. He has delegated that authority to us. He has given us the gift of faith. Therefore, the first principle you must learn to meet your needs and the needs of your people is to exercise God's delegated authority. Exercise God's faith which He has delegated to us to exercise through Jesus Christ.

2. IDENTIFY YOUR MOUNTAIN

Notice in verse 23 He says,**that whoever says to this mountain**. Underline **this. This refers to the specific mountain you desire to remove**. Let us understand about mountains. God did not create mountains. When God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a low-lying plane. It was filled with shallow rivers, streams, and springs. The oceans were very shallow. There was no rain upon the earth. There was no erosion. The earth was watered by the dew.

Man sinned. God sent the flood. When the fountains erupted from beneath, and the rains descended from above, the crust of the earth heaved and writhed in pain. Mountains shot up. The floors of the oceans dropped. When the flood ended, the earth was filled with mountains, rearing their heads in the barrenness that followed God's judgment. Mountains came into the earth as the result of sin and the judgment of God. You will find that mountains serve no good purpose. You cannot farm mountains, and it is difficult to build houses on mountains. Mountains interfere with the movement of the clouds. They create deserts because the clouds will not pass the mountains.

The last thing that the Lord will do when He comes the second time, before His 1,000 year reign begins on the earth, is level the mountains (Revelation 16:20).

Mountain in this verse refers to our problems or needs.

The first thing you must realize is that God did not create your problems.

Satan has created your problems. You have created your problems. Possibly Satan has created your problems through other people, but God did not create your problems. God did not make you a sinner. He did not make you lost. He did not make you sick. He did not make you confused, nor poor, nor ignorant. God did not create your mountains.

The second thing you need to do is recognize what specific mountains stand between you and your doing the will of God.

What needs to be changed? What is standing between me and God's meeting that need? What are your mountains? Identify your mountains.

Third, understand that you remove mountains one at a time.

Generally speaking you do not cast the entire chain of your mountains into the ocean at once. Sometimes we do, but that is not the normal procedure. You identify them one at a time. You deal with them one at a time with the Word of God. You speak to them with the Word of God. You remove them from your life.

3. SPEAK TO YOUR MOUNTAIN

Jesus said,..... **whoever SAYS to this mountain, Be removed, and be thrown into the sea....** You are to speak out loud to your need. You need to think about it, but you must go beyond thinking about it. You must speak out loud to your need. Yes, you must pray about it, but you must do more than pray. You must speak out loud, and command your mountain to move. Some people pray and beg God year after year, and they never receive an answer.

*The reason is that they do not take
the delegated authority God has given them.*

God will not do something for you that He has delegated to you to do. The Bible teaches that you should seek wise counsel. But some people do nothing but go from counselor to counselor. After you have received wise counsel, especially from the Bible and the Holy Spirit, you must stop counseling with people about it. You must stop talking to yourself about it. You must stop judging through it. You must speak directly to your need, and believe that it is removed. Hoping will not make it go away. You must take the delegated authority God has given you, and speak to that mountain.

You must identify your mountain, and you must command it to be removed in the name of Jesus with the words of Holy Scripture. Then you must walk as though it is removed. You will find that it is not there any more.

4. DO NOT JUDGE THROUGH IT IN YOUR HEART

When I studied this command I was surprised when I discovered what the word was in the Greek that the King James Version had translated doubt. The word is to judge through. It is made up of two words, *dia* (through) and *krino* (to separate, to distinguish). *Dia krino* means to distinguish through or to judge through. It is the process of searching through something until you reasoned it through. When I saw its meaning I wondered why Jesus commanded us not to judge through or not to reason through it. So I prayed, and the Holy Spirit told me what Jesus meant.

Here it is: Once you have identified the mountain in your life, and you have determined by the Bible that it is God's will to remove this mountain, you are to command it to be removed, and you are not to judge through or reason through it. In other words, when God has spoken that it is God's will to do something, do not go back, and judge the case again. God promised in His Word to meet your need. You believed Him, and you spoke to the mountain. Do not now begin to question whether or not you did the right thing. You have tried this case according to the Word of God.

You have searched the Bible, and you have found the truth about your need and God's resources to meet your need. You have tried the case and you have come to a true verdict. Jesus is saying that once you have done that, never go back and try the case again. Never go back to determine whether or not you have come to the right conclusion. Base your conclusion upon the Word of God. Settle it in your heart that it is true, and never look back. That is why **Jesus said to him, No one, having thrown his hand upon the plow, and looking at the things left behind, is fit for the kingdom of God.** [Luke 9:62].

You must learn how to know what God says, make a decision to do it, and not look back. You must not constantly wonder if you made the right decision. Command that mountain, according to the Word of God, to get out of your way. Never try the case again in your heart. This is what it means not to doubt in your heart.

5. BELIEVE WHAT YOU SAY

One of the conditions laid down for removing the mountains of need out of your life is that you...**believe that what you say will be to you.**

You cannot believe words you invent out of your own wishful thinking. Some people have a problem distinguishing between reality and their own wishful thinking. You have seen people who tried to make you think they were experts, and yet they knew little or nothing about it. If you have this problem, confess this problem to God. Then get in the Word of God, and start obeying it minutely until you learn the difference between reality and wishful thinking.

Also, you cannot believe with full authority and cannot confess with full authority what someone else said. I do not mean that we are not to receive good words from others. I do not mean that you are not to listen to the man of God over you. What I mean is this:

***If what you know and what you confess
is only what you heard from someone else,
you will never be able to say it with full authority.***

You must hear it from God in your own heart for yourself. You must know first hand what the Bible says. It will not work second hand from some preacher or friend. You must know the Word for yourself. You must believe it for yourself. You cannot ride the coat tail of somebody else's faith.

The only thing you can believe with your whole heart is the Word of God you know. You can believe the words of God only if you have planted them in your heart, and they have sprouted to life under the watering of the Holy Spirit. You must believe what you say. But you can believe what you say only if you say what God says. You can say with confidence what God says only if it is real in your own heart.

To speak with authority, your heart and your mouth must agree.

Authority rests in the heart.

Authority is released by the mouth.

But no amount of words from the mouth can release authority that does not abide in your heart. Doubt in the heart cancels authority regardless of your words. Therefore, you must believe what you say with your whole heart.

6. MAKE YOUR DESIRES AND YOUR WORDS AGREE.

Jesus said in verse 24, **Whatever you ask**, that is, whatever you desire enough to ask. You must make your desires and your words agree. You must have on your mind what you desire, and you must have the words of Holy Scripture on your mind. Master this verse: Matthew 12:34, **Because out of the super-abundance of the heart the mouth speaks**. It is an established fact that what is on your mind comes out of your mouth. If you honestly before God desire something, you will keep it on your mind, and express it with your mouth.

NOW HEAR THIS!

(1) Stop speaking what you do not want.

"I'm scared to death." If you do not want fear, stop speaking what you do not want. Stop speaking fear. Some people concentrate constantly on not being sick. They constantly confess that they do not want to be sick, but their words are filled with sickness. Stop talking about what you do not want. "I don't have any money." "I can't do that." Cut off the flow of these negative words. Stop talking about what you do not want. Exercise your will to cut off these words from your mouth.

Begin to fill your mind with the good things. Let out of the gate of your mouth only the true desires of your heart, and stop speaking what you do not desire. Stop talking about not being sick, and begin to thank God you are well. Stop saying that you do not want to be poor. Begin to thank God you have His abundance.

(2) Start speaking your desires in agreement with Holy Scripture.

This I say again and again. This is the heart of the matter. You cannot speak careless words and have the victory. You must speak your desires in agreement with Holy Scripture. Holy Scripture is the ground of all reality. Wishful thinking will not work miracles for you, but the truths of Holy Scripture will. Start speaking your desires in agreement with Holy Scripture.

Here is an extremely important principle: Confess your desires aloud in your prayers, privately, aloud to yourself, and to your spouse, but do not tell other people your private goals.

Then keep all your conversations with everyone else consistent with your desires, but do not confess all of your private desires publicly.

Do not tell all your friends your private desires. Many people cannot keep their mouths shut about private matters. You can be around some people five minutes, and they have told you everything about all their private troubles and desires.

This is very important:

Do not tell people your needs.

If you tell people what you need, you are looking to people to answer your prayers, instead of God. Your faith is not in God. Your faith is in your own arrangements and in people.

I know people who are extremely nice to rich people, and very hateful to the poor. They are not being nice to the rich because they love the rich. They are being nice to the rich because they hope the rich will give them something. Their faith is in rich people. Their faith is not in God. You should be nice to everyone, not because they have money, or do not have money, but because both the rich and the poor are created in the image of God. He loves us all the same.

But God gives only to those who have faith. God does not give you something because you need it.

God does not respond to need.

God responds to faith.

Everyone needs to be saved, but they will not be saved, unless they exercise faith. All sick people need to be healed, but only those who exercise faith will be healed. Millions of people are hungry, and will starve to death, but only those who exercise faith in God will definitely receive food. Never look to man for what only God can give. And always remember: God does not respond to need. He only responds to faith.

Confess your desires to God privately, to yourself; and privately to your spouse.

Keep your conversation with everybody else consistent with your desires.

Then look to God, and God alone, to meet your needs.

Do not limit God as to how God is going to answer your prayers. Years ago a woman worked in our church. She cleaned the building, and we paid her. She constantly asked people for money. One of the deacons asked me if had I talked with her about this. I said, "No, I did not know she was doing this." He told me she had asked him for \$10.00. Other members told me she was begging from many people. She was being paid a good salary for cleaning the church building, and she was a church member. I called her aside, and told her that it was wrong to beg people for money. Her answer was, "Well, the Bible says, 'ask and you shall receive', so I was asking." She had not discovered Whom to ask. You ask God, and you confess it to God. You do

not ask people. You keep your conversation with others consistent with your desires, and consistent with the Word of God. You do not look to people. You look to God.

7. BELIEVE YOU HAVE RECEIVED!

Mark 11:24 says,....All things whatever you ask, praying, believe that you receive, and it will be to you.

When we confess our desires to God in prayer, according to His Word, we are to believe that we have received it in Him. It is already ours. We received it when we believed, regardless of how long it is before we have it in our hand. It will be manifested to us at the right time and place.

There are two things that you need to understand on believing that you have received:

(1) On Calvary's cross Jesus bought and paid for everything that we will ever need.

When Jesus died and rose again, he bought and received for me the forgiveness of all my sins and my eternal salvation. On the cross, He bought and received for me all the resources that I will need for holy and successful living, all the days of my earthly life. As my days are upon this earth, so Jesus bought all the strength that I will need until He calls me home. He bought and received for me, and is holding in trust for me to receive, health, happiness, peace of mind, financial resources, a good family, and everything! I have received all the resources of the heavenly Father in Jesus when He purchased it for me upon the cross.

(2) But, I receive it personally only when I appropriate it by faith.

I received it the moment I believed. Did Jesus purchase upon the cross enough salvation to save everybody in the world? Yes, He did. Is that salvation theirs? Yes, it is. Is everyone in the world saved? No. Will everyone be saved? No. Why not? Because they never receive by faith what Jesus bought for them. Although Jesus bought and paid for everything that I will ever need for all my life, and it is mine, it is not transferred from Him to me for my actual use until I transfer it by an act of faith. When I believe it in my heart, when I confess it with my mouth, and act in agreement with my confession, at that moment it is transferred to me. Therefore, to appropriate his riches, you must believe in your heart. If you believe in your heart you will confess it with

your words. When your desires and your words agree, you believe it in your heart. When your desires and your words agree, you act in agreement with the Word of God, that you have received. You can get up from your knees, and go on your way assured that it is yours. You know it will be manifested to your sight at the right time and place. Believe you have received.

8. PLANT THE SEED OF THE WORD.

Matt 17:20

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. (KJV)

Mat 17:20 HB

And Jesus said to them, Because of your unbelief; because, Amen, I say to you, If you have faith as a grain of mustard you will speak to this mountain, Change places from here to there, and it will change places, and absolutely nothing will be without power to you.

In Matthew 17:20 note the grain of mustard seed. Planting the Word of God in your heart brings great results like the mustard seed. The mustard seed is so small, yet it produces such a great tree. So the Word of God seems so small, but in your heart, in your mouth, and in your actions, it produces astounding results.

In order to successfully speak with authority to your needs, you must plant the seed of the Word of God in your heart.

Chapter 30

PREDICTING YOUR FUTURE WITH THE PROMISES OF GOD

OUTLINE

Acts 2:17-18

1. The prophecy of Joel is for you today.

- (1) **All believers, young and old, receive the Holy Spirit in these last days.**
- (2) **All believers receive dreams and visions from the Lord about their future.**
- (3) **All believers prophesy with regard to their future.**

2. Exercise the gift of prophecy

- (1) **to build up - yourself and others.**
- (2) **to comfort – yourself and others.**
- (3) **to encourage – yourself and others.**

1. The prophecy of Joel is for you today.

Acts 2:17-18

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: (KJV)

Acts 2:17-18 HB

17 And it will be in the last days, says God, I will pour out from my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy, and your youth will gaze upon visions, and your elders will dream dreams;

18 And upon my menservants and upon my maidservants I will pour out in those days from my Spirit, and they will prophesy;

This lesson will be short and to the point. Please do not think because it is short it is less important. This lesson is extremely important. The purpose of this lesson is to teach you how to predict your future. This promise in Joel 2:28-29, which Peter said was fulfilled on the Day of Pentecost, and is in effect throughout this New Covenant age until the second coming of the Lord, says that

[1] All believers, young and old, receive the Holy Spirit in these last days.

[2] All believers receive visions and dreams from the Lord about the future.

[3] All believers prophesy with regard to the future.

We know from the entire New Covenant that although all believers receive the Holy Spirit in the new birth, they are not necessarily **filled** with the Holy Spirit, or **baptized** in His power, and living in that fullness of power - but all believers have this fullness and power available to them. We know also that not all believers receive dreams and visions about the future, or if they do, they seem to ignore them, and do not act upon them diligently. But again, we know the New Covenant teaches that every believer has this capacity and privilege if they will only use it. We also know that not all believers ever prophesy about the future. But again we know the New Covenant teaches that they have the capacity and privilege if they will only get in the position to use it.

2. Exercise the gift of prophecy.

1 Cor 14:3

But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 14:3,

And the one prophesying speaks to men to build up, and comfort, and encourage.

We know from 1 Corinthians 14:1 that God wills that all believers prophesy. This is not specifically said about any other spiritual gift, but it is said about prophecy. We know from verse 3 that the main purposes for the gift of prophecy in all believers are:

(1) To build up – yourself and others.

(2) To comfort – yourself and others.

(3) To encourage – yourself and others.

Build up is the Greek word for architecture, building a building.

Comfort is the word *paraclete*, which is the word used for the Holy Spirit where it is translated **Comforter**. It means to call one to your side to help you, or to call to your side as a challenge to do what you are to do.

Encourage is the word to relate to, to put yourself in the other person's position, to let him know he is not alone.

You can exercise this gift of prophecy in one way by predicting your own future. You can build up yourself, urge yourself forward, and let yourself know that you are not alone by prophesying the promises of God over yourself. Take God's promises on the subject of your need, and study them thoroughly. Pray over them. Become totally committed to them. Then put them in your mouth, and say, "This promise of God will be fulfilled in my life. This is what my future will be. God has given me power to take these promises. His Covenant is established in my life, which He gave to our Father Abraham, which was put into effect by Jesus Christ. According to Deuteronomy 8:18 He has given me power to get resources. I will get resources to glorify Him to develop myself, and to bless others."

Take God's promises, and personalize them to yourself. Go over them until you know them by memory. Keep them constantly in your mouth. Let them come alive to your heart with the *rhema* of God. It will come to be. You are predicting your future. This is building up, comforting, and encouraging. You are building up yourself. You are comforting yourself. You are encouraging yourself.

Chapter 31

FIVE STEPS TO POWER

OUTLINE

Luke 4:4

Read, Pray, Bind, Loose, Share.

- 1. Read the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.**
 - (1) Spend time reading the Bible every day.**
 - (2) Underline or shade special verses that speak to your heart.**
 - (3) Memorize Bible verses.**

- 2. Pray the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.**
 - (1) Pray the Word of God into your own life.**
 - (2) Pray the Word of God into the lives of your people.**
 - (3) Pray the Word of God into the lost of your community.**

- 3. Bind the evil forces with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.**

- 4. Use the Word of God to loose heaven's abundance under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.**

- 5. Share the Word of God with the people under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.**

Luke 4:4

And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. (KJV)

Luke 4:4 HB

And Jesus answered to him, saying, It has been written that, Man shall absolutely not live upon bread alone, but upon every spoken word of God. Deu 8:3

The number one thing in your life must always be, to be like the Great Shepherd, the Lord Jesus. The five things that will make you more and more like Jesus every day, and fill you with power are:

1. Read the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

2. Pray the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy spirit.

3. Bind the evil forces with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

4. Loose the abundance of heaven with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

5. Share the Word of God with the people under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

Read. Pray. Bind. Loose. Share.

Read. Pray. Bind. Loose. Share.

Read. Pray. Bind. Loose. Share.

Say those words over and over until they are more normal than eating and sleeping. Say the entire statements listed above under 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.

Jesus deliberately received the anointing of the Holy Spirit upon His ministry at His baptism. Read Luke, chapter 4. Notice that everything He did was under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

Look back at Luke 3:21-22. Jesus was baptized, and the Holy Spirit descended upon Him in the shape of a dove.

324 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

In Luke 4:1,

Jesus returned from His baptism full of the Holy Spirit.

Immediately the Holy Spirit drove Him into the desert to do spiritual warfare with the devil. In 4:14 Jesus returned from the Temptations into Galilee in the power of the Spirit. In 4:18 He went to the service in the synagogue in Nazareth. It was the custom in a synagogue that any godly Hebrew could stand up and speak. The rabbi allowed Jesus to speak. He deliberately asked for the book of Isaiah. He deliberately found the verses He had already claimed for Himself, and read them. **The Spirit of the Lord is upon me.**

In 4:21 He said, **This day this scripture has been fulfilled in your ears.** Everything He did, He did under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. It must be the same with you. The reason he received the anointing, or the baptism of the Holy Spirit, upon Him the day of His water baptism, is,

He had previously found those promises about Himself in the Bible, and had claimed them for Himself. He read the Bible under the anointing of the Holy Spirit, and found Himself in the Bible.

You must do the same thing. You must understand that Jesus became a man in our place. He did everything we should have done, but could not do. When He completed the life God designed for every human, Jesus gave His life for you and me. Then He commanded us to go out and do in His name what He would do if He were still here in the flesh.

He promised in John 14:12,

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. (KJV)

John 14:12 HB

Amen, amen, I say to you, The one believing into me, the works that I do, he will also do, and greater ones than these he will do, because I go to my Father.

Jesus lived the perfect life for us. By faith we took HIM into us. Jesus died, rose, ascended, and poured out His Holy Spirit. To all who take Him, He steps inside of us. We become His living representatives. We go out in the power of the Holy Spirit, with Jesus in us, and do the work of the Lord.

This is the work the pastor must do. This is why, like Jesus, you must find yourself in the Bible. This is the work that every believer must do. The pastor is the one who leads his people to minister miracles to others in the name of Jesus.

1. Read The Word Of God Under The Anointing Of The Holy Spirit.

Get the following picture of the Lord Jesus in your heart. Jesus had to learn the Bible the same way that every human has to learn it. The Son of God emptied Himself of all His knowledge when He left heaven to be born a baby, Philippians 2:5-8; Mark 13:32. You can learn everything God wants you to know the same way Jesus learned. He learned everything He knew by listening to his godly parents, godly relatives, and godly spiritual leaders, reading the Bible, and by talking with the Father through the Holy Spirit.

You have the same sources. You have godly people to teach you. You have the Bible, and you have communication with the Father through the Holy Spirit. Jesus heard the words of the Bible in His little ears before He was old enough to read. His parents obeyed the Law of the Lord given to Moses in Deuteronomy 6:1-9. They told Him the stories from the Bible as an infant. As He began to read at five or six years of age, they had Bible verses on the walls, the doors, the gateposts, and on the sleeves of His little clothes.

By the age of twelve He had read and studied the Bible thoroughly. Remember! He was not brought up listening to radio or by watching television. He knew the Bible so well that He amazed the rabbis with His questions and answers at age twelve. He met God as His Father by reading the Bible and listening to the Holy Spirit. As a child, a teenager, and a young adult, He read and saw Himself in the Bible.

He learned who He was by reading the Bible under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. You must learn who you are by reading the Bible under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. Day after day, year after year, He learned verse after verse about Himself. He read the Bible under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit revealed to Him that many verses were speaking directly of Him. He took those verses into Himself. He believed them. He began to act upon them. They came to be in His life.

When He stood to read Isaiah that day in the synagogue in Nazareth, he was doing what He had planned to do for a long time. He had found those verses years before. He knew they were for Him. He looked forward to the day when He would read

326 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

them, and say, Luke 4:21, **This day this scripture is fulfilled in your ears.** This is how He did everything. He found what God said about Him in the Bible, took it as His own, and lived it. This is the way you must live. You must find what God says about you in the Bible, take it as your own, and live it.

How To Read The Bible

[1] Spend time reading the Bible every day.

If you know very little about the Bible, read Genesis, Exodus, Numbers, and Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John first. Begin at Genesis 1. Read 1, 2, or 3 chapters, or more if you can. The next day begin where you stopped, and continue to read until you have completed Genesis. Read Exodus and Numbers. Then read Matthew, then Mark, then Luke, and then John. After that you need to read the Psalms and Proverbs. Some people read a chapter in Psalms, and a chapter in Proverbs each day, as they read through other books of the Bible. My father constantly read straight through the Bible, but as he read any part of the Bible, that same day he read a chapter in Psalms and a chapter in Proverbs. After you have read Genesis, Exodus, Numbers, and the Gospels, you need to read through the rest of the Bible.

I read straight through the entire Bible once every 12 to 18 months. In addition to this I read and study other parts of the Bible where God is leading me to prepare messages for my people.

[2] Underline or shade special verses that speak to your heart.

As you read the Bible, God will speak to you through certain verses. As you read you will see special promises. Underline them with a pen, or shade them with a colored marker. This will help you write the Word of God on the tablet of your heart.

[3] Memorize Bible verses.

Select verses that the Holy Spirit makes precious or important to you. Read them aloud. Close your eyes, and say the verse aloud. Do that until you can say the verse or several verses without seeing them on the page. Visualize the words on the page inside your mind with your eyes closed. Throughout the day as you do other things say these verses aloud or in your mind.

Read the Bible. Mark verses in the Bible. Memorize verses of the Bible. God says to you in

Prov 7:1-3

- 1 My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments with thee.
- 2 Keep my commandments, and live; and my law as the apple of thine eye.
- 3 Bind them upon thy fingers, write them upon the table of thine heart.(KJV)

Proverbs 7:1-3 HB

- 1 **My son, hedge about my sayings, and hide my commandments with you.**
- 2 **Hedge about my commandments, and live, and my law as the little man of your eye.**
- 3 **Bind them upon your fingers; write them upon the tablet of your heart.**

Open your Bible and mark these verses in your Bible now, and begin to memorize them. As you read, mark, and memorize the Bible, ask the Holy Spirit to be upon you in power. Believe that the anointing of the Holy Spirit is on you to give you understanding of His Word. Believe that He is speaking to you through His Word.

2. Pray the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

The one thing God wants to hear in your mouth as you pray to Him is His Word. Read the prayers of the great men and women of the Bible. Everyone of them quoted the Bible to God in their prayers. When Moses prayed for the children of Israel, asking God to forgive them, Moses reminded God of what God had said, Exo. 32:10-14. It is the same with every prayer recorded in the Bible. Each believer reminded God of what God had already said, and was written in the Bible. Your opinions do not move God to answer your prayers. The opinions of other preachers or people do not move God to answer your prayers.

The one thing that moves God to answer your prayers is for Him to hear His words in your mouth.

(1) Pray the Word of God into your own life.

Take Bible verses the Holy Spirit has put on your heart from your Bible reading, and pray them to God. For example, our verses for this message are Luke 4:18-21. Use Luke 4:18-21 in your prayers like this:

“Father, in the name of Jesus, I believe the Spirit of the Lord is upon me. Anoint me to preach the gospel to the poor. You have set me apart and sent me to heal the brokenhearted. Anoint me with Your Holy Spirit to preach freedom to the captives.

Anoint me to recover sight to the blind. Anoint me to send out in freedom those who are bruised. Anoint me to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. Father, this day this Scripture is fulfilled in me. I am anointed by the Holy Spirit to perform the work of Christ. Gracious words will proceed out of my mouth. Praise Your holy name. Amen.”

This is what I mean when I say, “Pray the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.”

Pray the Word of God into the lives of your spouse and your children. Find Scriptures that describe a godly wife, a godly husband, a godly father and mother, and godly children. Pray those verses into yourself, your wife or husband, and your children. Pray these verses for your spouse and your children when you are praying alone. Also pray for one another when you are together. Do not condemn your family. Do not beat them over the head with the Word of God. Pray in genuine love. You cannot change your spouse. You can change yourself with God’s help, but you cannot change your spouse. Love your spouse. Be courteous, thoughtful, and encouraging to your spouse. Let God change your spouse.

Discipline your children, but pray for them first. Never discipline your children in anger. Pray first. Get your heart filled with love. Talk to them. Love them. Have prayer with them. Explain to them why you have to discipline them. Pray with them first, then discipline them. Then pray with them again after you have disciplined them. The Holy Spirit will take over, bless, and change your home. Pray the Word of God into your family. Pray the Word of God into every need of your life. This is the way to bring the abundance of heaven into your domain.

(2) Pray the Word of God into the lives of your people.

Find verses in the Bible that describe how the Spirit of God is to come upon believers, how they are to receive revelation from the Spirit in their hearts, how they are to have wisdom and knowledge, and how they are to live and serve God [such as Ephesians 1]. Pray these Scriptures for your people in your private prayers. Pray these verses over your people when you see them and pray with them in their homes. Pray these verses over your people in the church services. Pray the Word of God into your people’s lives under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

(3) Pray the Word of God into the lost of your com-

munity.

Pray for a mighty outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon your community. Pray for the Father to help you lift up Jesus in your community so they can be drawn to Him, John 12:32. Pray for the Father to draw the people of your community to Jesus, John 6:44. I trust now that the Holy Spirit has given you revelation knowledge of what I mean when I say, "Pray the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit." I will trust God to lead you to apply this holy principle to every area of your life.

3. Bind the evil forces with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

Jesus in Matthew 16:18-19 gave us authority to bind on earth what is already bound in heaven, and to loose on earth what is already loosed in heaven. Bind evil with the Word of God.

Please study how Jesus defeated the devil in the temptations. Every time the devil threw a temptation at Jesus, Jesus answered that temptation with verses out of the Bible. The Holy Spirit led Jesus into this battle with Satan. Jesus had Bible verses written in His heart since He was a child, 2 Tim. 3:15-17. When the devil tempted Him, the Holy Spirit brought to His mind immediately out of His heart the exact verse He needed. Out of all the verses Jesus had in His heart the Holy Spirit chose the exact verses He needed for that moment.

The Holy Spirit can do that for you only if you have the verses in your heart available for use when you need them. Jesus used the verse the Holy Spirit chose to resist that temptation. The Holy Spirit anointed that verse to Him at that moment, and He won over the devil.

When the devil threw a temptation at Jesus, Jesus immediately bound that temptation with a Word of God. The temptation was immediately bound and defeated. Jesus won. You can do the same thing, if you battle the devil with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

Memorize Ephesians 6:10-19. Be clothed in the whole armor of God. Go over your armor every day, and be sure you are fully clothed in the whole armor of God. Use those words of Scripture to make you more powerful against the devil and evil spirits every day.

330 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Pray these words against Satan and his demons. Bind them away from your life. Stand against the devil, and he will flee from you, James 4:7. Learn how to battle the invisible evil forces that attack you. Come against them with the Word of God. Do not ask God to defeat the devil for you. Do not ask God to remove the devil from your affairs. You are wasting your time. God will not do it. The Lord Jesus has already defeated the devil, Heb. 2:14-15. The Lord Jesus has already given you the authority to put the devil out of your life, James 4:7. He has already given you the power to overcome every move of the devil, Luke 10:19. Never request God to defeat the devil. You take the authority God has placed in you in Jesus Christ. Declare to the devil and his evil spirits that they are defeated. Order them out of your life.

You have authority to order them out of your life. You have authority to bind him out of your family, but your family members cannot have the victory over the devil until they order him out of their lives. You can bind the devil in your church, but you cannot remove him from your church members' lives until they rise up in faith, and order him out of their lives. Use the Word of God to bind the forces of evil under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

4. Use the Word of God to loose heaven's abundance under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

John 3:27

27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. (KJV)

John 3:27 HB

John answered, and said, A man absolutely does not have the power to take anything, unless it is given to him out of heaven.

All of your resources are loosed from heaven to you on earth. When you tithe in faith, God opens the windows of heaven, and pours out to you blessings, Mal. 3:10-11. Philippians 4:19, **And my God shall fill all your need according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.** God's riches are in glory in Christ Jesus. He supplies your needs out of those riches stored in Christ who is seated at the right hand of the Father. Colossians 1:19, **Because it was thought good for all the fullness to be housed in him.**

Five Steps to Power

Everything you need is in Christ. You loose your heavenly abundance in Christ by asking God, in the name of Jesus, with words of Holy Scripture, and by declaring your faith with words of Holy Scripture in your mouth. You lay up treasures in heaven, Matt. 6:20, by your faithfulness to Christ over the years. When you need resources you can take hold of your treasures in heaven in Christ, and use them for your present need. God commands us in

Heb 4:16

Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need. (KJV)

Hebrews 4:16 HB

Let us come therefore with outspokenness to the throne of grace, that we may take mercy, and find grace for well-timed help.

Loose your heavenly Source with the Word of God under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

5. Share the Word of God with the people under the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

Never stand before your people to preach unless you know you have heard God's voice, and you know you have His message for that hour. Read the Bible. Study the Bible. Meditate on the Word of God. Pray to God for His message for your people. Stay before God in prayer each day until you know you have heard God's voice telling you what to tell the people. Do not give them your opinions. Do not give them a sermon you read in someone's book simply because you cannot think of anything else to say. Get alone with God and your Bible until you hear God's voice. You may preach a sermon you read or heard from another preacher if the Holy spirit tells you that is what you are to preach, but get your messages from God, even if it is a sermon from one of my books or recording.

Get the Bible verses God tells you to give to your people. You cannot give them the whole Bible at one time. You cannot simply pick out something, and say, "I believe I will talk about this." No. Ask God to tell you what your people need. Read His Word. Commune with the Holy Spirit until you know you have received a word from the Lord.

Claim 1 Samuel 3:19-21 for yourself.

19 And Samuel grew, and the LORD was with him, and did let none of his words fall to the ground.

332 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

20 And all Israel from Dan even to Beersheba knew that Samuel was established to be a prophet of the LORD.

21 And the LORD appeared again in Shiloh: for the LORD revealed himself to Samuel in Shiloh by the word of the LORD. (KJV)

1 Sam 3:19-21 HB

19 And Samuel became great, and Jehovah was with him, and did not let any of his words fall to the ground.

20 And all Israel from Dan even to Beer Sheba knew by seeing that Samuel was believed as a prophet of Jehovah.

21 And again Jehovah appeared in Shiloh, because Jehovah revealed himself to Samuel in Shiloh by the word of Jehovah.

The Lord will reveal Himself to you in your place by the word of the Lord, if you will only claim it by the faith of Jesus Christ. All the people of your area will know that you are established a prophet of the Lord. God will not let any of your words fall to the ground. That means your words will not fail. Your words will be fulfilled. God bless you!

Section Eight - Your Prosperity

God wants you to prosper, and God is your Source of prosperity. God has not given you the gift of poverty. There is no such thing. The poor have the good news preached unto them [Matthew 11:5]. Good news to the poor is that they do not have to remain poor.

The lies of the devil have kept God's people poor down through the ages. The devil wants Christians to believe that it is God's will for them to be poor. As long as they are poor they have no resources with which to serve God. The devil then takes all the riches and uses them to satisfy the lusts of the flesh, and builds his evil strongholds in people's lives.

We must remember that it is Jehovah our God who gives us power to make resources, that He may establish His covenant which He swore to our fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob [Deuteronomy 8:18]. That covenant was fulfilled in Jesus, and is in full effect today. Jesus Himself commanded us to seek first the kingdom of heaven, and He promised that all these material things will be added to us, Mat 6:33.

I have written the spirit of prosperity into all the chapters of *The Pastor's Manual*, but here are three special chapters on prosperity.

A great preacher of prosperity in the United States offered to furnish gospel tracts free to a certain denominational group in one of the very poor nations of the world. One of the leaders in the mission in that country said, "Well, brother, do you really think that these poor people in our country are ready for the doctrine of prosperity? I don't think these poor people need the doctrine of prosperity yet." The good man making the offer replied, "Let me ask you some questions. Does a sinner need to hear the doctrine of forgiveness? Does a sick man need to hear the doctrine of healing?" "Well, yes, of course, they do," the man was forced to agree. "If anyone needs the doctrine of prosperity, the poor of this world need to hear it. How else do you think they are going to get out of their poverty? If a sinner needs to hear the gospel of forgiveness to be saved, and the sick need to hear the gospel of healing to be healed, then the poor need to hear the gospel of prosperity to get out of their poverty. You do

334 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

not expect a sinner to save himself. You do not expect the sick to heal himself. Do not expect the poor to deliver himself. That is why the Lord came, to deliver the poor man out of his poverty. Tell him the good news, and stop thinking he is incapable of receiving it.”

I am greatly burdened by missionaries and preachers who look down on their brothers and sisters in the poor countries of the world as being less capable than believers in the rich nations of the world. They are not. They have the same grace of God, and the same intelligence that the rest of us have. Let us give them the whole Word of God, and allow them to believe God for themselves. Let us stop keeping them dependent on us. Every believer needs to become dependent on God, and on no one else.

You, brothers and sisters, in the poor places of this earth, realize that your rich brother is not your source. Your Source is God, the same Source that every believer has. Stop looking to man to meet your needs, and look to God and Him alone. Amen!

Chapter 32

GOD WANTS YOU TO PROSPER

OUTLINE

Deuteronomy 8:18

- 1. Acknowledge that God owns everything.**
 - (1) He owns the universe because He created it.**
 - (2) He owns the universe because He preserves it.**
 - (3) He owns the universe because He controls it**
 - (4) He owns the universe because He redeemed it.**

- 2. Formally give everything you have to God.**
 - (1) In your heart give everything to God.**
 - (2) The Lord is now the direct owner of all your things.**
 - (3) You can now buy, sell, give, take, or use only in consultation with Him.**

- 3. Begin to give a minimum of ten percent to the ministry.**
 - (1) Tithing to the ministry has been practiced by God's people since the beginning.**
 - (2) Tithing is God's way of spreading the gospel.**
 - (3) Tithing is your way of showing righteousness.**
 - (4) Tithing shows that you really believe God is the owner of everything.**
 - (5) Tithing is God's way of bringing prosperity to your house.**

- 4. Start exercising genuine discipline over your spending.**

- 5. Learn and practice the Bible teachings on giving and receiving.**
 - (1) Giving must be out of love.**
 - (2) Get greater joy out of giving than receiving.**
 - (3) Know that you cannot outgive God.**
 - (4) Be as consistent with God as God is with you.**

Conclusion: The Misunderstood Story.

336 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Deut 8:18

But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. (KJV)

Deu 8:18 HB

But you shall remember Jehovah, your God, because it is he who gives you power to make resources, that he may raise up his covenant which he swore to your fathers, as *it is this day*.

God wants YOU to prosper! He wants you to prosper spiritually, psychologically, physically, socially, and financially. He wants you to be saved. He wants you to be powerful in spirit. He wants you to have peace of mind, good emotions, and a strong will. He wants you to have good health, and He wants you to prosper financially with all the good things that He created for us to enjoy.

For sometime now I have followed these Five Steps to Prosperity. I have given them to others. They work. If you will obey these five principles with the right heart attitude, God guarantees you will prosper.

1. ACKNOWLEDGE THAT GOD OWNS EVERYTHING

GOD OWNS THE EARTH

Ps 24:1

The earth is the LORD's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. (KJV)

Psalm 24:1 HB

The earth *is* Jehovah's, and its fullness; the inhabited earth, and they who dwell in it.

GOD OWNS THE HEAVENS

Deut 10:14

Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens is the LORD's thy God, the earth also, with all that therein is. (KJV)

Deuteronomy 10:14 HB

Behold, the heavens and the heaven of the heavens are Jehovah's your God, the earth, with all that *is* in it.

GOD OWNS EVERYTHING on the face of the earth.

Job 41:11

Who hath prevented me, that I should repay him? whatsoever is under the whole heaven is mine. (KJV)

Job 41:11 HB

Who has gone before me to make me complete? All under the heavens *is* mine.

GOD OWNS ALL GOLD AND SILVER

Ezek 16:17

Thou hast also taken thy fair jewels of my gold and of my silver, which I had given thee, and madest to thyself images of men, and didst commit whoredom with them, (KJV)

Ezekiel 16:17 HB

And you have taken your ornamented jewels of my gold and of my silver which I had given you....

GOD OWNS ALL TIME - DAY AND NIGHT

Ps 74:16-17

16 The day is thine, the night also is thine: thou hast prepared the light and the sun.

17 Thou hast set all the borders of the earth: thou hast made summer and winter. (KJV)

Psalm 74:16-17 HB

The day is yours; also the night is yours; you set up the light and the sun.

GOD OWNS OUR BREATH AND BEING.

Acts 17:25

25 Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; (KJV)

338 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Acts 17:28

For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. (KJV)

Acts 17:28 HB

Because in him we live, and move, and are....

GOD OWNS ALL SOULS

Ezek 18:4

Behold, all souls are mine...(KJV)

Ezekiel 18:4 HB

Behold, all souls are mine!...

THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE IS GOD'S

God owns everything because He created it; because He preserves it; because He controls it; and because He redeemed it. Read the following Scriptures which show this:

(1) HE OWNS THE UNIVERSE BECAUSE HE CREATED IT.

Gen 1:1

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. (KJV)

Genesis 1:1 HB

First God created the heavens and the earth.

Rev 4:11

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. (KJV)

Revelation 4:11 HB

You are worthy, Lord, to take glory, and honor, and power; because you created all things, and through your will they exist and were created.

(2) HE OWNS THE UNIVERSE BECAUSE HE PRESERVES IT.

Heb 1:3

Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; (KJV)

Hebrews 1:3 HB

Who being the full shining of the glory, and the exact character of his essence, and upholding all things by the spoken word of his power,

(3) HE OWNS THE UNIVERSE BECAUSE HE CONTROLS IT.

Isa 46:9-10

9 Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me,

10 Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: (KJV)

Isaiah 46:9-10 HB

9 Remember the first things of ancient times, because I *am* God, and there exists none else; God, and there is no other like me,

10 Causing the end to stand out boldly from the beginning, and from ancient times those *things* which are not *yet* done, saying, My counsel shall rise, and I will do all my desire,

(4) HE OWNS THE UNIVERSE BECAUSE HE REDEEMED IT.

I Jn 2:2

And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. (KJV)

1 John 2:2 HB

And he is the covering for our sins, and absolutely not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

340 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Rom 8:21

Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. (KJV)

Romans 8:21 HB

Because also the creature itself will be set free from the servitude to decay into the glorious liberty of the children of God

**THIS MUST BE A CONTINUING ACKNOWLEDGMENT.
CONFESS IT IN YOUR PRAYERS,
YOUR CONVERSATION WITH OTHERS,
AND YOUR DAILY ATTITUDE.**

**2. FORMALLY GIVE EVERYTHING YOU HAVE
INTO GOD'S HANDS.**

Luke 18:22

Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. (KJV)

Luke 18:22 HB

And Jesus hearing these things, said to him, Yet one *thing* to you is lacking; sell all, as much as you have, and distribute to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven, and come here; follow me.

Luke 14:26

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. (KJV)

Luke 14:26 HB

If anyone comes to me, and absolutely does not hate his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, and even his own soul also, he absolutely does not have the power to be my disciple.

WHAT THESE SCRIPTURES MEAN IS:

- (1) In your heart you acknowledge that God is the Owner of all your property. You no longer look upon it as yours, but the Lord's.
- (2) The Lord is now the direct owner of all your material possessions. You receive it back from Him as the manager of it for Him, with the freedom to enjoy it and use it for your good as long as you go by His direction for everything you do.
- (3) You can buy, sell, give, take, or use only in consultation with Him and following His directions.

Let me explain what I mean by signing the deed to all your property over to God. I do not mean that you are to give it to the church, or some mission board. I mean that in your heart, between you and God, you tell God that you realize that He is the Owner of everything, and you sign a statement in your heart to that effect. Then you confess to God that He has appointed you the manager for those things under your control. You declare to God that from that day forward you will genuinely act in your heart and in your physical actions that He is the Owner, and that you are the manager under Him.

3. BEGIN GIVING A MINIMUM OF TEN PERCENT TO THE MINISTRY.

There are several things you need to know about the tithe:

(1) Tithing to the ministry has been practiced by God's people from the beginning of time.

Gen 14:18-20

18 And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God.

19 And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth:

20 And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all. (KJV)

Genesis 14:18-20 HB

18 And Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought out bread and wine, and he was the priest of the most high God;

342 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

19 And he blessed him, and said, Blessed is Abram of the most high God, the one who erected the heavens and earth;

20 And blessed is the most high God, who has delivered your oppressors into your hand. And he gave him a tithe of all.

(2) Tithing is God's way of spreading the gospel of salvation.

Someone provided money to support a man of God so you could hear how to be saved. This is the greatest thing that could ever happen to you. God asks of you this small investment so you can have a part in getting others saved.

(3) Tithing is your way of showing gratitude.

Read the story of Jacob in Genesis 28. Esau vowed to kill Jacob. Jacob left home to get away from Esau. His first night away he slept under the stars with a rock for a pillow. God appeared to him in a dream and promised to be with him, and return him safely to his father's house. So Jacob made a vow.

Gen 28:20-22

20 And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on,

21 So that I come again to my father's house in peace; then shall the LORD be my God:

22 And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God's house: and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee. (KJV)

Genesis 28:20-22 HB

20 And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will hedge me about in this way that I walk, and will give me food to eat, and clothing to put on,

21 And I return to my father's house in peace, then Jehovah shall be my God,

22 And this stone, which I have set for a memorial column, shall be the house of God, and I will tithe the tenth to you of all that you give me.

(4) Tithing shows that you really believe God is the owner of everything.

Lev 27:30

30 And all the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is the LORD's: it is holy unto the LORD. (KJV)

Leviticus 27:30 HB

And all of the tithe of the land, of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is Jehovah's; it is holy to Jehovah.

You are not speaking the truth when you say that everything you have belongs to God if you do not tithe, and do not obey Him in how to spend the other ninety percent. If it actually belongs to God, demonstrate it by paying a minimum of 10% to His ministry.

(5) It is God's way of bringing prosperity to your house.

Mal 3:10-11

10 Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.

11 And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the LORD of hosts. (KJV)

Malachi 3:10-11 HB

10 Bring all the tithes into the storehouse, and there shall be fresh food in my house, and test me now *with* this, says Jehovah of hosts, if I will not open wide to you the windows of the heavens, and pour you out a blessing, until there is not enough *room for it*.

11 And I will rebuke the devourer for you, and he shall not destroy your fruits of the soil, and your vine shall not miscarry in the field, says Jehovah of hosts.

This is the only place in the Bible where God challenges you to put Him to the test. Tithing opens the windows of heaven for you both spiritually and materially. In Matthew 23:23 Jesus places His stamp of approval on tithing. St. Paul teaches it clearly as God's way of supporting the ministry in 1 Corinthians 9.

***BEGIN GIVING A MINIMUM OF 10%
TO THE LORD'S MINISTRY.***

4. START EXERCISING GENUINE DISCIPLINE OVER YOUR SPENDING.

One of the greatest hindrances in our lives is our craving things we do not have,

344 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

and being careless and wasteful in our spending.

1 Tim 6:9-10

9 But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

(KJV)

I Timothy 6:9-10 HB

9 **And those determining to be rich fall into temptation, and a snare, and many unintelligent and hurtful passions which sink men into destruction and ruin,**

10 **Because the love of silver is the root of all worthlessness, which while some stretched themselves after, they were led away from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many griefs.**

It is morally wrong to spend money you do not have. It is morally wrong to go into debt beyond your means. It is morally wrong to live beyond your ability to pay. Get your wants and desires under control. Spiritual control over your material wants is much greater riches than all the money in the world.

Prov 16:32

32 He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty; and he that ruleth his spirit than he that taketh a city. (KJV)

Proverbs 16:32 HB

Better is he who waits long before *his* nostrils burn than the mighty, and he who rules his spirit than he who captures a city.

Prov 25:28

He that hath no rule over his own spirit is like a city that is broken down, and without walls. (KJV)

Proverbs 25:28 HB

A man without control over his own spirit is as a city broken down without walls.

A great principle to follow is:

Give God at least 10% for His work.

Save at least 10% for investment.

5. LEARN AND PRACTICE THE BIBLE TEACHINGS ON GIVING AND RECEIVING.

Here are some of them:

(1) Giving must be out of love. For God so loved the world that He gave. John 3:16

(2) Get greater joy out of giving than receiving.

Acts 20:35

I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive. (KJV)

Acts 20:35 HB

I showed you all things, how that in this way working hard you must take hold of the weak, and remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to take.

(3) Know that you cannot outgive God.

Luke 6:38

Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (KJV)

Luke 6:38 HB

Give, and beautifully good measure will be given to you; pressed down, and shaken together, and running over they will give into your bosom, because with the same measure with which you measure, it will be measured back to you.

Mark 10:29-30

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,

30 But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. (KJV)

Mark 10:29-30 HB

29 And Jesus said, Amen, I say to you, There is absolutely not one who left house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or fields, on account of me and the good news,

30 But he takes a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and fields, with persecutions, and in the coming age eternal life.

(4) Be as consistent with God as God is with you.

1 Corinthians 16:1-2

1 Cor 16:1-2

1 Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come. (KJV)

1 Cor 16:1-2 HB

1 And concerning the contribution for the saints, as I have ordered for the churches of Galatia, so also you do.

2 Upon the first of the week let every one of you place alongside of himself in reserve, whatever he is prospered in his journey, so that when I come, then there are no contributions.

The contribution for the saints here directed by Paul is a special offering for poor saints, and is not instructions for the regular tithes and offerings. See I Cor 9 for bringing of tithes and offerings for the support the ministry. This Scripture shows that giving is to be deliberate and consistent. When God consistently sees to it that you get paid, you ought to consistently see to it that God gets paid.

Giving should be a deliberate part of the plan for your life.

2 Cor 9:7-10

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work:

9 (As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever.

10 Now he that ministereth seed to the sower both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness;) (KJV)

2 Corinthians 9:7-10 HB

7 Everyone according as he chooses for himself in his heart, not out of sadness, or out of necessity, because God loves a hilarious giver.

8 And God has the power to cause all grace to super-abound to you, that in all things, always, having all self-sufficiency, you may super-abound to every inherent good work;

9 As it has been written, He scattered; he gave to the poor; his righteousness remains forever. Psa 112:9

10 And the one fully furnishing seed to the sower and bread for eating, may he furnish and multiply your seed, and grow the fruits of your righteousness,

This means that you plan what you will give to the poor, your tithes, or any other giving to God just as you plan everything else. Put God first in your plans, and God will bless you.

THE MISUNDERSTOOD STORY

The story of the Rich Young Ruler who went away sorrowfully is extremely misunderstood. Open your Bible to Mark 10:17-30. The Rich Man wanted to know what he had to do to be saved. Jesus told him that the Lord had to be first in his life, not money. Jesus told him to give away everything he had, and follow Jesus. The young man, just as you, thought Jesus meant he had to live in poverty the rest of his life. So he turned sadly away. The conversation turned to the disciples and the love of money. The disciples were astonished, because it seemed Jesus was saying it was impossible to be rich and be a genuine follower of Jesus. They knew that all the great men of the Bible were very rich.

So Jesus explained what He meant.

Mark 10:24-27

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who

348 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible. (KJV)

Mark 10:24-27 HB

24 And the disciples were astounded upon his words. And Jesus answering again, says to them, Children, how hard is it for those convinced on riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for one rich to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were super-abundantly struck with shock, saying to themselves, And who has power to be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them says, Alongside of men it is impossible, but absolutely not alongside of God, because all things are possible alongside of God. Jer 32:17

Jesus assured them that God can miraculously change a rich man's heart. They then asked what they would receive since they had put Jesus first in their lives.

Mark 10:28-31

28 Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,

30 But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

31 But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (KJV)

Mark 10: 28-31 HB

28 And Peter began to say to him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed you.

29 And Jesus said, Amen, I say to you, There is absolutely not one who left house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or fields, on account of me, and the good news,

30 But he takes a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and fields, with persecutions, and in the coming age eternal life.

31 And many *who are* first will be last, and the last, first.

The poor Rich Young Ruler did not hear that. He turned away from Jesus, and missed hearing the greatest investment opportunity of his life. If he had done what the

Lord instructed him to do, he would have become even more wealthy than he was already, with great spiritual wealth besides. God would have given it back to him a hundredfold. Jesus did not want him to be poor. Jesus simply wanted him to love God more than he loved money. Sometimes something drastic has to happen in our lives for us to forsake money as god and be totally loyal to Jehovah God as our God. The rich young ruler, as far as we know, never made the transition from money to God.

God wants you to prosper, but what is first in your life? God, or money? Do not have your mind on money and yourself so much that you miss the greatest opportunity of your life. Put God first.

GOD WANTS YOU TO PROSPER!

Chapter 33

GOD IS MY SOURCE

OUTLINE

Philippians 4:19

- 1. Make Scripture verses the theme songs of your life.**
- 2. Realize Who and what God is.**
 - (1) Who God is**
 - (2) What God is**
- 3. Realize who you are and act accordingly.**
 - (1) My Father, the King, owns everything.**
 - (2) My Father, the King, love me.**
 - (3) My Father, the King, has given me everything.**
- 4. Loose your heavenly source.**
- 5. You have to loose your heavenly source by faith.**
- 6. Let God pick the delivery system.**
- 7. Go gather from your heavenly source.**
- 8. Give in the same unlimited manner God gives to you.**

Introduction

I encourage you today to lay claim to and take for your very own the promises you need. You can do this only as you take up your cross and follow Jesus. Do not think that you can take what I am going to tell you today and say, My God shall supply all my need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus and just do anything in the world you want to. You cannot. You can quote that verse from now until judgment day, and you will not get any blessings from God until you turn from your sin, take up your cross and follow Jesus. So just remember there is no way to resurrection power except by way of the cross.

THE THEME OF YOUR LIFE

1. Make Scripture verses the theme songs of your life.

Philippians 4:19

And my God shall fill all your need according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.

God wants to be your personal God, and fill every need of your life. Many people limit the word “need” in this verse to the bare necessities to maintain physical life. You are not an animal, and you need more than food, clothing, and shelter. An animal needs that. You need more. God created the finer things for the development and enjoyment of human beings. Gold, silver, precious stones, fine fabrics, beautiful wood, the list goes on and on - these are also needs of the human being if you are to reach your highest potential in service to God.

Go anywhere in the world you want to go, and you will find the poorest people you can find still wearing some form of jewelry and other pieces of dress that are supposed to enhance their appearance. This is totally lacking in the animal world.

God created the finer things of life for your enjoyment and benefit. You have to have money to obtain them. God wants you to have them. He wants to supply the totality of your need, including your need for the finer things of life. He wants to be your personal possession in all His richness. He wants you as His personal possession. God wants to give Himself to you if you will give yourself to Him. That is a good swap as far as I am concerned.

My God shall fill 90% of all my needs? My God shall fill most of my needs? My God shall fill my needs as long as the economy does not fail? Is that what God says? My God shall fill my needs if the rate of inflation is not too great? If I can hang onto the job I have? If the Democrats stay in office? If the Republicans stay in office? My God shall fill all my needs if I do not get sick? My God shall fill all my needs if I can keep my friends? My God shall fill all my needs if, if, if...?

No! My God shall fill All my needs when all the gold is gone, according to His riches in glory, by Christ Jesus! Everything in your life has to be by Christ Jesus. I am in Christ Jesus. Are you in Christ Jesus? Live your life by Christ Jesus, in Christ Jesus, for Christ Jesus. Everything Christ Jesus. Over me, under me, around me...by Christ Jesus. Make that the theme of your life. My God shall fill all my needs according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

Take the Scriptures I have listed and others you find for yourself, and make them the theme songs of your life. When you have your heart so saturated with Scripture that your heart literally sings for joy with those truths you will begin to be able to literally lay hold of God as Your Source.

A Warning!

Bible verses are not magic formulas that you can use to get what you want. You cannot use Bible verses that promise you health and riches and consume that health and riches on your own lusts. For God to bless you, you must have a heart committed to God. You must reckon your selfishness crucified with Christ. You cannot cast spells with Bible verses, and make God and people do what you want them to do. You cannot use the Bible and God to satisfy a selfish heart.

I warn you. God is the God of righteousness. He will not tolerate selfishness in His servants. You are sadly mistaken if you think you can make God do what you want. You must reckon your selfish heart crucified with Christ, and get God's righteous, unselfish desires in your heart. If you love God and His righteous will with all your heart, you can use the Bible verses to bring the will of God to be in your life. But I warn you. Do not try to use God for your own selfish purposes. His judgment will fall upon you severely!

2. Realize who and what God is.

God is a who and a what. You are a who and a what. Who am I? I am Gwin Turner. What am I? I am a man, a husband, a father, a pastor, a man of God. What am I? I am a man, a husband, a father, a pastor, a servant of the Lord, a man of God. You are a who and a what. God is a who and a what. If you are a woman, you may say: Who am I? I am [name]. I am a human being, a woman, a child of God. What am I? I am a wife, a mother, a single woman, a business woman, a teacher, a minister of God, or whatever declarations are appropriate for you.

Who Is God?

Let me tell you a little about who God is. He is Jehovah, the self-existent One. He is Elohim, the all powerful, three persons in one God. He is El, the mighty one. He is Eloha, the only one worthy of worship. He is Elohe, the Trinitarian, multipersonal God, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. He is Jehovah, the covenant and saving God. He is El Shadai, God Almighty. He is Immanuel, God with us. He is I Am That I Am. He is the Most High God. He is The God Who sees me, the Everlasting God, the God of Heaven and Earth, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the Lord God of the Hebrews, the God of Israel, the Jealous God, The Lord God Merciful and Gracious,

the Holy God, the God of the spirits of all flesh, the God who goes before me, the Lord who fights for me, the God so high, a Consuming Fire, the Faithful God, the God of the Covenant, the Mighty God and the Terrible, the Eternal God, our Refuge, the Living God, the Lord God of Gods, the God of Knowledge, Jehovah of Hosts, God my Rock, the Rock of my salvation, the God that Avenges me, Jehovah God of the Hills and the Valleys, the God of the Land, the God of David, God Ready to Pardon, the Righteous God, the God that Girds me with Strength, the God of Glory, the God of Truth, the God of my Life, my Exceeding God, the King of all the Earth, the Judge of all the earth, my Defense, our Shield, my Father, the Prince of Peace, our Creator, our Savior, the God Who pleads the cause of His people, the God of Recompense, the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings, and the Lord of Lords.

Who is God? He is Jehovah-Jireh, Jehovah has provided. Genesis 22:14. He is Jehovah Rophe, Jehovah Who heals you. Exodus 15:26. He is Jehovah-Nissi, Jehovah my victorious banner. Exodus 17:15. He is Jehovah M'Kadash, Jehovah who sanctifies me. Leviticus 20:8. He is Jehovah-Shalom, Jehovah my peace. Judges 6:23-24. He is Jehovah R'ah, Jehovah my Shepherd. Psalm 23. He is Jehovah-Tsidkenu, Jehovah my righteousness. Jeremiah 23:6. He is Jehovah-Shama, Jehovah Who is always there, overflowing with His glory. Ezekiel 48:35.

What is God?

He is the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. He is my Father, He is my Elder Brother. He is my Comforter. He is all that you need now and forever more. What is God? God is my Creator, my Preserver, my Administrator, my Redeemer, my Coming King. He is my Healer, and my Deliverer. He is my Finances, and my Transportation. He is my faith and my character. He is my Haven in the midst of the storm. He is my Sanctuary of Worship. He is my wealth and my happiness. He is my manna from heaven. He is my food and my drink. He is my clothing and shelter. He is my health, my safety, and my peaceful sleep. He is my victory over my enemies. He is my Defense, my Armor, and my Sword. He is my Foundation, my Walls, and the Roof over my head. He is my breath and my being. He is my inheritance, and the money in my pocket. He is my resurrection and my life. He is my Eternal Destiny. He is my Crown of Victory. He is my All in All.

God says, "I am faith to the unbeliever. I am forgiveness to the sinner. I am light to those that are in darkness. I am love to the unloved. I am life to the dead." God says, "I am peace to the troubled. I am joy to the sad, I am strength to the weak. I am deliverance to the helpless. I am bread to the hungry. I am money to the poor. I am clothes to the naked. I am freedom to the prisoners. I am health to the sick. I am protection to the fearful. I am all in all." God is everything to all those who will trust Him. He is the Absolute, Infinite, Free-flowing, Over-abounding Source for Every-

thing to all who come to Him in faith. God is your source. Realize who He is and what He is to you. God is anything you need and everything you need. God is your source. Now look to Him.

Remember! God does not respond to your need.

He only responds to your faith!

3. Realize who you are and act accordingly.

I am a child of the King. My Father is the King. Your Father is the King. There are three things I want you know about my Father the King.

(1) My Father, the King, owns everything.

(2) My Father, the King, loves me.

(3) My Father the King, has given me everything He owns.

(2) My Father, the King, owns everything. Psalm 24:1:

The earth belongs to Jehovah, and everything in it Deuteronomy 10:14. You have read these Scriptures in the message, God Wants You To Prosper. Psa 50:10-12. Job 41:11. Psa 64:15-17. Acts 17:24-28. Ezk 18:4. Col 1:17. Heb 1:3. Rev 4:11. My Father, the King, owns everything. I am a child of the King.

(2) My Father, the King, loves me.

One of the reasons many of you have trouble getting your needs met is because down deep in your heart you cannot really convince yourself that the Heavenly Father loves you with all His heart.

Matt 7:11

If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? (KJV)

Matthew 7:11 HB

If you therefore, being evil, see *how* to give inherently good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give inherently good things to those asking him?

How many of you actually enjoy giving good things to your children? How many of you at times get preoccupied, and you realize that you do not do as much for your children as you ought to? I look back and I know that God is good. God takes care of everything. I know that my wife and I have been a good father and mother to our children, but not nearly as good as I would love to have been. Terry and Renae now are grown and I think about the times when we had to take them with us to the library in college and then in seminary because we did not have money for child care. They learned how to sleep on a car seat while we drove day and night, going back and forth from school to a little church field out in Texas. We took those kids around from nursery school to nursery school. I can remember taking Terry and Renae to the seminary library when they were 3, 4 and 5 years of age and making them sit perfectly quiet in a library while I studied. I think about it now, and I say, "Oh, I wish I had been better to my children."

But my dear friends, my Heavenly Father has no regrets about the way He has treated His children. My Heavenly Father never has to look back and say, "Oh, I wish I had not been so preoccupied with my own needs so I could have been better to my children." My Heavenly Father does not have any needs or preoccupations. My heavenly Father is not preoccupied with Himself. My Heavenly Father loves me, and gives me everything that I will let Him give me. He loves me and He never makes any mistakes. He is not a human parent to make a mistake.

John 16:26-27

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. (KJV)

John 16:26-27 HB

26 In that day you will ask in my name, and I absolutely do not say to you that I will ask the Father for you,

27 Because the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed that I came out from alongside of God.

Jesus said in that day He will not go up to His Father and say, "Father, I need you to give a favor to one of my brothers down there. Father would you please give Gwin Turner this or that? Will you please help him?" The Father says, "Well, I am not too

356 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

interested in him. Why should I give to him?" "Well, Father, I promised that you would. I gave my word. I wish you would, please?" The Father says, "Well O.K., you gave your word, you want it, I reckon I will have to do it." No. It is not that way at all.

You go directly to the Heavenly Father and say, "Father, Jesus told me that I could come and ask anything that I need in His name, and you will give it to me. Father I need so and so." And the Father says to me, "Son, I'm so glad you asked. I love you Myself, and because Jesus died on the cross, and poured out His blood for you, it delights Me to give you everything that you need. I love you." My dear friends, the Heavenly Father loves His children. He loves us. He loves us. Do not go to God and say, "I know you do not love me, but would you please help me?" No! God loves us. My Father, the King, loves me, and He loves you.

You may say, "I know that. Sometimes I have a little difficulty realizing it, but I know you are right. It is that last part...the third part which I have difficulty believing."

(3) The Father has given us everything He owns.

Follow these Scriptures and note very carefully what they say:

Matt 11:27

All things are delivered unto me of my Father.... (KJV)

Matthew 11:27 HB

All things are given over to me under my Father....

Now look at Romans 8:32

Rom 8:32

He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? (KJV)

Rom 8:32 HB

He who absolutely did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all, how will he absolutely not with him also grace us with all things?

Since the Heavenly Father freely gave us His most prized possession, His only begotten Son, you know He will not withhold from us anything else of much less value. If He gave us the entire universe it would not be worth as much as the Lord Jesus, whom He has already given us. If He gave you all the silver and gold in the world, it would not be worth as much as His Son. Since He has already given us the

most valued possession in the universe, His only Son, to give us all other things is a rather small matter with God.

Now look at 1 Corinthians 3:22-23.

1 Cor 3:22-23

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

23 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's. (KJV)

1 Cor 3:22-23 HB

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours;

23 And you *are* Christ's, and Christ *is* God's.

Paul says plainly that God has given to Jesus Christ everything in the world, and that Jesus has given it all to us. Then why do Christians walk upon this earth like paupers saying, "Oh, I do not know if I am going to make it or not?" We are not paupers. We are children of the King. God has given us everything. There is no point in our being in need about anything. Nothing. Listen, the Lord wants you to have everything that you need; everything, and you have it if you will take it by faith. I believe it is God's will for every one of His children to have the job he needs, and to have the income he needs to be able to pay his bills, and enjoy the luxuries of life. I believe you should have plenty to give, and plenty to keep.

4. Loose your heavenly source. Matthew 16:19 and Philippians 4:19.

My God shall fill all my need according to His riches in heaven. All the riches of heaven need to be loosed upon us so we can use them for the glory of God. Read Matthew 16:19. We are to loose upon earth what is already loosed in heaven. All of God's riches in heaven are loosed, that is, freely available. The Lord commands us to get on our knees, and start exercising our faith. Loose your heavenly source upon your life. God will loose all of heaven upon you if you will start using the key to unlock the door. Loose your heavenly source. Loose it for the glory of God.

I wonder how many times we have let the doors of heaven be locked, and resources were held back from us. God wants to pour out blessings upon us, but we have to use the key to unlock the door. Prayer is the key, and faith unlocks the door. Do you

realize how few people in any church are actually doing anything for the Lord? A small percentage pays the bills. A small percentage does the visiting. A small percentage does just about everything that is done. Everybody else is riding on the prayers and work of someone else, like Lot was riding on Abraham's prayers. Every backslidden Christian is riding on somebody else's faithfulness. Every backsliding Christian is riding on somebody else's prayers. Every backsliding Christian is riding on somebody else's giving. Every backsliding Christian is riding on somebody else's faithfulness in the Word of God. Do not be that kind of Christian. Use the key of authority. Start the wealth flowing. Give and let God give. Give yourself, and everything you have. Let God loose heaven's resources upon you.

5. You have to loose your source by faith and not by sight.

If you wait until you can see it you will not get it. You have to believe it before you see it. 2 Kings 6 ought to be one of your favorite stories. The Syrians attacked Israel. Every time the Syrian army made a move to attack Israel, Israel knew about it. The king said, "Who is a spy among us!" They told the king that Elisha supernaturally knew every move they made.

II Ki 6:13-17

13 And he said, Go and spy where he is, that I may send and fetch him. And it was told him, saying, Behold, he is in Dothan.

14 Therefore sent he thither horses, and chariots, and a great host: and they came by night, and compassed the city about.

15 And when the servant of the man of God was risen early, and gone forth, behold, an host compassed the city both with horses and chariots. And his servant said unto him, Alas, my master! how shall we do?

16 And he answered, Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them.

17 And Elisha prayed, and said, LORD, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the LORD opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha. (KJV)

2 Kings 6:13-17 HB

13 And he said, Walk, and see where he is, and I will send, and take him. And it was caused to stand out boldly to him, saying, Behold, *he is* in Dothan.

14 And he sent there horses, and chariots, and great resources, and they came by night, and surrounded the city.

15 And the servant of the man of God rose early, and went out, and behold, resources surrounded the city, and horses, and chariots. And his servant said to him,

Alas, my lord! How shall we do?

16 And he said, Do not fear, because they who *are* with us are more than they who *are* with them.

17 And Elisha judged in prayer, and said, Jehovah, please, open his eyes, and he will see. And Jehovah opened the eyes of the young man, and he saw; and behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire around Elisha.

Those were angels, God's heavenly messengers, God's angelic hosts. And when the Syrians came down to him, Elisha prayed for God to make them blind. Elisha took them to the capitol city. They were completely surrounded by the whole army of Israel and Elisha said, **Jehovah, open their eyes.** The Syrians opened their eyes, and saw they were totally helpless. What did they do? Did they kill them all? No. They gave them all a big meal, and sent them home. The Syrians did not return!

What I want you to realize is this. You loose your heavenly source by faith, not by sight! All around you there are heavenly messengers. Literally thousands of them are around you right now. Those heavenly messengers go with you everywhere you go. They have resources in their hands. They are ready to give you any and everything you need. They are the Lord's angels. All the resources of Jesus are at the disposal of his angles to give us everything we need. Our Lord Jesus has conquered everything! It belongs to Him and He is ready to give it all - it is just a matter of your taking it by faith, not by sight.

6. Let God pick the delivery system.

Who pays your salary? God pays it! The company you work for is just the delivery system. You trust the Lord. You give to the Lord. You serve the Lord. You do what the Lord says do. Let God pick the delivery system as to how He is going to give it back to you. Sometimes people help someone, and they never see that person again. I know a person right now that has helped a lot of people, and most of those people have never come back to even say "Thank you." That can create a little bitterness if you let it.

But, my dear friends, you do not give to one person, and expect that same person to return it. You give it our freely as the Lord directs, and God will give it back to you in His own way from somebody else. Do not let the devil put you in the state of bitterness and ingratitude. I have helped a lot of people that I know were ingrates. I have helped a lot of people that never showed me one ounce of gratitude. Did I stop helping people because I did not get gratitude? NO! God has paid me back a thousand times over. I just keep on doing what the Lord says do, and let God pick the delivery

system.

7. Go gather from your heavenly source.

Do not wait for God to dump it in your lap. Go gather it. Do not sit there lazy and good-for-nothing and wait until God comes and opens the door and shoves it in front of you. Go gather it, my dear friends. Do not sit there in your lazy chair, and wait until God, like a mother bird crams it down your throat. No! Go gather from your unlimited source.

Exod 16:4

Then said the LORD unto Moses, Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or no. (KJV)

Exodus 16:4 HB

Then Jehovah said to Moses, Behold, I will rain for you food from the heavens, and the people shall go out, and pick up *according to a specific* word every day, so that I may test them, whether they will walk in my law or not.

God says, **I will rain manna from heaven, but you go pick it up.** It will be out there everywhere. You go gather it, you go gather it. I can just imagine some Hebrew sitting in the house. He is sitting there starving to death. Somebody comes along and says, "Hey fellow, what are you doing starving?" "Well," he says, "I do not know. I have not gotten anything from the Lord yet." And he says, "There is plenty of manna out there on the ground." The other fellow says, "Yeah, but you know, I just believe that if it is God's will for me to have it He will come and dump it in my lap." My friends, that is not faith...that is presumption and stupidity. That is sin. That is laziness. My Bible says the Lord rains manna from heaven, but you go pick it up! God says it is out there. Get off your lazy bones, and go after it. Start gathering it up for the glory of God.

Let me tell you how to get ahead in your work. DO MORE THAN YOU ARE PAID TO DO, AND ONE DAY YOU WILL BE PAID FOR MORE THAN YOU DO.

God says, "I am raining manna from heaven, but you go gather it!"

8. Give it away in the same unlimited manner that God gives it to you.

In Matthew 10:8 Jesus said to the apostles, **Freely you took. Freely give.** Go give it away, and God will give you more to give away. Just remember this. As you shovel out, God shovels in.

God's shovel is bigger than your shovel.

God is my source!

Chapter 34

PASTOR: YOU MUST TITHE IF YOU EXPECT GOD TO BLESS YOU.

Dear Pastor,

I write you a personal letter to instruct you that it is most urgent that you tithe to God through your church or through some ministry. I am also writing you to explain in a practical way what tithing is, and what it is not.

Many pastors do not tithe. This is a sin. God cannot bless you. Some pastors think that since they are pastors, God does not require them to tithe. They think that since they work for God all of the time, God does not expect them to tithe. They think that since they spend all their money for living expenses in order to serve God, they do not have to tithe. This is wrong. This is selfish.

Your church members are required to tithe. They live for God just as you do. God commands them to pay God ten percent, and live on the ninety percent. God requires the pastor to live by the same rules as He requires of the church members. He requires every pastor to tithe out of his income, and to live on the remaining ninety percent.

Here are some practical instructions on how to calculate your tithe. These same instructions apply to both pastor and people alike. There is no difference.

You are to tithe out of your total profit. Your total profit is the money you receive

before you deduct living expenses and taxes. If you work for a company or a person, normally you tithe out of the total amount you receive. That is your profit, because all you are providing to your employer is your labor. They are paying you for your labor. You have no other work expenses to subtract from your profit. You tithe out of your entire pay.

If you use a truck or car in your work, hauling things or people, you have to deduct your fuel and repair expenses. Then you tithe out of your profit, before you pay for your personal living expenses, such as food, clothing, housing, etc. If you buy and sell food or products, you deduct what you paid for the merchandise, what you paid others to help you, and any other direct expenses you had in conducting the business. You tithe out of what is left as your profit.

The pastor tithes the same way any businessman tithes. He deducts his travel expense, equipment he has to buy, and expenses he pays out of his pocket to work as a pastor. But he does not deduct his food, clothing, housing, or other personal expenses. He tithes on his profit just as all his church members tithe. You must very honestly practice tithing if you expect God to bless your ministry.

Your tithe should be paid to your local church or to some minister such as your pastor or some minister who has ministered or ministers to you. You must teach your people to tithe to the man of God who ministers to them. They must tithe in order to pay the pastor's salary and the expenses of the church.

The pastor should lead his church to set up a budget to spend the money that comes into the church. You and they should set the amount that is to be paid to the pastor, how much to be paid for other church expense, and how much to be spent on mission work.

Dear pastor, if you want God to bless you, obey God by paying the tithe!

Section Nine - Your Ministry

In this section I have given you special guidance in the main activities of your ministry. Your first and greatest responsibility is to discover and exercise the spiritual gifts God has placed in your life, and lead your people to discover and use their spiritual gifts. I have given you a list and a short explanation of the spiritual gifts.

The activity you will face most regularly is the message you must bring your people for church services each week. You must hear from God, and have God's message every time you stand before your people to speak. I have given you practical guidance on how to receive God's message for every service.

Then I have given you direction on how to do the work of evangelism, and to minister healing to the sick. I have given you a marriage ceremony, and a funeral message. I have also given you counsel on Baptism and the Lord's Supper. I have given you a special chapter on your authority and leadership in relationship to assurance of eternal life, and a chapter on the unity of the body of Christ.

I pray that you will make full proof of your ministry, as Saint Paul commands us. 2 Timothy 4:5

Chapter 35

EXERCISING SPIRITUAL GIFTS

Spiritual gifts are the tools in the believers' lives that the Holy Spirit uses to minister to God, to minister to one another, to administer and bless the church, and to minister to a lost world. Understanding them and exercising them under the Lordship of Christ and in the power of the Holy Spirit are extremely important. The body of Christ cannot function properly without the operation of the gifts of the Spirit.

There are four passages of Scriptures that deal with spiritual gifts. In these four passages there are three different categories of spiritual gifts. They are the ministry gifts, the manifestation gifts, and the functional gifts.

OUTLINE

THE MINISTRY GIFTS.

Ephesians 4:11

The ministry gifts are spiritual gifts that operate especially in the leadership of the local church and the body of Christ at large. They are:

- 1. Apostle**
- 2. Prophet**
- 3. Evangelist**
- 4. Pastor**
- 5. Teacher**

MANIFESTATION GIFTS.

1 Corinthians 12:1-11. They are:

- 1. The word of wisdom**
- 2. The word of knowledge**
- 3. Faith**
- 4. Gifts of healings**
- 5. Gifts of supernatural workings of powers**
- 6. Prophecy**
- 7. Discerning of spirits**
- 8. Different kinds of tongues**
- 9. Interpretation of tongues**

THE FUNCTIONAL GIFTS.

Romans 12:6-8. They are:

- 1. Prophecy**
- 2. Ministry or serving**
- 3. Teaching**
- 4. Comfort**
- 5. Sharing**
- 6. Presiding**
- 7. Showing Mercy**

THE MINISTRY GIFTS

Eph 4:11-12

I call these Ministry Gifts because of the wording of Ephesians 4:11-12.

11 And he gave some, apostles, and some, prophets, and some, evangelists, and some, shepherds and teachers,

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the building up of the body of Christ....

Note the words, **for the work of the ministry**. This is the list of minister positions that functioned in the churches in the New Covenant.

The ministry gifts are position gifts. The ministry gifts place certain persons in specific positions in the church.

THE APOSTLE

An apostle is one sent by the Lord to establish and organize churches. An apostle exercises all the other gifts of prophet, evangelist, pastor (shepherd), and teacher. The apostle is the one the Lord uses to direct the placement of these ministers in the church, and supervises their function. Do not misunderstand. The Lord places whom He will in the various positions in the church, but the apostle is the one who enforces the mind of Christ in these positions. In all of the Apostle Paul's letters he is directing the ministers in these positions, and directing the members to function in harmony with these ministers. The Apostle Paul ruled as an apostle of the Lord in all the churches he established, and in all the churches that were established by someone whom he had led to the Lord. He also exercised apostolic authority over other churches that other apostles and other Christians had established. He exercised spiritual authority over the church at Rome although he nor any of his disciples had ever been there. An apostle establishes doctrine, ministry, and administration with manifestation of supernatural power.

THE PROPHET

The prophet has special insight into the needs of churches and people. He or she speaks special messages of warning, and encouragement, and often predicts future events in the lives of the churches, individuals, and nations. Prophets also specially exercise the gifts of exhortation and comfort, as well as severe warnings.

THE EVANGELIST

The evangelist is a preacher of the good news of salvation and deliverance. He is a soul winner. He is especially gifted in bringing men and women out of the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of God.

THE PASTOR (SHEPHERD)

The pastor is one who feeds and cares for the sheep. To his flock he also exercises other gifts. He often does the work of an evangelist. He prophesies for his congregation. He establishes doctrine for them, and rules over the other ministers in his church. He especially exercises the gift of teacher.

THE TEACHER

The minister teacher is one especially gifted to teach the Word of God. He is especially gifted in explaining the Scriptures, and showing believers how to apply the Word to their lives in every area. He may or may not exercise other gifts. He may be a teacher that ministers to the whole body of Christ by going from place to place, or he may be a special teacher in one local church. The pastor must be the main teacher in his church.

THE MANIFESTATION GIFTS

1 Cor 12:4-11

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;

9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

10 To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:

11 But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 12:4-11 HB

- 4 And there are differences of gifts, and the same Spirit.**
- 5 And there are differences of ministries, also the same Lord.**
- 6 And there are differences of supernatural workings, and it is the same God supernaturally working all things in all.**
- 7 And to each one is given the manifestation of the Spirit for advantage,**
- 8 Because to one is given through the Spirit a word of wisdom, and to another a word of knowledge according to the same Spirit;**
- 9 And to another faith, in the same Spirit, and to another, the gifts of healing, in the same Spirit;**
- 10 And to another, the supernatural workings of powers, and to another, prophecy, and to another, judging through of spirits, and to another, kinds of tongues, and to another, interpretation of tongues;**
- 11 And all these things the one and the same Spirit supernaturally works, distributing to each one individually as he wills,**

I call these manifestation gifts because of the wording in 1 Corinthians 12:7. Note the words, **And to each one is given the manifestation of the Spirit for advantage**. Then in verses 8-10 the Apostle Paul lists the manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

Take special note that these gifts are not position gifts. The manifestation of the Spirit is here emphasized, not the position of the person through whom the gift operates. These gifts may operate in different members at different times. Normally if a believer is obedient, that gift would continue to be manifested in him or her from time to time, but it is something the Holy Spirit is doing through an obedient vessel. These gifts operate in ordinary members of the church. A believer does not have to have a position of ministry for these manifestations of the Holy Spirit to take place in him or her.

The Word of Wisdom

The word of wisdom is a revelation of wisdom to know what to do or how to do something that is beyond their natural ability to know. It may be a word of wisdom given for the benefit of a member, or of the whole church body. It is a word about the future.

The Word of Knowledge

The word of knowledge is a word of information for an individual or group that they need which could not have been known by natural means. It is a word about the past or present.

370 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Faith

Faith is a special measure of faith for doing unusual things for the kingdom of God.

Gifts of Healings

Gifts of healings are the many different ways in which healing is ministered to the body of Christ.

Working of Miracles, or supernatural workings of powers

Working of miracles is the performance of mighty deeds for the sake of the kingdom of God that goes beyond natural laws.

Prophecy

Prophecy is the speaking of words given by the Holy Spirit that minister building up, comfort, and encourage individuals or the church body.

Discerning of Spirits, or judging through of spirits

Judging of spirits is the supernatural ability to discern or judge what kind of spirit is operating in persons and events.

Different Kinds of Tongues

Different kinds of tongues are utterances given to a believer in a language that he neither knows nor understands naturally.

Interpretation of Tongues

The interpretation of tongues is the Spirit-given ability to express in a known language the content of what was spoken in an unknown tongue.

These manifestation gifts are given to different members of the church as the Holy Spirit wills. Not every member receives one of these gifts. These gifts are not given for the personal advancement of the member, but for the benefit of the entire body. Just as ministerial gifts can be abused and misused, so the manifestation gifts can be abused and misused. But if they are properly supervised by a loving, Spirit

filled pastor, all these gifts will greatly bless the congregation.

THE FUNCTIONAL GIFTS

Rom 12:4-10

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith;

7 Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching;

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

9 Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another; (KJV)

Romans 12:4-10 HB

4 Because exactly as we have many members in one body, and all members absolutely do not have the same action,

5 In this way we, many are one body in Christ, and each one members of one another.

6 And having gifts differing according to the grace given to us, if prophecy, *let us prophesy* according to the proportion of faith;

7 If ministry, *let us serve* in our ministry; if teaching, in teaching;

8 If comfort, in comforting; the one sharing, in sincerity; the one presiding, in earnest speed; the one showing mercy, in cheerfulness.

9 Love un-hypocritically; utterly detest that which is evil; be glued to the inherent good.

10 Be tender hearted to one another with brotherly love, in honor showing deference toward one another;

I call these functional gifts because of the wording of Romans 12:4. The King James Version uses the word office. The Greek word literally means deed or action. It appears five other places in the New Testament, and is always translated deeds in KJV. It does not refer to an official position. It refers only to what a person does. I have used the word functional, because these gifts are what believers do.

EVERY MEMBER HAS A GIFT

372 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Every member of the body of Christ has at least one functional gift. Only a few members have ministerial gifts. Only a few are apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers. Only a few are called to serve in these official positions of ministry as leaders in the church.

Many members have a manifestation gift, but not all. But every member has one or more of these functional gifts listed in Romans 12:7-8.

1 Peter 4:10 says that every member has a gift to use.

1 Pet 4:10

As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. (KJV)

1 Pet 4:10 HB

As each one has taken a gift, so minister the same to one another, as beautifully good stewards of the many faceted grace of God.

The Greek does not use the word “the.” The verse literally says, As every man has taken a gift.

Romans 12 implies that every member has at least one of these gifts. Verse 3 implies that a measure of faith has been given to every member to use in exercising his or her gift to serve the body of Christ. In verses 4 and 5 he speaks of the one body that has many members. Then in verse 6 he implies that each member has different gifts with which to serve the body of Christ. Then he lists the gifts.

There is only one gift that appears in all three lists. It is the gift of prophecy. One more gift appears in two lists. Teaching is in the ministry gifts as well as the functional gifts.

Prophecy

The gift of prophecy is the one gift that is in all lists. It is listed first in the functional gifts. Prophecy is the one gift the Apostle Paul urges every believer to seek.

1 Cor 14:1-3

1 Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye prophesy.

2 For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation,

and comfort. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 14:1-3 HB

1 Pursue love, and be zealous for the spiritual, and in a greater degree that you may prophesy,

2 Because the one speaking in a tongue absolutely does not speak to men, but to God, because absolutely not one hears, and in spirit he speaks mysteries.

3 And the one prophesying speaks to men to build up, and comfort, and encourage.

Paul commands us to pursue love, and to eagerly seek spiritual gifts, especially seek to prophesy. When a believer prophesies he speaks to men to **build up, comfort, and encourage**. What this means is that every member of the body of Christ must learn how to control his mouth and speak words under the leadership of the Holy Spirit that build up the body of Christ. This gift is available to every believer. Every believer can be filled with the Holy Spirit. When any believer is filled with the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit will give him good words to speak that will build up, comfort, and encourage others. Every believer is commanded to exercise the gift of prophesying.

None of the members in the manifestation and functional gifts serve in the office of a prophet. Any member can prophesy as the Spirit gives utterance, and even predict the future, but this does not make him or her a prophet. The office of prophet is a ministerial gift. If someone is given the ministerial gift of a prophet, he is a minister, whether he is so elected in the church or not. If both the prophet and the body are following the Holy Spirit, both will recognize his or her gift, and will gladly allow him/her to function in that position in the church.

When Are The Functional Gifts Given?

Before I list the other functional gifts let me give you some guidance in recognizing and leading your people to recognize and use their gifts. I want to raise a question that I cannot answer, in order to give some light on how to encourage people to discover and use their gifts. Generally, spiritual gifts in any of these categories do not suddenly appear in a believer, and begin operation without any effort on the part of the believer. It simply does not work that way. A spiritual gift to some extent is like any other human ability. You have to learn how to use it by practice. It is just like learning how to ride a bicycle. At first someone has to help you. At first you are wobbly, and unsure of yourself. You have difficulty making turns, starting, and stopping, etc. A person might think it is impossible for him to learn how to ride a bicycle.

374 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

However, someone encourages him to try. He tries it, discovers that he actually can do it, then he becomes very excited, and ultimately becomes very skilled riding a bicycle.

It is the same with spiritual gifts. Many people think they do not have any gifts, but if you will encourage them, they will discover their gifts, and become skilled in their use.

Now to my question, which I cannot answer, but I can give some light. When does a believer receive these functional gifts? Some think that these gifts are given in the personality at physical conception and birth. They see them as being inborn traits of the personality. Very often a person's spiritual gifts are evident in childhood, long before the person gets born from above. Are these natural traits that the Holy Spirit anoints for His use, or are these supernatural gifts bestowed in the personality from conception which God plans especially for that person's life? We know from the Bible that those God called into the ministerial gifts were prepared for that ministry from before their birth. I believe every believer is prepared from before birth for his service to Christ. Determining when or how these gifts are bestowed is not important. What is important is that every believer believe that he has one or more gifts to use for the Lord, and lead him to discover and use them.

Service, or ministry

This is translated ministry. It is the word for deacon. It means a servant. One who serves tables, or the sick, or in any capacity. Service is the gift of doing for someone whatever they need done. This is ministry. A person can exercise this gift without being elected to a position. An assistant minister to the pastor is an official position of service. The gift of service to a member is not an official position of service. Anyone can serve anyone who needs serving.

Teaching

This is a form of the same word that is translated teacher in the ministerial gifts. This is another case of a member exercising the gift of teaching without being in the office of teacher. Many believers have the gift of teaching other believers one on one, or in small groups, at any time the occasion arises, without being an official teacher in the church. Every member has the responsibility when exercising his gift of teaching to take care that he does not teach anything contrary to the pastor who is responsible for the teaching in the entire local body. Even if a member knows from God that he understands something from the Word, if the pastor teaches contrary to that position, the member must restrain his teaching until the pastor agrees to allow this teaching. Any member who has a teaching contrary to what the pastor teaches has only two choices: one, to patiently wait until the pastor allows the teaching; or two, the member may remove himself from that church to another church where the pastor is in agree-

ment with that teaching.

Comfort

Comfort is the verb form of the word *paraclete*, which is translated Comforter, when referring to the Holy Spirit. The gift of comfort is the gift of standing beside someone and consoling and motivating them.

Sharing

Sharing is the gift of sharing what you have to meet someone's need. This is a gift that everyone can exercise to some extent, but certain ones are specially gifted in imparting to others what they need.

Presiding

This is the gift of leadership and management. The meaning of the Greek word is to be placed over someone for their protection. This is the gift of taking leadership anywhere it is needed to protect the members and the work of the Lord.

Showing Mercy

This is the gift of showing kindness to those in trouble and helping deliver them. It is special compassion for those in distress.

These are gifts that every member needs to exercise to some degree. Each member should exercise these gifts as the Holy Spirit directs him. Every member should prophesy - speak words of building up to others out of the overflow of the fullness of the Holy Spirit. Every member should serve others as the opportunity arises. Every member should teach younger members what he has learned in his Christian walk. Every member should work. Every member should share what he has to meet the needs of others. Every member should lead whenever the need arises. Every member should show mercy to those in distress to help deliver them from their distress. But different members will exercise some of these gifts better than they will others.

One of the pastor's main responsibilities is to lead the members to discover and use their gifts to minister to God, to one another, and to a lost world.

The fourth list of gifts.

The fourth place where spiritual gifts are listed is

1 Cor 12:28-31

28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 12:28-30 HB

28 And God has truly placed some in the church; firstly apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers, after that works of power, after that gifts of healings, helps, governments, kinds of tongues.

29 All are not apostles; all are not prophets; all are not teachers; all are not workers of power;

30 All do not have the gifts of healings; all do not speak tongues; all do not interpret.

31 And be zealous for the better gifts, and still I show you according to a more excellent way.

In this passage Paul is not giving a complete list of gifts in any category. He is teaching on the unity of the body of Christ, that each member is to exercise his gifts for the benefit of the whole body. So the list of gifts he gives here is purely to illustrate a point, and is not a separate list. It has some out of each of the other three lists. My conclusion is that the ministry gifts, the manifestation gifts, and the functional gifts are all that are listed in this fashion. This does not mean that there are no other spiritual gifts. It simply means that these are the main ones God wants to call to our attention.

Chapter 36

HOW TO RECEIVE GOD'S MESSAGES FROM WEEK TO WEEK

It is the pastor's responsibility to preach the Word of God to his people in most of the services in the church each week.

I know that it is God's will for pastors to move from one church to another at times, but I believe that generally God's will is that a pastor remain with a church many years. It is sad to see how the devil drives pastors and churches apart. Many churches refuse to submit themselves to a pastor, and many pastors refuse to get close enough to God to exercise spiritual authority in their churches. Too many pastors had rather run away from the problems in the membership than to exercise the spiritual discipline in himself and the authority in the church he must exercise for the church to come to the place of blessing. There are many stubborn, rebellious, and egotistical people in churches who fight against the spiritual authority of the pastor constantly. These are people the devil uses to drive pastors from place to place. Pastors need to learn how to take authority in the name of Jesus in all humility and love, and change that church into the Christ-like church it needs to be. This is not something you can do in the flesh. You must do it in the power of the Holy Spirit with no thought of making yourself look great, but only to exalt the Lord Jesus in the church.

The first year the church and the pastor are excited about one another. The second year they begin to find fault with one another. The third year, very often, the pastor leaves the church, or the church makes him leave, and they begin the same process again with another pastor. These unfortunate changes go on year after year, primarily because the pastor does not receive new revelation from God from week to week. The pastor does not grow in the Lord. The devil is happy because the pastor and the church cannot get together against him. They

378 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

spend their time fighting one another. This ought not to be, and it must stop.

Let me give you my experience as pastor of several churches in a period of over fifty years. With several of these churches I had to take an unequivocal stand and deliver to the church an ultimatum at a particular time that they would do what God told me had to be done, or else I would no longer be their pastor. I delivered this ultimatum in the clear tone that I was staying, and that the devil nor any of his people could make me leave if God wanted me to stay. This usually happens within the first three years. Sometimes another crisis will occur if you stay pastor of the same church for many years.

Here is the way I always handled it. First and foremost I spent much time in prayer being sure that I knew God was leading me, and that I was doing what God told me to do. If there was developing grumbling and complaining in the church or opposition to what I knew was God's will in the church, again I waited until I knew God was ready for me to face it and deal with it openly and directly in the congregation. When it was time for me to take action to stop whatever was going on in the church that was wrong, God always gave me a message from the Bible to deal with it. Then on a Sunday morning when the largest number of people were there, at God's direction I preached the message, and in the message I dealt directly with the problem going on in the church. I never called names of individuals in the church who were doing wrong, but I made it plain I was dealing with those in the church who were doing these things and causing conflict or problems in the church, and that anyone and everyone doing these things had to stop immediately. I made it clear that I would no longer allow it. I let them know plainly that if the church majority would not support me in this decision, I would no longer be the pastor. I always made it clear that I was enforcing the Word of God, that it was not a matter of what I wanted nor of what they wanted, that all that mattered was what God wanted, and I made it clear from the Bible what God wanted.

In the message I always gave a firm Bible foundation for the authority of the pastor to lead the church, that the shepherd leads the sheep; the sheep do not lead the shepherd. I made it clear from the Word of God that the people are responsible for following the man of God, that the man of God was not to follow the people, and that the man of God must follow God; that if they were willing to follow the man of God I would be their pastor; if not, I would be leaving immediately.

You cannot do this in anger, but you must do it with righteous passion. You must do it according to the Bible and under the leadership of the Holy Spirit. You cannot do this in the flesh nor in pride. You must humble yourself before

God, and express your authority as the Apostle Paul did in his letters.

If the problem is simply with one person or just a few people, I usually handle it myself with them privately and personally. If I feel I need to, I get the help of the assistant ministers (or board of directors, or deacons, depending on how the church is run), and handle it privately within the smallest group possible.

Pastor, the responsibility is yours. You have to stop this unhealthy practice of churches and pastors fighting one another. The pastor is the one who has the spiritual authority to stop it. You have to grow in the Lord. You have to be willing and spiritually powerful enough to take responsibility.

A Message Fresh From God For Every Service

You have to receive fresh messages from God each week. You have to feed your people fresh messages from the Word of God. You cannot feed them on the Word of God if you are not feasting on it yourself.

I cannot tell you all the things you need to do to receive God's special message for every service, but I can give you some guidance.

*The first two most important things to do
to get God's message from God Himself are:*

(1) Spend many hours each week faithfully reading the Bible to feed your own heart on God's message for you personally.

(2) You must also spend hours each week before God in prayer, asking Him to tell you what to preach to your people.

As you read the Bible for yourself, God will speak to you through certain verses. God will cause a verse or a sentence to jump right out of the page into

your heart. God will minister to your heart through the words of that verse. You will receive a message for yourself personally. Often, God will lead you to preach a message to your people from these thoughts. Sometimes God will speak to you as you read the Bible, and give you a message for your people. Sometimes you will receive a main thought. Then it is up to you to study that thought and that verse. You will need to study other verses on the same subject, or verses related to that subject.

Pray over these thoughts. Study diligently. Begin to write an outline on the thoughts God is giving you. Under each point write the thoughts that explain that point. Go over it again. You may need to rearrange it, and change the order of the points. You look at it. You rehearse it. You preach it in your mind and heart until you feel that you have it in proper order, and you are burning with that message. When you preach it, ask the Holy Spirit to lead you, and follow His leadership. Preach out of the overflow of the Spirit, and it will be a good message.

BIBLE STUDY

The following instructions will be valuable only for those who have access to commentaries, concordances, and Hebrew and Greek.

A GOOD TRANSLATION OF THE BIBLE

In English we have many different translations of the Bible. Some of them are not accurate. Every pastor should do everything he can to learn Hebrew and Greek, at least learn to use the interlinear Bible with the Hebrew and Greek dictionaries. Those of you whose language is not English, if you can learn English this will give you access to the interlinear translation of the Bible and the Hebrew and Greek helps. This will help you understand exactly what the Bible says. If this is not possible, get someone who genuinely believes the Bible to help you obtain the best translation of the Bible in your language. In many languages there is only one translation. Read it, and believe it. God will bless it to you. If you can consult someone who knows Hebrew and Greek and your language, that will help. You need to know exactly what the Word of God says. Often translators put their own prejudices or lack of understanding into their translations. You will have to faithfully read the Bible you have, consult the best teachers available, and trust the Holy Spirit to reveal the truth to you.

In English the absolute best and most accurate translation is *The Heritage Bible*. I say this not simply because I translated it, but because I know it is absolutely accurate, and you do not have to look up the Hebrew, Aramaic, and

Greek words of the original to find out what the meaning of the word is. Its true meaning is in the English text. *The Heritage Bible* is a consistent word by word, word equivalent, translation of the original using the definitions of the Hebrew and Greek words given by Gesenius and Strong in the Hebrew, and by Strong and Thayer in the Greek. The translation of that word is always the same, not using synonyms and alternate meanings as other translations. Every place the exact original meaning of the word and the dramatic picture it paints are always accurately recorded in the text of *The Heritage Bible*. Even if you do not use *The Heritage Bible* as your translation of choice in the pulpit, you need to consult it on every passage you use to be sure that you are saying what the original actually says. I am in no way interested in promoting myself. My only desire is that you preach and teach the Word of God exactly as God wrote the original language in the Bible. This is my prayer for you, to say exactly what God said, and is still saying through His words in the Holy Bible.

OTHER STUDY BOOKS

If you have a Bible concordance, use that to find other verses on the same subject, so you can compare what the Bible says in other verses on that subject. The more verses you read on any one subject the more accurate will be your understanding of what God is saying in each verse.

If you have standard commentaries available in your language, you can use those, but I warn you to be cautious. You cannot believe everything written in commentaries. They were written by men who had certain beliefs based on a specific set of traditions. Often what they write in the commentaries is nothing more than their own opinion, and is not an accurate interpretation of what God said. The so-called scholarly opinions of unbelieving critics have saturated almost all the commentaries. No one wants to appear uneducated and unscholarly, so the commentators adapt their opinions to the intellectual humanism that prevails among liberal scholars. Many "conservative" scholars have not fully escaped their influence. There are far too few commentaries which take the Word of God at its face value and believe it exactly as it reads.

There are some good commentaries. Of the older sets the two that I have relied on for over fifty years are the large set By Jamieson, Faussett, and Brown, and the even larger set of The Pulpit Commentary. Even in these two you have to separate erroneous opinions out of the good things that are written in them. What I am saying is, that what they have written may be true, or it may not be. You must be wise. Many traditions have been passed down from generation to generation that contradict the

382 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Word of God. I do not have time or space to write more than this on this subject. Believe the plain text of Holy Scripture, before you believe anyone who contradicts it. If you follow *The Heritage Bible* and the notes that are included in it, at least you will be following the plain statements of the Holy Scriptures without the contamination of intellectual humanism.

HOW TO OUTLINE SCRIPTURE

You need to become skilled in understanding what the Bible says. You need to become skilled in outlining the truth taught in verses and passages of the Bible. Let me give you an illustration of how to outline a message on verses of the Bible. We will use

I Jn 5:14-15

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us:

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (KJV)

1 John 5:14-15 HB

14 And this is the outspokenness that we have toward him, that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us,

15 And if we see that he hears us, whatever we ask, we see that we have the requests that we asked from him.

Sometimes you will know what title to give the message before you prepare it. Sometimes you will not know what to title it until after you have prepared it. We will title this message after we prepare it. What we know now is that God wants you to preach on prayer from 1 John 5:14-15. So, let us outline these verses.

1. We believe God answers prayer.

The Bible gives story after story of people who prayed, and God answered them. The Apostle John declares that God answers prayer. [You can give a story of answered prayer from the Bible, and you can tell a story from your own life or the life of someone you know where God answered prayer.]

2. We must ask according to His will.

God's will is stated to us in the Bible. If God promised it to His children in the Bible, it is God's will for us to have it. Therefore, if we ask Him for anything that is promised in the Bible, it is His will for us to have it. Therefore, we have confidence that He will answer our prayer because we are asking for what He has promised us in the Bible.

3. God hears our prayers.

God does not sleep. God is not deaf. God is not preoccupied with His own problems. God does not have any problems. God is not hard-hearted, so that He does not want to hear us. God is listening to every prayer that comes out of our heart and mouth. Nothing delights Him more than for us to come to Him with our needs. He hears our prayers.

4. Once we ask in faith, we have what we ask for.

What a glorious statement. John says that once we have prayed in faith for anything that is promised to us in the Bible, we immediately have it. We are to believe that we possess it at that moment. We are to believe that we possess it before it is manifest to our sight. We are to walk away from our place of prayer in the confidence that we now possess what we prayed for. This is true faith. We will see it with our eyes at the right time and place, but we already possess it.

This is the way to outline a Bible verse so that it becomes a message that can be preached to the people. The people can understand you better when you state it in logical points that they can understand. The Holy Spirit can use your message in a much greater way if you present it in a clear and simple way so that the people can understand what you are saying.

What title shall we give this message? I will let you write in the title you think it should have. _____ Perhaps you may title it, **Encouragement To Prayer**, or **The Apostle John's Instructions On Prayer**, or simply **God Answers Prayer**.

Sometimes God will lead you to preach on a certain topic. God will give you the points of the message. You will need to find one or two verses in different places of the Bible for each point.

There are many ways in which God gives His messages for you to preach to the people. As you grow in the Lord, and as you gain experience, you will gain skill in receiving God's messages. He will give His message to you in one way at one time,

and in another way at another time. Study His Word. Pray faithfully. Listen to His voice. You will always have His message for His people.

Chapter 37

DO THE WORK OF AN EVANGELIST

OUTLINE

2 Timothy 4:5

- 1. Preach clearly the plan of salvation from time to time.**
- 2. Give an invitation for people to receive Christ regularly in your services.**
- 3. Make a list of people in your community whom you know need to be saved.**
- 4. Ask your people to give you names of people who need to be saved.**
- 5. Train all your leaders how to win someone to salvation in Jesus.**
- 6. Have evangelistic crusades in your church from time to time.**

2 Tim 4:5

But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry. (KJV)

2 Timothy 4:5 HB

And you, be sober in all things, endure hardships, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of your ministry,

To some extent the pastor must function in all five ministry gifts. The pastor needs the ministry of others outside his church. He needs the ministry of an apostle from outside his church. He needs the ministry of a prophet. He needs the ministry of an evangelist. Sometimes he needs the ministry of another pastor. He needs the ministry of a teacher. These are ministers God leads the pastor to bring into his church from time to time to minister to his people.

Different pastors and churches are governed in different ways. Some pastors are in a church organization where the pastor is under the authority of a bishop or apostle who is over many pastors and churches. In this case the pastor should not bring anyone into his church to minister without the permission of his bishop or apostle. If his church is independent and self-governing, then he is free to bring in whomever the Holy Spirit leads him to bring in.

However, these outside ministers are not there all the time, and the pastor must carry on all the work all the time. To that church the pastor is the apostolic authority for doctrine in that church, in agreement with the apostle over him. In that church the pastor is the prophet in agreement with the ministry of other prophets. In that church he is the evangelist, doing the same work of bringing souls to Jesus as those who evangelize all the time. The pastor, in agreement with other teachers, is the teacher for his church, for he must teach his people every week.

Let me give you some very simple points on how to do the work of an evangelist.

1. Preach clearly the plan of salvation in your messages from time to time.

A pastor should not preach salvation messages every Sunday. Some pastors preach on how to be saved almost every week, and never feed their people on good Bible messages that help them grow. A pastor has to lead his people on to maturity. He must teach them faith and Christian growth. You cannot do this if the only thing you ever preach is how to be born from above. But, as you teach your people all the ways of the Lord, take a few minutes from Sunday to Sunday to explain how to be saved. You must keep the plan of salvation before your people at all times to get new people saved, and motivate you regular members to bring people to Jesus.

2. Give an invitation for people to make decisions for Christ every Sunday.

You never know who in the congregation needs to be saved. Even some of your church members may not be born of the Holy Spirit. You need to make this plain in your messages, that being baptized and being a member of the church does not guarantee that a person is saved. Explain clearly and regularly that a person must have a genuine salvation experience after he or she is old enough to understand. He must have a definite experience of salvation with the Lord in which he or she knows with-

386 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

out a doubt that Jesus came in and saved him. It is not unusual for people who have been church members for years to realize they have never really met Jesus in their hearts. It is difficult for these people to get saved, because they are embarrassed at the thought that they have to admit in front of the church that they have never really been saved. Make it plain what a person needs to do to know that he is saved, and give the invitation regularly.

There are various ways to give an invitation. The one I have used all my ministry is as follows:

HOW TO GIVE AN INVITATION

When I have finished my message I ask everyone to bow their heads and close their eyes. I then pray a prayer asking the Holy Spirit to speak to every person's heart who needs to take Jesus as his or her Lord and Savior. Then I say, "With heads bowed and eyes closed I want to ask you if you have ever been saved, if you can look back to a definite time and place after you were old enough to understand when you know you took Jesus as your Lord and Savior and you knew you were saved? If you have not, I ask you to do that today. If the Holy Spirit has given you a desire to be saved, if you understand in your mind that we are all sinners and that you need to be saved and you understand that Jesus died and rose for you, and if you feel a need to come to Jesus today, with no one looking but me, hold up your hand and I know you want me to pray for you. If you are willing to say to me, "Pastor, I know I need to be saved and I ask you to pray for me today." If you will hold up your hand long enough for me to see it, I will say God bless you, and you then can put your hand down. Then I will pray for you and I will lead you in a prayer to take Jesus as your Lord and Savior. While I wait with our eyes closed who will hold up your hand?" As various ones raise their hand, say, "God bless you. You can put your hand down. Anyone else. I will wait just a moment more. Anyone else? Yes. God bless you. You can put your hand down." And I continue this until I feel that all have raised their hands who are going to today.

Then I say, With our heads bowed and our eyes closed, I am now going to pray for you.

Prayer: "Father you see these beautiful people who have raised their hands saying that they want to take Jesus as their Lord and Savior. I pray that they will understand that they cannot save themselves, that they can never live good enough to save themselves. I pray that they understand that Jesus died and rose again to save them, and He is the only one who can save them. Holy Spirit, just move their hearts to the Lord Jesus as I pray, and help them to mean their prayer as sincerely as they know how. In Jesus' name I pray.

Now with your heads bowed and your eyes closed, I want you to pray this prayer out loud, loud enough for your own ears to hear you, just mean it the best you know how, and expect God to do the rest. Now all of you who are already saved, as I say the prayer you also repeat the prayer to help all those who want to be saved here today.

Now repeat after me:

God, I am a sinner.
I confess that I cannot save myself.
I repent of all my sins.
Please forgive me and save me.
Lord, I give you my life.
Come into my heart, Lord Jesus.
Blessed Holy Spirit, give me the new birth from above.
From this day forward my life is yours.
Thank you God, for saving me. Amen

Then I say: Everyone look this way. Those of you who prayed that prayer to be saved meant that prayer as sincerely as you knew how. Right? Right.

We are going to sing (or the instrumentalist is going to play) an invitation song. As we sing, those of you who prayed the prayer to be saved come forward and let us have your name so we can encourage you and help you to follow Jesus. Jesus said that if you confess Him before men He will confess you before the Father. So as we sing, all of you who prayed the prayer to be saved come forward and let us know that you have taken Jesus as your Lord and Savior.

The pastor can deal with each one as they come, or you can have assistants who counsel with them and get their names, addresses, etc.

Then announce their names one at a time, have each one to stand as you call his or her name, and have the audience to applaud the.

3. Make a list of people In your community that you know are lost, and begin to personally visit them.

To some degree you are responsible for every unsaved person in your community. You may not know if some of your acquaintances in the community are lost or saved. You need to make arrangements to talk with them privately, and find out if they are lost or saved. If it is someone you see regularly in a place of business, here is what you should do. First, you should put that person's name on your prayer list, and begin to pray for him. Pray for God to give you the right time and place to find out if he is lost or saved.

Then when you feel led, speak to him and say, "Could I talk with you privately for just a moment?" Once you are in his office or a private place, or visiting him in his home, you can say, "I have known you here in your business for [length of time]. I like you very much, and I appreciate the way you do business. I have never asked you

388 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

before, and I want to know if you know the Lord Jesus in your heart, and if you do not, I just want you to know that I love you and want you to receive Him as your Savior.” Then wait for him to answer you. If he is saved, find out if he is attending church regularly anywhere. Do not try to pull him away from his church if he has a pastor and church, but if he does not, try to bring him into your church. If he is lost, try to lead him to take the Lord Jesus.

4. Ask your people to give you the names of people that are lost for whom they are praying, then help them win those people to Jesus.

5. Lead your church leaders and all the members who will respond in a training course on how to lead people to take Jesus as their Lord and Savior.

If at all possible furnish printed tracts on how to be saved for your people to give to the lost.

6. Have evangelistic crusades every day or night for a week in your church one or two weeks each year.

You can preach in the crusade yourself or bring in some evangelist from outside your church. Advertise it in the community, have your people invite people, and get as many people saved as possible.

Chapter 38

MINISTER HEALING TO THE SICK

Matt 10:1

1 And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease. (KJV)

Matthew 10:1 HB

And having called his twelve disciples near, he gave them authority *over* unclean spirits, so as to throw them out, and to heal all sickness and all weakness.

I want to give you a few simple guidelines on how to minister healing to the sick. There are a few great books available in many languages on healing. I encourage you to read those books, and equip yourself to be powerful in this ministry.

In my opinion the greatest book ever written on healing (except the Bible, of course) is *Healing The Sick* by T. L. Osborn. It is clear, precise, and filled with explanations of Bible passages.

1. You must believe that God's healing is for today.

There is a tradition that has been handed down in many denominations now for many years, that miracles of healing ceased with the original Twelve Apostles. Only by studying the Bible, and becoming acquainted with a few good books that showed me what the Bible actually says was I able to cast away this tradition of men.

Jesus majored on three things in His ministry: preaching, teaching, and healing. He commanded His disciples to do the same thing. The Acts of the Apostles shows that is exactly what they did. The letters of Paul teach us how to exercise the gifts of healing, and James gives specific instructions on how to anoint with olive oil and pray for the sick. Nowhere in the New Covenant is there one word anywhere that teaches us that the Lord cancelled His command to heal the sick after the apostles died.

390 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Nowhere does the Bible teach that miracles ceased with the apostles. Believe the Bible. Do not believe the traditions of men.

Especially read the following passages:

Matthew 4:23-24. 8:1-17. 9:35-38. 10:1,7-8. 11:1-5. 12:1-21. 15:21-31. 17:14-21. Mark 2:1-12. 3:8-15. 5:1-43. 7:24-37. 8:22-26.9:14-29. 10:46-52. 16:15-20. Luke 4:14-41. 5:12-26. 6:1-19. 7:1-23. 8:26-56. 9:1-6, 37-45. 10:8-10, 17-24. 11:14-26. 13:11-17. 17:11-19. 18:35-43. John 4:46-54. 5:1-16. 9:1-41. 11:1-57. Acts 3:1-16. 4:7-22. 5:12-16. 9:32-43. 20:7-12. 28:1-10. 1 Corinthian 12:9,30. James 5:14-16. Isaiah 53:4-5. 1 Peter 2:24. Exodus 15:26. Psalm 105:37. 107:20. 3 John 2.

2. Teach your people that it is God's will for them to be healed and stay well.

3. Keep a small bottle of anointing oil with you.

Anoint the sick with oil and pray for all who request it, anywhere and everywhere, whether they are saved or lost. Always try to lead the person to take Jesus as his Lord and Savior along with receiving his healing.

4. Regularly invite people to come forward in your services for prayer for healing.

SPECIAL NOTE ON NUTRITION AND HEALTH

You as pastor are responsible before God to learn how to eat right, fast periodically, and exercise faith to maintain health. God gave us specific instructions in the Bible what to eat and what not to eat. [See Genesis 7:2,8. 8:20. Deuteronomy 14:1-20. There are many other verses.]

I have given some instructions in the chapter on "God's Call To Excellence." You as pastor need to learn good principles of nutrition, self control, and faith. You must practice these before the people, and lead the people to practice those same holy

principles.

You literally become physically what you eat. If you eat and drink things that cause disease, you will be diseased regardless of how much you believe God for healing. You cannot expect God to heal you from cancer of the lungs when you continue to smoke cigarettes. You cannot expect God to heal you from liver disease when you continue to drink alcoholic beverages. You cannot expect God to heal you from heart disease when you continue to eat large amounts of sugar and refined carbohydrates. On and on the list goes. People are killing themselves with processed foods, and do not know it. You as pastor are responsible to learn God's way of nutrition and health, live it before your people, and teach it to your people.

God forgives sins and heals sicknesses. Pray for your people. Anoint them with oil. Lay hands on them for healing. Then teach them obedience to the Word of God to maintain their health.

Get my book, *The Bible Health Manual*. It covers everything in the Bible on food, nutrition, and health according to God's laws.

Chapter 39

A MARRIAGE CEREMONY

The Marriage Ceremony should have great spiritual blessing for the couple getting married. I leave the details of the ceremony to you and the customs of your community, but I emphasize that you must be sure that the wedding ceremony is Christian, and not pagan.

Here is the message and ceremony I use. It is my own. You may use it or adjust it to meet your needs.

I always talk to the couple sometime before the ceremony to question them if they have had a personal salvation experience. If they have not, I explain the plan of salvation, and lead them to take Christ if they agree that they are ready and want to be saved. I do not push them into a decision they do not want to make. I also counsel them about how to live together in peace and harmony. I counsel them especially about at least these things: how they handle their money; how they deal with other family members; how they are to be harmonious in their sex life; how they are to be faithful to God, the Bible, church, prayer, and courteous and thoughtful to one another.

In the ceremony after the Bride and Groom and attendants are in their places for me to begin the ceremony, I always step out and address the audience for a few moments before I begin the ceremony proper. Because you always have people who attend weddings that never come to church I say something like the following:

We are so thankful that you came to this joyous occasion of the marriage of (Name) and (Name). God called me to always urge everyone everywhere to put God first in their lives, and here today as we establish a new home is one of the best places in the world to put God first.

The foundation of every community is the homes of the community. If the homes do not put God first neither will the community. If you have never taken Jesus Christ as the Savior and Lord of your life, you need to do that. The Holy Spirit must bring you to the place in your heart that you realize that you are a sinner and that you cannot save yourself. The Holy Spirit must also convince you that Jesus lived a perfect life

and died in your place upon the cross, and that God raised Him from the dead. When you have come to the place that your heart is prepared to take Him as Savior and Lord, you pray a prayer, asking God to forgive you of your sins, and telling God that you take Jesus Christ as your Savior and Lord. If perhaps the Holy Spirit has prepared you, I encourage you to pray this prayer with me:

God forgive me of my sins.
I believe Jesus Christ died and rose again for me.
I take Jesus as my Savior and Lord right now.
Holy Spirit give me the new birth right now.
From this day forward my life is yours.
Thank you God for saving me.
In the name of Jesus, Amen.

If there are any of you who wish to speak with me privately after the wedding I will be glad to talk with you and pray with you privately. God bless all of you, and may God be with you in your homes always.

And then I take my position in front of the Bride and Groom, and begin the ceremony.

Ceremony Message

Holy and happy is the sacred hour when two devoted hearts are bound by the divine ties of matrimony. God performed the first wedding when He spoke the precious words of love and unity to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. In that first wedding ceremony Adam said to God and to Eve, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cling to his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

The Lord Jesus, the blessed Son of God, honored the celebration of marriage by attending the Wedding in Cana of Ga-

lilee, and performed His first recorded miracle by changing the water into wine.

Saint Paul established Christian marriage as the cornerstone of honorable human society. He commands the wife to honor and obey her husband as her head before the Lord, and he commands the husband to love his wife as Christ loved the church and gave Himself for it.

Therefore, the two of you, [_____] and [_____], forsaking all others, and declaring your total loyalty to the Lord Jesus and to one another, I command you to join your right hands, and to repeat after me.

Marriage Vows [Groom to bride]

REPEAT AFTER ME:

I [Name of groom _____] take you [Name of bride _____] to be my lawful, wedded wife, to have and to hold from this day forward; to be faithful and loyal to you in all purity of heart, to love and to cherish, in sickness or in health, in poverty or in wealth, in the trials that may come our way, and in the blessings that will light our days, until death alone shall part us; I give to you my pledge.

[Bride to groom]

REPEAT AFTER ME:

I [Name of bride _____] take you [Name of groom _____] to be my lawful, wedded husband, to have and to hold from this day forward; to be faithful and loyal to you in all purity of heart, to love, to cherish, and to be subordinate, in sickness or in health, in poverty or in wealth, in the trials that may come our way, and in the blessings that will light our days, until death alone shall part us; I give to you my pledge.

Ring Ceremony

[Pastor to Groom] Place this ring on her finger and repeat after me:

Groom to Bride

With this ring I take you to be my wife. With this ring I endow you with all my worldly goods. In the name of the of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. Amen.

Bride to Groom

With this ring I take you to be my wife. With this ring I

endow you with all my worldly goods. In the name of the of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. Amen.

Since you have pledged your faith in and love to each other, acting in the authority invested in me by God in heaven above, acting in agreement with the laws of my church, and the laws of this state, I pronounce you Husband and Wife, in the presence of God, the angels in heaven, and these assembled witnesses. Therefore, let all men take care in the sight of God. This holy covenant shall ever remain sacred. What God has therefore joined together, let no man put asunder.

Prayer of Blessing

[With the groom and bride kneeling before you, place your right hand on the head of the groom, and your left hand on the head of the bride, and pray a prayer similar to this.]

Father, in the name of Jesus, I give [Name _____] and [Name _____] this blessing. Bless them with the blessing of our fathers Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, as fulfilled by our Lord Jesus Christ.

Bless them with good physical health, so that they can work and enjoy life. Give them healthy bodies, and long and prosperous lives.

At the right time and place give them the children it is your will for them to have and to bring up for your glory. Give them good, healthy children, and children that will serve the Lord.

Father, bless them financially. Give them the power to get resources, that Your covenant can be fully established in their lives. Teach them to tithe and give offerings, so You can open the windows of heaven, and pour out blessings upon them. I pray that they will have abundance in their home, so they will have plenty to give to God's work; so that they will have plenty to meet the needs of their children, and have food, clothing and shelter. Give them also many of the luxuries of life, so they can have the joys of blessing others along the way.

Father, bless them socially, with many more friends than they already have. I pray that their home shall be a place where friends meet, and most of all, that they themselves shall always be the very best of friends.

I pray most of all, Father, that You will bless them spiritually. I pray that You will fill them with the Holy Spirit and with the fruit of the Spirit. Fill them with love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, self-control, and all the good things of the Spirit. I pray that Jesus will be the Lord of their lives, that He will be the unseen partner in every undertaking, and the unseen guest at every meal. I pray that their home will be a bit of heaven on earth, that their home will be a place where heaven bows down and kisses the earth. Father, lead them through green pastures, and by still waters. Help them to meditate in Your law day and night, and I pray

that all they do shall prosper.

I pray this Father, in the name of Jesus, and in the power of the Holy Spirit. Amen!

You may kiss the Bride.

(Have them face the audience)

Ladies and Gentlemen, I present to you,

Mr. And Mrs. _____(Name)

Recessional.

Of course, understand that you may add other features to the ceremony as you and your people desire. We often have the brinde and groom take the Lord's Supper at the end of the prayer. Also often they light a unity candle, and extinguish the two candles representing the bride and groom. Or they may pour individual cups of liquid into a unity cup and drink from the unity cup. Different people add different features.

Chapter 40

A Baby Dedication Prayer

I include the following prayer as a model you can use for the dedication of babies in your services.

My practice is that the parents request the Sunday in which they want to publicly dedicate their child to God. I simply have the parents to come forward with the baby and all other family members sometime in the service, and introduce the parents, the child, and the other family members, and then I lay hands on the child and the parents and pray the following prayer.

Father, in the name of Jesus, the parents and family with the pastor and the church here and now dedicate this child, _____, to you Father for the entirety of his/her life and eternity. We thank you that you have given them this child to bring up and train for you. We acknowledge that all souls are yours, and that this child belongs to you. You have simply given him to this father and mother to bring up for you and your glory.

I pray that _____ will be blest by you so that he develops properly in spirit, soul, and body, and that he will grow in favor with God and man. I pray that you will give him good and proper physical growth and health, so that he is healthy all of his days that he may serve you and enjoy life.

I pray that you will give the father and mother wisdom in giving this child a good Christian education. I pray that his mind, emotions, and will, will grow and develop into a very wonderful and blessed personality.

I pray that when he gets old enough to understand that your Holy

Spirit will draw him to Jesus, and he will have a genuine salvation experience and be born of the Holy Spirit. I pray that he will be baptized and follow you and serve you in the church where it is your will for him to serve.

I pray that you will give him the occupation that he should follow in his life, and that he will be very successful in the work you would have him do.

I pray that at the right time and place you will give him a good Christian wife, and that you will give them children according to your perfect will. I pray that they will have a wonderful Christian home with heaven on earth in their domain.

I pray that you will bless him and his family with great prosperity in spirit, soul, and body, and that they will serve you all the days of their lives.

I pray when he has lived out his days, that you will call him home to heaven to hear the words, well done, good and faithful servant. You have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many.

We thank you God for answering all of our prayers for this precious child. In Jesus' name, Amen.

Chapter 41

A FUNERAL MESSAGE

OUTLINE

Read the Bible

- 1. Give glory to God.**
- 2. Honor the person who has died.**
- 3. Comfort the family and friends.**

Here is a condensed version of the funeral message I have used for all these years that I have been a pastor. I vary it from person to person to make it personally appropriate for each person.

I always read Psalm 23. I read other Scriptures that are appropriate for a man, or woman, or young person, or child, and whatever Scriptures the family requests. Funeral customs vary from country to country, but you as pastor are responsible for making the funeral service a Christian funeral, and not allow it to be a pagan service.

Here follows a sample message. I always use these points and remarks.

MESSAGE

There are three reasons why we are here today to have this Christian funeral service. The first reason is to glorify the Lord. The second reason is to honor the one who has gone from us. The third reason is to comfort the family, and friends, and all of us that are left behind.

Let Us Give Glory To God

Saint Paul says in 1 Corinthians 10:31,

Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.

We are here today to glorify the Lord. I know if [name the person who has died] could stand here and say anything to us today, he would say, “Let us glorify the Lord. Let us give God all the glory for every blessing I received in my entire lifetime.”

First, we give glory to God because He created us. We give glory to God because it is the Lord who has made us and not we ourselves. He created us, and breathed into our nostrils the breathe of life. It is in Him that we live and breathe and are. God is the One Who gave us our existence. If it were not for God we would not be. If it were not for His sustaining power we would go out of existence. Let us give glory to God for giving us our existence.

Second, we give glory to God because He has given us food, clothing, and shelter all of our lives. He sends His sunshine and His rain on the just and the unjust. He feeds the righteous and the unrighteous. We all receive the necessities of life from His goodness. We give Him all the glory.

Third, we give glory to God because He redeemed us from our sins. We sinned and went against God. He sent His only begotten Son. He became a baby and then a man in our place. He lived a perfect life for us. Our sins nailed Him to the cross.

He died for our sins. God raised Him from the dead, and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenlies. He forgave us of our sins, and gave us eternal life. We have hope of seeing our loved one again in a beautiful place because of the grace of God. We give glory to God because He is the One who gives us hope as we stand here today beside our beloved dead. Praise His holy name!

*Let Us Honor The One Who
Has Gone From Us*

The second reason we are here today is to honor [full name of the person who has died].

We want to give him some of the honor due him today. We cannot honor him fully. God will do that, but we want to give him the honor that is appropriate here today at his funeral service.

[Full name _____] was born
[date _____] at
[place _____] to
[parents' _____] names
_____].

[Then you give where he (or she) was brought up, brothers and sisters born into his family, when and where he finished schools and colleges or universities, what employment he fol-

lowed, marriage, and children born to him. Be sure and tell when he received the Lord Jesus as his Savior, and when he was baptized. Tell the good things he has done that he should be remembered for, and do not tell anything that is bad. All of our sins are under the blood of Jesus, and remembered against us no more. You can end this second point of the message by giving the details of how he came to receive the Lord Jesus, in order to encourage anyone there who is not saved to take the Lord.]

***Let Us Comfort The Family
and Us Who Are Left Behind.***

The third reason we are here today is to comfort the family and friends, and those of us who are left behind. After all, we are the ones who need the help. [Name of departed _____] is in heaven, enjoying the presence of God. He certainly does not need anything. We are the ones who need help today.

[For the remainder of the message use and explain the Scriptures you feel led to use that will comfort the family. 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 command us not to weep as those who have no hope, but to be comforted in the fact that we shall see our loved ones again at the Second Coming of the Lord. 1 Corinthians 15 is on the resurrection. John 14 tells us Jesus has gone to prepare a place for us, and that He will come again and receive us to Himself. Revelation 21-22 describe the New Heaven and the New Earth. Proverbs 31:10-31 describe a virtuous woman. Use the Scriptures the Lord leads you to use, but

do not try to use too many Scriptures. A funeral service should not be a long service.]

Here is a story you can use wherever appropriate.

The Twenty-Third Psalm

This is a fictitious story to illustrate a truth, and it will comfort your heart. It is a story about the Twenty-Third Psalm.

There was a banquet of famous people in a home in [you can name any place in your country that is known for its famous residents]. It was just a nice dinner party, given by a good man for many of his friends. There were entertainers, and business people, and even a couple of ministers present. After they had finished the meal, there was no entertainment planned. When the conversation got quiet, and it seemed that something needed to be done to keep the party going, someone spoke up and said, "We have many people here who are actors and entertainers. Let us have some entertainment." Everyone agreed. Someone called the name of a young man who was famous for giving dramatic readings, and said, "Let us have him do a dramatic reading for us." Everyone applauded, and insisted that the young man speak for them. He stood to his feet, and said, "Out of reverence for the ministers who are here tonight, I would like to do the Twenty-Third Psalm." So he began.

[I use the 23rd Psalm in the King James Version because that is what most people know and love.]

He pronounced every word very distinctly. He raised and

lowered his voice to emphasize every phrase. He used his hands to dramatize the Psalm, and changed the expression on his face with every sentence. He gave a tremendous performance. When he finished everyone enthusiastically applauded.

Another man stood up. He said, “That was beautiful. I wish to ask a favor. My dear pastor is here today. He is in his nineties now. I have heard him say the Twenty-Third Psalm so many times in many places. He has a way of doing it that is different from everyone. Would you please allow him to do the Twenty-Third Psalm?” Everyone out of respect for his age and his position was very glad for him to present the Twenty-Third Psalm.

He stood to his feet. His voice quivered a bit, and his hand was a little shaky from age, but the atmosphere of heaven was around him. He began, **The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want.** A holy hush fell over the entire room. Everyone was captured by the godly messenger. **He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters.** As he spoke everyone could almost feel the green grass, and hear the flow of deep waters.

By the time he said, **Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me,** tears began to trickle down the face of everyone in the room. People began to reach for their napkins to wipe their eyes.

When he said, **Thou anointest my head with oil; my cup**

runneth over, a surge of heavenly joy rushed through everyone present. By the time he said, **Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life; and I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever**, you could almost feel the brush of angels moving in the place. He sat down, and no one wanted to move because the presence of God was so strong in the place.

Finally, someone whispered so that all could hear, “What was the difference?” The young man who did the Twenty-Third Psalm first realized someone had to say something, and he was the appropriate one. Very graciously he stood to his feet, and quietly said, “What was the difference? Yes, there was a great difference, and I know what the difference was. You see, I know the Twenty-Third Psalm. This dear man of God knows the Author, the Lord of the Twenty-Third Psalm.

I ask you. Do you just know the Twenty-Third Psalm, or do you know the Author of the Twenty-Third Psalm, the Lord Himself. If you do not know Him, you may come to know Him now as we bow our heads, and close our eyes to pray.

[Then pray for everyone. Pray that God will comfort the family: Pray that anyone present who does not know the Lord in his or her heart, will take Him now, because you know that is what [name of departed loved one] would want them to do. With heads bowed and eyes closed, you can ask those who want you to pray for them to know the Lord in their hearts to raise their hands, and put them down as soon as you see them. You pray for them, and then ask them to pray this prayer out loud with you. You can ask everyone to repeat it out loud for

408 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus
the benefit of those who need to receive the Lord in their hearts].

Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus, I repent of my unbelief, and ask you to forgive me of my sins.

I believe Jesus died and rose again for me.

I take Jesus as my Lord and Savior, now.

I give you my life, and will live for you from this day forward.

Holy Spirit give me the new birth.

I receive eternal life.

From this day forward, my life is yours.

In Jesus' name. Amen!

At The Grave Side

I always read 2 Corinthians 5:1-8 at the grave.

Committal Prayer

Father, in the name of Jesus, we commit the spirit and soul of our dear loved one into your hands, to await the Second Coming of the Lord and the resurrection out from among the

dead.

We commit the body to the earth. Earth to earth, ashes to ashes, and dust to dust, and await the day when this body shall be raised from the dead and made new like the resurrected body of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ.

Father, we commit into Your loving care, this sweet family, and all these good friends. Watch over them with your ministering angels. See them safely to their homes. Comfort their hearts with your blessed Holy Spirit. Be with them all the days of their lives, and help us to love you and to love one another until we are gathered around Your throne at the Second Coming of Jesus our Lord. In Jesus' name. Amen!

Chapter 42

BAPTISM AND THE LORD'S SUPPER

OUTLINE

Romans 6:3-5

- 1. Baptism pictures the death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus.**
- 2. Baptism pictures the death, burial, and resurrection of our old man in our hearts and the resurrection of the new man within us.**
- 3. Baptism pictures the death, burial, and resurrection of our bodies.**
- 4. When a person should be baptized.**
- 5. The meaning of the Lord's Supper.**

Allow me to give you a few thoughts on Baptism and The Lord's Supper that I believe will benefit you regardless of your beliefs and practices on these ordinances.

The Meaning Of Baptism

From my youth up my pastor taught me that baptism pictures three important beliefs of the Christian faith.

1. Baptism pictures the death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus.

When Jesus was baptized by John in the Jordan River he was committing Himself to His death, burial, and resurrection. When John lowered Jesus into the water and brought Him up again, Jesus was identifying Himself with all mankind. He was saying by His baptism, " I came to do My Father's will, to take the place of every human, and sacrifice Myself in their place. I commit Myself to God to do His will. I stand in the place of every sinner to give My life for them. I will die on the cross for them. I will be buried. I will rise again. John, baptize me. This is the beginning of my

fulfillment of all righteousness, so that all who believe Me can be made righteous before God.”

Our baptism means that we have taken Jesus who died, was buried, and rose in our place.

2. Baptism pictures the death and burial of our old man in our hearts, and the resurrection of a new man within us.

Our old self is crucified with Christ on the cross, and our old self was buried with Him, Rom 6:1-18. A new person in Christ Jesus rises up with Him in our hearts. Baptism pictures the fact that this took place in our hearts when we took the Lord Jesus.

3. Baptism pictures the death, burial, and resurrection of our bodies.

If Jesus tarries, one day each of us will die, and our body will be buried. At His Second Coming our bodies will rise from the dust, and be made a new body like the resurrection body of our Lord, Rom 8:11; 1 The 4:14-18. Therefore, baptism pictures the future death, burial, and resurrection of our bodies. Praise His holy name.

You as pastor have the responsibility of teaching your people what baptism means. It is especially important that new believers be taught these truths just before or immediately after they are baptized.

It is appropriate for parents and pastors to present babies to the Lord, and dedicate them to Him. It is appropriate to reserve baptism for those who have reached the age to believe and receive Jesus for themselves.

Baptism is a ceremony that has spiritual significance, but it does not save anyone. Baptism is for the saved. A person can be baptized in water, but if he does not take Jesus in his heart, he is not saved. Baptism saves no one. Baptism is an act of obedience, by which the believer, the pastor, and the church proclaim the death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

When Should A Person Be Baptized?

In many churches around the world, new believers are made to wait for baptism until they have received months or even years of training. Many pastors, missionaries,

412 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

and churches take the attitude that people are not qualified for baptism until the believer is mature in the Lord and has proven that he is a faithful Christian.

I have given this much study. With me, what the Bible says always decides an issue. If the Bible has nothing to say on a subject, the pastors and churches are free to do what they think best, but if the Bible speaks on a subject, we are obligated to practice what is written in the Bible.

In every place in the Acts of the Apostles that baptism is mentioned, the person was baptized immediately as soon as he believed. They were baptized immediately if they were Jews and had a Bible background, or if they were of other races and had a pagan background. It made no difference. They were baptized immediately. Read Acts 2:38,41. 8:12-38. 9:18. 10:47-48. 16:15,33. 18:8. 19:1-5. 22:16.

I do not wish to cause problems in anyone's church or denomination. I ask you to read my comments, and prayerfully consider them. Do not make changes in your church's practice without proper authority from those over you in the Lord, but the time must come that the church everywhere must follow the simple and plain teaching of the Bible instead of the traditions of men.

Why would you withhold baptism from anyone who has sincerely placed his faith in Jesus Christ as his Lord and Savior? You may say, "But we do not yet know if he is sincere or not." My answer is, "How will you ever know if he is sincere or not? After he has attended church for years, you still cannot look down in his heart and know for sure that he is saved." You may say, "But we have to be sure he is living a good moral life, and is not stealing or committing adultery, or other such things." After a person has been a member of your church for years, you have no assurance he is not stealing, or committing adultery, or doing many other things you know nothing about. Do you follow all your church members and spy on their private lives? How do you know what they do behind closed doors, or in the next town.

And let me give you another thought. What is it that makes a man or woman a Christian? Is it a good moral life, or is it faith in Jesus Christ? If a good moral life is all that is required, then go and baptize all the good moral unbelievers. There are plenty of people from all kinds of pagan religions that live good moral lives, sometimes better than Christians. Since they meet your moral requirements, why not baptize them?

It is not morality that saves people; it is faith in the blood of Jesus. Stop placing requirements on people that the Bible does not require.

Teach believers to live good moral lives after they have received Jesus and have

been baptized.

Baptism is a clothing of obedience that the new believer puts on to make him pleasing in the sight of the Father, and identifies him to the devil as a Christian, and protects him from the onslaught of the devil.

Let me make a comparison of salvation and baptism with physical birth and clothing. Follow me closely. When a human baby is born, is it a human? Yes. What makes that baby a human? Does walking, talking, reading, and writing, and working make that baby a human? No. He can do none of those things. Who would be foolish enough to say, "I am going to wait until this baby can walk, talk, read, write, and work before I put any clothes on him. I am not sure he is a human. I will wait until he proves to me by his action that he is human before I begin to treat him like a human. I will let him run around naked like the animals until he proves to me that he is human." Any human with a good heart would consider you cruel and inhuman.

If you make people wait for baptism, you are doing the same thing. What is it that makes a person a Christian? Being born of the Holy Spirit is what makes a person a Christian. That happens the instant he takes Jesus Christ in his heart. When he confesses with his mouth and believes in his heart the Lord Jesus, he is a Christian. He may not be able to walk like a Christian yet. He may not be able to talk like a Christian, or do any of the things that a Christian should do, but just like the physical baby is a human, so the spiritual baby is a Christian. Just as you would not refuse to give the physical baby clothes to identify him as a human and not an animal, so you should not refuse the clothing of baptism to identify the new believer as a Christian.

He is no longer an unbeliever, and you must not treat him as an unbeliever. Do not make him wait outside the door of the body of Christ. Do not tell him to sit on the steps outside, until after many months or years he has proved he is one of us. No. Bring him in. Baptize him. Love him. Let him know he is one of us, and let the devil and the world know he is one of us. He will learn how to act like one of us so much faster.

Be assured that whether he is sitting on the steps outside the door listening, or inside with us participating, he will learn to act like us. If you make him wait on the outside until he is "good enough" to say he is one of us, when he is on the inside with us he will be a proud, self-righteous Christian like those who made him wait on the outside because he was not yet good enough to say that he was one of us. Study your Bible, and take these thoughts with you before the Lord. Let the Lord give you understanding.

414 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Romans 6:1-12. Colossians 2:12. 1 Corinthians 1:13-16. Galatians 3:27.

The Meaning Of The Lord's Supper

On the Lord's Supper, I want to concentrate on only one thought I believe will bless you.

1 Cor 11:29-30

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. (KJV)

Read 1 Corinthians 11:29-30 HB

29 Because the one eating and drinking unworthily, eats and drinks judgment to himself, not judging through the Lord's body.

30 Because of this many among you are weak, and without health, and enough are sleeping

The phrase, **not judging through the Lord's body**, means that many Christians do not understand the benefits and blessings they have through the broken body and shed blood of Jesus. They take bread and wine in the Lord's Supper, and do not realize that Jesus paid for the forgiveness of their sins and the healing of all their sicknesses. Because they do not realize this, they do not exercise faith to be healed. Because they do not exercise faith to be healed, they remain sick, and many die, not knowing they could have been healed, and live many more years for the Lord.

Many Christians take the Lord's Supper in an unworthy manner, that is, without faith in the sacrifice of Christ on the cross. Their lack of faith sends them to an early grave. When you take the Lord's Supper, claim His healing for your entire being, soul and body. Healing is available to you through the sacrifice of Christ on the cross for you and me.

Chapter 43

LEADERSHIP, DOCTRINE, AND CONTROL

I want to talk to you about a problem in doctrine that is probably the one doctrine that divides more Christians than any other. It is the doctrine of the eternal security of the believer, or whether it is possible for a genuine child of God to be lost after he is saved. The doctrine that determines what you believe about eternal security, is the doctrine of salvation, whether salvation is by grace through faith, or by your good works.

You may or may not at this point accept my belief on the subject of eternal security. Whether you can or cannot, please read the material so you can be informed on the issue, and also profit from some other things related to it that God wants me to give you.

One of my assistant pastors was with a group of Hispanic pastors, when the subject came up of whether or not a person could be lost after he was saved. They asked him what his pastor and church believed. He said, "We believe it is impossible for a person who has genuinely been born from above to ever be lost after that."

I was absolutely shocked at the next question that came out of a pastor's mouth. I had extreme difficulty conceiving of a pastor having the attitude that he expressed, but here is what he said: "If your pastor teaches that believers cannot be lost after they are saved, how do you control your people?" I was shocked at this fleshly attitude. The revelation of God hit me in my spirit as a lightning bolt. Many pastors are using certain doctrines to manipulate and control their people just like worldly politicians and ungodly people manipulate and control people. Pastors are holding their people's sins over their heads, and threatening them that they may go to hell to make them do what they want them to do. They are manipulating their people with fear, and not leading them to be secure in the love of God as the Bible teaches. Pastor, you must not manipulate your people. You must not control them by fleshly and psychological means.

416 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

You must learn how to maintain your position of authority by the power of God, not with the arm of flesh.

Please think through this with me. Whether you agree with me on eternal security or not, at least receive what I say on this extremely important subject of how to lead your people. You must not try to control your people by using their sins against them. God does not do that, and you certainly have no right to do what God does not do.

Which Sin Gets A Person Lost?

If it is possible for a saved person to be lost after he is saved, which sins do we commit that make us lost, and which sins can we commit and still be saved? Different Christian groups have different lists of sins. Some of them have not published their list. It is a list that most pastors in that group use by common consent, but one pastor will not include a particular sin on his list, and another pastor will add a few. Whose list shall we use to determine which sins get our people lost, and which sins they can commit and still be saved? What council shall decide the issue? Who will draw up the list? What verses in the Bible will you use to justify these traditions of men?

After we draw up the list who will enforce it? As the pastor, are you going to tell your people when they are lost, and when they are saved, by reviewing their sins each day, and letting them know whether they are lost today, or whether they are still saved today?

Which sin will get them lost, committing adultery, or sowing discord among brethren? You most likely would condemn the adulterer very quickly, but you would deal gently with the person who sows discord among brethren, because sowing discord among brethren is a sin committed regularly by pastors against pastors.

Do you really want the responsibility of telling your people which sins will get them lost, and which sins they can commit and still be saved? Which verses in the Bible will you use to do this?

I do not think that you want this responsibility. I can tell you this, whether you want that authority or not, you do not have it. You have authority to declare to them that if they have taken Jesus as their Lord and Savior, they are saved, and if they have not, they are lost. You must warn them that their daily obedience determines whether or not they are in fellowship with God, but you cannot look into their hearts and know if they are saved or lost. You must not manipulate your people, and maintain control over their lives by keeping them in doubt about their assurance of eternal life. The Lord Jesus promised them eternal life, and you have no right to take away the promise

of eternal life from them by your own special list of sins, which conveniently leaves out the sins that you regularly commit.

If you are saved by grace, you are kept saved by grace. If your good works saved you, then your bad works can lose you, but the perfect work of Christ saved you, and the perfect work of Christ keeps you saved.

You will have to forgive me for dealing with you harshly, but God hates such foolishness.

Study the words of Jesus on eternal life.

God promises eternal life. See John 3:15-16,36; 4:14; 5:24,39; 6:27,40,47,54,68; 10:28; 12:50; 17:2. Read Romans 8:28-39.

If God gives you eternal life, and then takes it away, it was not eternal life. It was temporary life. You have to decide if God gives eternal life, or if God gives temporary life. The Bible says, eternal life. I believe the Bible.

For now, I will not deal with all the Scriptures that teach that we are saved forever. I leave it to you to study it out between you and God, but I am praying that you will never try to manipulate and control your people by such worldly and ungodly means.

Receive your pastoral authority from the Lord Jesus, exercise it under the anointing of the Holy Spirit, and lead your people with firm authority in love, not in beggarly fear.

**God bless you as the Holy Spirit leads you to
rightly divide the Word of truth on this subject.**

Chapter 44

UNITY IN THE BODY OF CHRIST

All over the world the body of Christ is ready to come together in love and harmony. I do not speak of a super church organization where all Christians form one denomination with one human leader. What I mean by unity in the body of Christ is that Christians love and fellowship with one another as members of Christ, and stop building walls of separation between us. All of us have unique beliefs that we consider absolutely essential, that we are not willing to give up. I do. I hold certain beliefs which many in the body of Christ do not believe, that I consider absolutely essential to correct belief before God. I will not forsake those beliefs for anyone, but I do not allow that to stop me from fellowshipping with anyone who has taken the Lord Jesus as the only way of salvation.

I will gladly love and fellowship any brother or sister who believes the following:

That Jesus is both God and Man, that He lived, died, and rose again to complete salvation for the whole world, and that I am saved by grace through faith, and not by my good works.

If we can agree on that much I will gladly fellowship with him or her as a brother or sister in Christ.

If he does not believe in the deity of Christ, if he does not believe that Jesus brought a perfect salvation, if he believes that we help save ourselves by our good works, I place him in the same category with the Judaizers of Saint Paul's day, and I say, "Let him be accursed, because he preaches another gospel, and there is no other gospel." Gal 1:8-9.

I have been a pastor since 1950. I know how the Christian community around the world operates. The members of our churches around the world can easily be led to love and fellowship with one another. The pastors are the ones who are keeping the body of Christ divided. The pastors are the ones who divided the body of Christ in the first place. Pastors are the ones who have built the denominational walls. I know. I helped build some of those denominational walls until I learned I was not glorifying Christ by doing so. I thought I was right. I thought I was protecting the faith. I discov-

ered that I was fighting the prayer of the Lord Jesus in the Gospel of John, chapter 17. I found I was fighting against the will of God as written in Ephesians 4:8-16.

In 1971 when I took a stand in the Southern Baptist Convention meeting in Denver on the absolute inerrancy of the Bible and against The Broadman Bible Commentary, and again in Philadelphia in 1973, I realized that pastors would stand with a denomination and against Christ and the plain statements of Holy Scripture, I said, "I take my stand with Christ and the Holy Bible." Since the beginning of my faith in Jesus as a youth, I have always stood with Christ and the Holy Bible. He and His Word have always been the absolute, unchanging loyalties of my life. I stood for Christ and His Word in a denomination for many years, until I saw that the loyalty of most of the pastors in that denomination were more loyal to that denomination than they were to Jesus Christ. If the denomination said one thing, and Jesus and the Bible said something different, they would agree with the denomination, and push aside what Jesus and His Word said. Pastors in denominations are not the only ones who do this. Many pastors in independent churches do the same thing.

I do not write these words to create more walls and divisions than already exists. Do not agree with me, and then raise yourself up in your self-righteousness, and feel that you and I are better than the rest. I do not feel that way at all, and I do not write these words for that purpose. I write these words to help you see the problem we face as pastors. We pastors are the only ones who can solve the problem. Our people are ready for us to stop fighting one another, and unite around Jesus and His Word. Allow pastors to hold different beliefs from mine and yours. Allow pastors to be denominational pastors, or to be independent pastors. I still participate in a denomination where many do not believe the same way as I, but at least there is freedom in my denomination. They do not try to control me. Let each pastor work that out for himself, but let us lead our people to know that we pastors love Jesus Christ, His Word, and the whole body of Christ. Let the Holy Spirit move us toward unity of doctrine, as each one is able to receive it, but let us be patient toward one another, tenderhearted toward one another, even as our Lord is toward all of us.

Pastor, I exhort you. Our people are ready for love and respect for the whole body of Christ. They are tired of our fighting and criticizing one another. They want peace in the body of Christ. If the shepherds will stop fighting one another, the sheep will stop fighting also.

**This is my call to you for unity in the body of
Christ. Praise His holy name!**

Section Ten - Your Attitude

In this last section there are only two chapters, but they are so extremely important. They both have to do with your attitude. You must have the attitude of long-term commitment. You must be willing to sow and to reap faithfully over the years. I strongly recommend that you memorize the outline to the message, "Seedtime and Harvest." I urge you to preach this message to your people. You must saturate yourself with the principles of "Seedtime and Harvest" every day of your life.

"Listening To The Right Headlines" is an unusual message. I pray that you will grasp the significance of it. God will have to give you a special revelation for you to really lay hold of its meaning. Read "Listening To The Right Headlines" many times until its attitude really grips your heart.

God bless you. We love you.

Chapter 45

SEEDTIME AND HARVEST

OUTLINE

Genesis 8:22

Introduction

- (1) God is my source.
- (2) Give to God first.
- (3) Expect a miracle.

1. Everything in your life is governed by seedtime and harvest.
2. Seedtime and harvest are always after its kind.
3. God Himself abides by the principle of seedtime and harvest.
4. Sow regardless of the negative factors.
 - (1) Sow regardless of the apparent storms.
 - (2) Sow regardless of the response of people.
 - (3) Sow regardless of the interference of the devil.
5. Sow counting on the positive factors.
 - (1) Sow with all the sincerity of your soul.
 - (2) Sow with a view to a blessing.
 - (3) Look to God for the growth.
 - (4) Wait for the seed's time.

Gen 8:22

While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease. (KJV)

Genesis 8:22 HB

While the days of the earth continue, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat,

and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.

What I am about to share with you is extremely important. It is beyond my capacity to put into words how important this message is. The principles of God's seedtime and harvest will transform your life totally, if you will put into practice the guidelines in this message. You can experience a new depth of God's love beyond anything you have ever experienced. If you will put into practice what I am going to tell you, it will totally transform your life. I want you to absorb it with all your heart.

The principle of Seedtime and Harvest.

There are three basic principles by way of introduction involved in Seedtime and Harvest.

(1) The first principle is this: God is my source.

I look to God, not to man. I will not look to circumstances. I will not look to things. God is my source for everything that I need. God is your source for everything that you need.

(2) The second principle is: Give to God first.

Whatever you give to God, God gives it back to you many times over - your money, your love, your time, your interest, your devotion, everything, give to God first.

Of course, you must understand that you can only give to God out of what He has already given to you.

Everything you give to God is a seed sown. It produces a harvest for you. If you plant one seed in your garden, you receive a plant full of fruit. It is the same with God. When you sow a seed in faith with God, you will reap a plant full of blessings. Give to God first, and expect Him to return it to you many times over.

(3) The third principle is: Expect a miracle.

Expect the miracle of the harvest. Only the power of God causes a single seed to produce dozens or hundreds of fruit on a plant, and give you hundreds of seeds to replace the one seed you planted. This is a miracle of God. God is the One who causes life to reproduce life in abundance. As you plant your seed for God, exercise faith that the miracle of reproduction will take place, and you will reap a great harvest.

I have never in my life expected miracles like I expect them now. I have never received so many miracles as I am receiving right now. It is absolutely beyond anything I ever dreamed. Every time I turn around, I am facing a miracle. I constantly receive miracles. The reason I am receiving miracles is that I am sowing seed in the will of God, and I am expecting miracles. God is pouring them out.

You must think like this: "I will plant more seed than I have ever planted. I will reap more harvest than I have ever reaped. I will give more than I have ever given. I will receive more than I have ever received. I will serve God more than I have ever served Him. I will expect more from God than I have ever expected. I will plant more seed in faith than ever before. I will expect more miracles from God than ever before." That attitude must become a permanent part of your thinking.

1. EVERYTHING IN YOUR LIFE IS GOVERNED BY GOD'S PRINCIPLE OF SEEDTIME AND HARVEST.

God says in Genesis 8:22 that while the earth remains, everything is governed by seedtime and harvest. Everything in your life, on this earth, is governed by the principle of seedtime and harvest. You are planting seeds today. You must be careful what kind of seeds you plant, because everything you sow, you will reap. Seedtime and harvest are sowing and reaping. Today you are sowing. Tomorrow you are reaping. Throughout your life you are sowing and reaping. Everything in your life is governed by seedtime and harvest. Learn this principle and begin to count on it. Begin to work it for the glory of God.

You must allow time for the seasons of life. In different seasons there are different conditions. Sometime it is summer. Sometime it is fall, then winter, and then spring again. Let God send cold into your life, and let God send heat into your life. Let God send summer and winter into your life. Let Him send day into your life, and let Him send night. Let God send good times, difficult times, hot times, and cold times. These different seasons must come into your life for you to be prepared to receive God's blessings.

Many of us want somebody else to suffer the cold and the heat, and the summer and winter for us. We want someone else to go through the day and the night for us, and let us reap all the blessings. It does not work that way! Everything in your life is dependent upon seedtime and harvest. Cold and heat, summer and winter, and day and night must come into your life!

424 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Do not think God has forsaken you when the sun goes down. The sun will come up in the morning. It takes darkness, and it takes sunlight; it takes cold and it takes heat; and it takes summer and winter in your life to bring about seedtime and harvest. Do not fight it. Cooperate with God's holy principles of seedtime and harvest in your life.

I grew up on a farm in Mississippi, USA. It would get real hot in the summertime. Some winters would be very cold, and other winters would not be very cold. When we had a warm winter, my father would say, "Son, it's going to be a bad crop year next year." I would say, "Why, Daddy?" He would say, "We did not have a cold enough winter." Another year we would have a very cold winter. The ground would freeze, and stay frozen for many days. Snow would come... sleet... rains.... freezing rains a hard winter. My Father would say, "Son, we are going to have a good crop next year." I would say, "Why is that?" "Well", he would say, "for several reasons. One is, it has been cold enough to freeze the ground. That will make plowing much easier next spring. The ground will break up much easier. But the main thing is that when it gets cold enough and stays cold long enough, it kills the insects so they will not eat up the crop next year."

You and I have many insects in our lives. God has to freeze them out. God has to send the burning summer, and the freezing winter to purge out the things in your life that interfere with the great harvest He wants to give us.

I have always liked okra [a vegetable grown in the United States in the South]. When we moved to Los Angeles, I planted some okra. It sprouted and came up. It got just about a foot tall, but it would not get any bigger [okra normally grows to be four or five feet tall]. It grew a leaf or two, a little bloom, and one little pod of okra less than an inch long. I could not grow okra. In the South I had grown okra that produced huge amounts of okra. I asked someone why my okra did not grow. He said, "Don't you know it does not get hot enough here on the west side of Los Angeles to grow okra?" I said, "Oh." I did not know it was that 90 and 100 degree weather in the South that grew okra.

It takes heat to grow some plants. Just remember. Everything in your life is grown in agreement with God's principles of seedtime and harvest. Depending on the plants, it takes cold and heat, summer and winter, and day and night. When the cold comes in your life, and you feel that this is an unproductive, desolate time, say, "Praise God! I will have a good spring, because I am having a hard winter."

Dr. Vernon McGee, famous radio Bible teacher, tells the story about people who were giving their favorite Scriptures and testimonies. One man said, "My favorite Scripture is, **and it came to pass.**" They did not understand what he meant, so some-

one said, "Would you explain to us why, **and it came to pass**, is your favorite Scripture?" He said, "When trouble comes upon me, I say, and it came to pass, it did not come to stay." When you have a hard winter, say, "Praise God! It came to pass. It did not come to stay." You are going to have a good spring. Remember that. Everything abides by the principles of seedtime and harvest.

2. SEEDTIME AND HARVEST ARE ALWAYS AFTER ITS KIND

Gen 1:10-12

10 And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good.

11 And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so.

12 And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. (KJV)

Genesis 1:10-12 HB

10 And God called the dry ground, Earth, and the binding together of the waters he called, Seas; and God saw that *it was good*.

11 And God said, Earth, sprout tender sprouts, the plant sowing seed, and the fruit tree making fruit after its kind, whose seed is in itself upon the earth; and it was so.

12 And out of the earth came tender sprouts, the plant sowing seed after its kind, and the tree making fruit, whose seed was in itself, after its kind; and God saw that it was good.

The second principle of seedtime and harvest is this: Seedtime and harvest are always after its kind.

How many of you ever planted corn, and tomato plants came up? How many of you ever planted beans, and got grapevines? How many of you ever planted flower seed, and got squash? It is an indisputable principle that whatever you plant is what is going to come up. You reap what you sow. If you plant hatred, you reap hatred. If you plant love, you reap love.

What you need, is what you should plant. Think of some things you need: spiritually, psychologically, financially, for your family, your church, and your country. Think of some things that you need. What ever you need, that is what you must plant.

426 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

Do you need love? Some people say, “Oh I am not loved. Nobody cares anything about me?” If you plant the seeds of love toward other people, you will soon reap so much love you will not know what to do with it. Plant what you need. The same thing works in the material realm, just like it does in the spiritual realm. If you need money, plant money. If you have a craving for money, and you plant a craving for money, you will reap more craving for money.

Put God first. Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and plant your money where God tells you to plant it. Love God. Do what is right. He will begin to pour upon you spiritual blessings and financial blessings beyond anything you have ever seen or heard.

I have always tithed from my earliest days. I am giving more now because I realize this is what God wants, and this is the path of blessing. I am planting good seed everywhere I can. I have given more to the church than I have ever given. I am here to testify before you and before my God, in the sincerity of my own heart, every time I give money to the Lord, God multiplies it back to me. I find more money in my pocket than I had before I started giving. Every time! Whatever you need, start planting it.

3. GOD HIMSELF ABIDES BY THIS HOLY PRINCIPLE OF SEEDTIME AND HARVEST

Isaiah 53:10-11 says that Jesus Christ suffered, that He will see His seed, and be satisfied. In the Garden of Eden, God planted a seed of prophecy. God promised that the seed of woman would one day overwhelm the serpent’s head. Down through history that seed grew. It grew in Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David, and Solomon, all the way to Jesus the Messiah.

John 12:20-24

20 And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

23 And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

(KJV)

John 12:20-24 HB

20 And there were some Greeks out of them going up in order to prostrate themselves in the feast;

21 Therefore these came near to Philip, the one from Bethsaida of Galilee, and requested him, saying, Sir, we will to see Jesus.

22 Philip comes, and speaks to Andrew, and again Andrew and Philip speak to Jesus.

23 And Jesus answers them, saying, The hour has come, that the Son of Man should be glorified.

24 Amen, amen, I say to you, Except a grain of wheat falling into the earth dies, it remains alone, but if it dies, it bears much fruit.

God Himself abides by the principle of seedtime and harvest. God planted the life of Jesus. God is now reaping a great harvest from all races.

James 5:7

Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. (KJV)

James 5:7HB

Therefore be patient, brothers, until the coming of the Lord to be at our side. Behold, the farmer awaits for the highly valued fruit of the earth, and has patience upon it until he takes the autumn rain and *the later rain*.

There are more people being saved today than any time in world history. During the days of the future Great Tribulation when the Anti-Christ will rule, the Lord will reap the greatest harvest of people saved out of all races that has ever happened in all history. He is patient. He is waiting for that full harvest. He abides by the same principles of seedtime and harvest that we do. God does not require anything of us that He does not require of Himself. Are you willing to sow and to reap? Are you willing to work the principles of seedtime and harvest?

4. SOW REGARDLESS OF THE NEGATIVE FACTORS.

Negative factors are at work all the time. You must be aware of them, and not get discouraged.

(1) Sow regardless of the apparent storms Ecc 11:1-6.

Ecc 11:1

Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days. (KJV)

Ecc 11:1 Send out your food upon the face of the waters, because after abundance of days you shall find it.

This refers to sowing grains of seed in the water. When you plant seeds in the water, they are lost to your sight, but after some days you see the plants rising through the water. This is how rice is grown. It is the same with your seeds of faith and obedience. When you sow your gifts of money, love, and service, they drop out of your sight, but in the future you see the plants and harvest come into your sight.

Ecclesiastes 11:2-4 commands us to keep on sowing seed regardless of the storms and floods that come into our lives. Some of you are in storms of trouble. Some of you have floods of sorrows. Some of you are cast down. The floods of the devil are beating against your doors. Some of you are gurgling in the water, about to go under. “Oh God, how can I plant any seed right now?”

Just keep throwing out the good seed right there in the water. Regardless of the floods, keep planting the seed. Do not let the devil stop you from planting the seed.

Ecc 11:2

Give a portion to seven, and also to eight; for thou knowest not what evil shall be upon the earth. (KJV)

Ecclesiastes 11:2 HB

Give an allotment to seven, and also to eight, because you do not know by seeing what evil shall be upon the earth.

Seven is a perfect number, and eight is super-perfect. What God is saying is, “Give to God perfectly, and give super-perfectly, super-abundantly, because you do not know how severe the trouble will be in your life.” If you intend for God to take care of you in the trouble, start giving to God and those around you. Plant the seed now. Give your life, your finances, your love, your service, everything you can. Give. You do not realize how severe the trouble will be before it is over. If you have planted your seed with God, He will take care of you when the trouble comes! Oh, praise His name!

Ecc1 11:3

If the clouds be full of rain, they empty themselves upon the earth: and if the tree fall toward the south, or toward the north, in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be. (KJV)

Ecclesiastes 11:3 HB

When the dark clouds are full of rain they pour out upon the earth, and when the tree falls toward the south, and when *it falls* toward the north, in the spot where the tree falls, there it shall be.

Here is what this verse is saying: When a cloud drops its rain upon the earth, that cloud has lived out its lifetime. The cloud was born; it delivered its water, it died. It will never rain again. It has done all it will ever do. You are like that cloud. You have only one lifetime. What you give in your lifetime is all that you will ever give. The seed you plant while living your days now, is all the seed you will ever plant in this world.

It is the same with the tree. When the tree falls over dead, it does not plant any more seed. If it falls to the south, it lies there. If it falls to the north, it lies there. When you fall over dead, you plant no more seed.

Once a day has been lived, you never have that day again. Plant all the seed you can today. Today is being used up right now.

Ecc1 11:4-5

4 He that observeth the wind shall not sow; and he that regardeth the clouds shall not reap.

5 As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit, nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God who maketh all. (KJV)

Ecclesiastes 11:4-5 HB

4 He who hedges about the wind shall not sow, and he who sees the dark clouds shall not reap.

5 As you do not know by seeing what *is* the way of the spirit, how the bones *grow* in the womb of her that is being filled *with child*, just so you do not know by seeing the works of God who makes all.

When I was a child, I would say, "Daddy, we don't need to hitch the mules to the wagon and go to the field today. See those clouds. It is going to rain." My father would

430 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

say, "Son, we do not know whether it will rain or not." I would say, "But Daddy, if we go to the field we will have to turn right around and come back." I was a child, and I did not want to go to work. I wanted to play. I looked at that cloud as a good excuse not to work and plant seed that day. My father said, "Son, it may rain, or it may not. We may plant some seed today, and we may not, but we are going to the field and plant seed if we can. If we do not plant these seeds, we will not have a crop to harvest next fall."

My father never regarded the weather. If it looked like it was going to rain, he went right on to the field. Sometimes we had to come running out of the field, because it was raining. Sometimes it would rain very lightly, and my father made us work in the rain. Sometimes it would stay cloudy all day and look like it was going to rain any moment, but never did. We planted much seed while the weather threatened a rain storm, but the storm never came.

Life is like that. Sometime life is very threatening. It appears that a storm of life will break upon us at any moment. Continue to sow your seed. Many of these storms never happen. The Bible says that if you look at the wind, you will never sow. If you look at the clouds, you will never reap. If every time a little wind blows, or a little cloud comes up, you say, "I do not believe I will do anything today", harvest time will come, and you will have no harvest. Sow, regardless of the storms!

Just as, in verse 5, you cannot see the baby taking shape in the womb of the mother, and you cannot see what God is doing, neither can you see what God is doing with that seed of faith that you planted. God Who makes all is making the exact harvest that you need, but it is out of sight to you. Be faithful. You will soon see the beautiful harvest God has made in secret for you.

Ecc1 11:6

In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening withhold not thine hand: for thou knowest not whether shall prosper, either this or that, or whether they both shall be alike good. (KJV)

Ecclesiastes 11:6 HB

Sow your seed in the dawn, and do not put away your hand in the dusk, because you do not know by seeing how this shall be right, this or that, or if they both together *shall be good*.

Sometimes you sow, and you think you will reap a great harvest from this sowing, but you reap very little. Other times you sow, and you think you will reap very little from this, but to your surprise, you reap a great harvest. When you sow, you cannot know which sowing will produce the most for you. What you must do is con-

tinue to sow, regardless of the way it appears.

(2) Sow regardless of the response of people, Mat 13:4-8, 18-23.

Jesus gave the parable of the sower in Matthew 13. A sower went out to sow. Some fell alongside the way, and the birds ate them. Some fell on rock-like ground, rose up quickly, and then quickly died. Some fell in thorn infested ground, came up, and produced very little because of the thorns. Some fell on good ground, and brought a great harvest.

The different soils represent the different conditions of the hearts of men. Some did not respond at all. Others responded quickly, but then quit. Others responded, but difficulties in their lives made them unfruitful. Others responded and brought forth fruit.

Some people respond, and some do not. Therefore, do not allow the response of people to determine if you sow seed or not. You must keep on sowing the seed regardless of what people do. Whether they follow God or not, you follow God. Whether they like what you do or not, you sow the seed. It does not make any difference what they say, what they think, or what they do. You plant your seed! If there is nobody out there in the field working but you, you keep on working. God will see to it that you have a harvest while everybody else is sitting there wondering what happened to theirs.

(3) Sow regardless of the interference of the devil.

In Matthew 13:24-30 Jesus said that a man sowed good seed in his field. At harvest time what did he find? False wheat. The Lord explained that the enemy did this. The disciples ask, "Lord, what are we to do? We planted good seed, and yet we are not receiving the harvest that is due us. What are we to do?" The Lord said, "Plant your seed, and wait for the final harvest. The devil will interfere. You will reap many rewards in this life, but all things will be made right in the next life. You will receive your full reward in eternity. Be faithful in sowing your seed, and leave the results to me. When the harvest comes at the end of the world, I will righteously separate everything, and you will receive a good harvest."

Resist the devil, and defeat him every way you can. You will still find things he has done to you that you did not realize. But remember this: God will reward you many times over for all you spend for Him. He will abundantly reward you for the hurts that the devil causes to your life while you are being faithful to Him. Do not get discouraged because of the false wheat. God will take care of them all. Keep on plant-

ing your good seed regardless of the interference of the devil. God will destroy the works of the devil. God will give you a good harvest, regardless.

5. SOW, COUNTING ON THE POSITIVE FACTORS

(1) Sow with all the sincerity of your soul.

Ps 126:5-6

5 They that sow in tears shall reap in joy.

6 He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him. (KJV)

Psalm 126:5-6 HB

5 They who sow in tears, shall reap with shouting.

6 He walking, walking and weeping, lifting, drawing out and sowing seed, coming, shall come again with shouting, lifting his sheaves.

If you want victory in your life, get in the Bible. Memorize it. Study it. Mark it. Feast upon it every day, with all the sincerity of your soul. That is what gives me power. The more I read, obey, and speak His Word, the stronger I get. Please, get in that Bible and live in it. There is the place of victory!

Notice all the activity and work in Psalm 125:6.

He walking, walking and weeping, lifting, drawing out and sowing seed, coming, shall come again with shouting, lifting his sheaves.

Note all the walking, and weeping, and lifting, and drawing out seed, coming, and coming again with shouting, lifting his sheaves. This person has been busy. If you intend to reap an abundant harvest you have to be busy in seedtime - all the days of your life.

Sow in all the sincerity of your soul. Everybody ought to weep over a lost and dying world. Sow in tears, and reap in joy. Get on your knees and say, "Oh God, save my family." Let God see your tears. Sow with all the sincerity of your soul.

(2) Sow with a view to a blessing.

2 Cor 9:6-7

6 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudg-

ingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver. (KJV)

2 Corinthians 9:6-7 says,

6 And this: the one sowing sparingly, will also reap sparingly, and the one sowing with a view to a blessing will also reap with a view to a blessing.

7 Everyone according as he chooses for himself in his heart, not out of sadness, or out of necessity, because God loves a hilarious giver.

Sow with a view to a big blessing, that is with a view toward being a big blessing to others. If you pinch pennies with God, He will pinch pennies with you. If you want pennies, give pennies. If you want dollars, give dollars. If you need \$100's, give \$100's. If you need abundance from God, give abundantly to God.

God says,

"I am willing to swap everything I have for everything you have." When you were a kid, did you ever say to another kid, "I will swap everything I have in my pocket for everything you have in your pocket?" We sometimes did that. If you did not have much in your pocket, and you thought the other boy had more than you, you would gladly agree to swap. But if you thought you had much more in your pocket than he had in his, you would not do it.

Let me ask you, "How much does God have in His pocket? Would you be willing to swap everything you have in your pocket for everything God has in His?" God makes you that offer. He says, "If you give me everything you have, I will give you everything I have." Jesus did not have to ask anybody but His heavenly Father for anything He needed. He was not poor. He never needed anything that He did not get, because His heavenly Father owns everything. Give yourself and everything you have totally to God, and He will give to you from His abundance. Sow with a view to big blessings.

(3) Look to God for the growth.

1 Cor 3:6-7

6 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.

7 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase. (KJV)

1 Corinthians 3:6-7 HB

6 I planted; Apollos watered, but God made it grow.

7 So then, the one planting is absolutely not anything, and the one watering is absolutely nothing, but God is the one making it grow.

434 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

God gave the growth or increase. You may help someone, and that person may never so much as say, "Thank you." Do not look to that person. Look to God. God will send someone else you never expected to repay you many times over. God will make it grow, and it will come back to you much greater than you sent it out.

(4) Wait for the seed's time.

Gal 6:9

And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. (KJV)

Galatians 6:9 HB

And let us not be weak in beautiful well doing, because in its own time we shall reap, not fainting.

Some of you planted the seed, and said, "I planted the seed, and nothing has happened." Too many of us do not want to wait for its time. Some wait a while and when they see no immediate harvest, they faint. They quit. They give up. They walk off and leave their field. Sometime later someone walks up to this beautiful field and says, "My, what a beautiful harvest. Who does this belong to?" Somebody says, "I do not know? I used to see someone work this, but I have not seen him for many weeks. I do not know what happened to him." There is his harvest. Who will receive the harvest now? He fainted before the seed's time. He fainted before he reaped his harvest.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I do not want you to faint before you reap your harvest. That person quit only a few days before it was harvest time. He fainted before his harvest time. Will you make up your mind right now, God being your helper, that you will wait for your harvest?

"God being my helper, I will be faithful until my harvest time arrives. I will not quit I will reap my harvest."

Praise the Lord!

Chapter 46

LISTENING TO THE RIGHT HEADLINES

Mark 4:24-25

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.

25 For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.(KJV)

Mark 4:24-25 HB

24 And he said to them, Look at what you hear; in what measure you measure, it will be measured to you, and to the ones hearing, it will be added to you,

25 Because whoever has, to him it will be given, and he who absolutely does not have, even what he has will be lifted from him.

One of the most important things you must learn to do, is pick and choose what you see and hear. Jesus warns us that you must choose very deliberately what you hear. You must learn how to focus on the right information, and not focus on the wrong information. Your service to God will be limited by your ability to do this. There is no limit to the things out there to see and hear. If you see and hear everything that the world sends your direction, you will be ruined. You must shut out what the world, the flesh, and the devil want you to see and hear. You must see and hear what God wants you to see and hear.

Place this standard up against everything that is being broadcast in your direction. If it is not information that will make you a better servant of God, you must immediately tune it out. If you do not learn to listen in this way, gradually you lose the ability to choose what is good for you. Before long your life is a slough of despair. There is an abundance of information being broadcasts on God's airwaves twenty-four hours a day that will fill you with His abundance beyond your greatest dreams. There is also a flood of information being broadcasts twenty-four hours a day that will make you poor beyond your wildest nightmares.

Go back with me to Rome in the days of Christ.

For five hundred years [before A.D. 28] the Domitii Ahenobarbi family was famous, or notorious, in Rome. They were called Ahenobarbi because of the bronze beards on the men in the family. In 28 Enaeus Domitius Ahenobarbus married Agrippina, the niece of Claudius Caesar. On December 15, A.D. 37, a male child was born to them. At his birth, friends congratulated them on the birth of their child. Enaeus Domitius Ahenobarbus publicly declared to all that any offspring born to him and Agrippina would prove abominable and disastrous to the public good. Whether he was serious or spoke in jest, no one knows, but that child's name was Lucius Domitius Nero. His thoughts were spoken into words, and became a recorded historical reality. He became the infamous Emperor Nero.

When Lucius Domitius Nero was two years old his mother, Agrippina, was banished from Rome because of government intrigue. When Nero was three he lost his father, Enaeus Ahenobarbus, and was robbed of his royal estates by the greed of Caius. The child was cared for by others, but lost his position in the Royal family. A few years later things changed, his mother returned, and his royal estates were restored.

In A.D. 54, at a royal banquet the notorious Locusta, under the instructions of Agrippina, put poison in a dish of mushrooms which Emperor Claudius Caesar ate. When it was obvious that the emperor was ill, Agrippina's physician, Xenophon, thrust a poisoned feather down his throat under the pretense of inducing vomiting. Thus, Claudius Caesar died, and Agrippina placed her 17 year old son on the throne of the empire.

He married Octavia, niece of Claudius Caesar, and his mother ran the empire. Regularly, in the evenings, Nero disguised himself, and visited the houses of prostitution. Even in his twenties, he ran with street gangs of young men who went about the city, catching young boys or girls, stripping them naked, sexually violating them, and sometimes leaving them dead. In his early twenties he began to take control of the empire from his mother, which she did not like. She schemed to bring Britannicus, Claudius Caesar's son, to the throne. Nero immediately poisoned him.

Nero fell in love with Poppaea Sabina, and proceeded to try to divorce Octavia. His mother opposed this. Nero arranged for his mother to take a ship. The captain agreed to sink the ship, and drown her. It failed, and she swam ashore. When Nero heard she was alive, he sent men to stab her to death. They left her dead body naked for Nero to see. As he looked at the dead nude body of his mother, he said, "I had not

realized I had such a beautiful mother.”

Nero was a singer, one of the Rock stars of his day. He was an actor, an instrumentalist, and a poet.

During all this intrigue, A. D. 61, an unusual preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ was brought to Rome for trial. He was placed in his own hired house, under guard, to await trial. [“His own hired house,” which means he had money.]

Nero eventually succeeded in divorcing Octavia. He hired Anicetus, who had killed his mother, to confess adultery with Octavia, and implicate her in a plot to overthrow the emperor. Octavia was exiled to Pandateria, where government agents beheaded her. Octavia was 22 years old. This happened in A.D. 62.

It was at this same time that the head of the Praetorian Guard, Burrus, died. He was replaced with Tigellinus, who took the Gospel Preacher out of his own hired house, and placed him in a Roman Cell.

Nero built himself a Golden House. It had in front of it a colossus 120 feet tall with a likeness of Nero’s head at the top of it. It had a halo of sun rays making him the god Phoebus Apollo. He was twenty-five years old. His face and stomach were swollen from a degenerate life. His arms were weak and skinny, his skin was blotched, his hair yellow, and his eyes bloodshot. He was only 25.

He was spending the empire into bankruptcy. He devalued the gold and silver coins. When he ran out of money completely, he instructed his attorney general, Tigellinus, to plant false evidence, and convict wealthy nobles of treason. They were then executed, and their wealth taken to keep the empire financed.

For some reason, we do not know why, except the providence and power of God, this Gospel Preacher was released from prison in A.D. 63. He went to Spain among other places. He still had money to travel and do anything he wanted to do. He never wrote begging letters to his friends. In fact he never raised money for himself. He raised money for the poor on occasions. He refused to allow some Christians to give to him. He allowed only mature Christians who understood God’s laws of prosperity to give to him.

On July 18, 64 A.D. a fire broke out in the Circus Maximus. Rome burned for six days. Many people blamed Nero. According to the Roman historian, Tacitus, Nero sought for some group to blame, and blamed the Christians. The senate and the people were worked into a frenzy. They said the gods had caused Rome to be burned because

438 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

the Romans allowed the Christians to live. So, Christians were arrested and executed. Some were placed in skins of wild beasts, and torn by the dogs. Others were crucified. Others were burned as torches to light the city at night.

In A.D. 65 Nero's wife Poppaea Sabina died in advanced pregnancy, because Nero had kicked her in the stomach when she reproached him for coming home late from the races. In A.D. 66 this Gospel Preacher was arrested for preaching a religion without a permit, and brought again to Rome. In 68 A.D. he was tried and found guilty of practicing a religion that was not licensed by the state. He was beheaded on the Ostian Way outside of Rome. No one knows for sure where he was buried.

From March through July of 68 the empire was seething with rebellion. Galba with part of the armies loyal to him was entering Rome to become the emperor. Nymphidius Sabinus, one of the Praetorian Guard, won over the rest of the guards for Galba. He persuaded Nero to retreat outside the city. He told the guard that Nero had deserted them. When Nero knew he had lost he put poison in a box, and went to the Tiber River. He tried to decide whether to poison himself or drown himself. His courage failed him. He spent the night in the basement of a friend's house.

The next morning when the man of the house brought him word that the senate had condemned him to die after the ancient manner of execution, he asked what that was. "You are to be stripped naked, fastened to a post with a fork through your neck, and beaten until dead." Nero put a knife to his throat, and tried to kill himself. His secretary, Epaphroditus, had to finish killing him. He was buried in the vaults of the Domitii family.

We have visited the dark, gloomy, abominable, disastrous world of Nero and Rome. We have seen the horrible headlines. We have seen the bad reality of the times. What you have read thus far is the reports you would have read in the newspapers of that day if they had been operated as ours are today.

Let us visit the world of that Christian Gospel Preacher. Let us see what kind of world he lived in. What shall we hear from him? What shall we feel when we walk into his presence.

OH YES, BY THE WAY, HIS NAME IS SAUL OF TARSUS, PAUL THE APOSTLE.

We walk right past the guards. They cannot see us. Of course in our imaginations we can go anywhere, and do anything that is good.

Paul is sitting on the floor with a piece of board to put his papyrus on. He is allowed to have pen, ink, and papyrus. He is writing.

“Hello Paul. Wasn't it awful that Burrus, the head of the guard, was replaced by Tigellinus, and you had to be moved here.”

Paul answered, “Oh brethren, that is not important. Let me share with you what I am writing to the Ephesians. I just saw it this morning. Close your eyes, and listen.

“Blessed is the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the one who blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenlies in Christ,

Just as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, for us to be holy and without blemish in front of his face in love,

Predestinating us into adoption through Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good thinking of his will,

To *the* praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has graced us in the beloved,

In whom we have the redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of transgressions, according to the riches of his grace,

Which he has caused to super-abounded to us in all wisdom, and *in the* exercise of our mind,

Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good thinking which he placed beforehand in himself,

That in the stewardship of the fullness of times he might sum up all things in Christ, both those in the heavens, and those upon earth, in him,

In whom also we have been allotted an inheritance, being predestinated according to the placing beforehand of the one supernaturally working all things according to the will of his will,

For us to be to the praise of his glory, who in advance hoped in Christ,

In whom you also, having heard the word of truth, the good news of your salvation, in whom also believing, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise,

Who is the security payment of our inheritance into the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of his glory.

Therefore I also, hearing of your faith in the Lord Jesus and love to all the saints, Absolutely do not stop giving thanks for you, making mention of you upon my prayers,

That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you a spirit of wisdom and revelation in full knowledge of him,

The eyes of your mind having been enlightened, for you to know what is the hope

of his calling, and what *are* the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,
And what is the surpassing greatness of his power to us, those believing according
to the supernatural working of the might of his strength,
Which he supernaturally worked in Christ, raising him out of the dead, and he
seated him in his right hand in the heavenlies,
Far above all head rule, and authority, and power, and lordship, and every name
being named, absolutely not only in this age, but also in the one about to be,
And has arranged all things under his feet, and gave him *who is* head over all to
the church,
Who is his body, the fullness of the one filling all in all.”

We reply, “Well, yes Paul, but did you know that Nero is filling the whole em-
pire with inflation, and every evil work?”

Paul continues as though he did not hear us,
“And you being dead in transgressions and sins,
In which you at some time walked according to the age of this world, according to
the first in rank of the authority of the air, the spirit now supernaturally working in
the children who are unconvinced,
In whom also we all conducted ourselves around for some time in the longings of
our flesh, doing the things willed by the flesh and of the exercise of the mind, and
were by nature the children of wrath, as also the rest.
And God, being rich in mercy, through his much love with which he loved us,
Also our being dead by transgressions, he has made us alive together with Christ
- by grace you are saved -
And has raised us up together, and seated us together in the heavenlies in Christ
Jesus,
That he might show in the ages coming on the surpassing riches of his grace in
moral excellence upon us in Christ Jesus,
Because by grace you are saved, through faith, and that absolutely not out of
yourselves; *it is* the gift of God,
Absolutely not out of works, so that no one should boast,
Because we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus upon inherent good
works, which God has prepared beforehand so that we should walk in them.”

We protest, “But Paul, our Roman citizenship doesn’t mean anything if we can
be thrown in jail any time Caesar decides.”

Paul:
“Brethren, my being here has a purpose. God called me to share the gospel with
the other races, and kings, and governors. I will be out soon. But you cannot imagine

what God is doing for me and all those I contact while in here. Brethren, the angels are gazing in on us right now. They are amazed at God's salvation which they will never be able to experience. Do not faint at my tribulation. It is for your good that I am here. I want Christ to dwell fully in your hearts by faith. Remember, He is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that you ask or exercise your mind upon, depending on how you allow his power to work in you. Oh, unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen."

"But Paul," we say, "you are a prisoner, under the most degenerate man the world has ever known."

Paul, "Ah, brethren. I am not Nero's prisoner. I am a prisoner of the Lord. As one whom the Lord has taken captive, I beg you stay in unity with the Lord and one another. The Lord died and rose again to pour out gifts upon men— apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers - to serve the body of Christ and perfect the body—until we all are completely made like Him. Right now, put off your old person, your old imaginations. Put on the new person, the new way of thinking. Walk in love, as Christ loved us and gave himself for us. Do not listen to their filthy conversations. Do not get down in the gutter with them. Rise above them. Be filled with the Spirit, speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, making melody in your hearts to the Lord."

We respond, "But Paul, how can you talk like that, when the world is in such a terrible condition?"

Paul, "Ah brothers and sisters. Don't think that way. Think about your wives, your husbands, your children. Do not worry about a world system that is fast fading away. Concentrate on making heaven on earth for your family. Take care of your wife, your husband, your children. Put on the whole armor of God. The girdle of truth. The breastplate of righteousness. The sandals of the gospel of peace. The shield of faith. The helmet of salvation. The sword of the Spirit. And prayer, much prayer. Be strong in the Lord and the power of his might. Pray for me brethren, that I may be able to always have the right words at the right place. I am sorry brethren, but that is all the time I have now. I must also write the Philippians. Epaphroditus, just brought me an offering from Philippi yesterday. I am impelled by the Spirit to write them. They are very close to my heart. Come back tomorrow and I will share with you whatever the Spirit gives me."

We walk away, sadly shaking our heads. Poor Paul, he is in another world. Oh, if he would only read this morning's headlines, and come back to reality! The next morning we walk into the cell. Paul does not seem to notice us. He seems to be in some

442 Equipping Pastors To Be Like The Head Shepherd, The Lord Jesus

kind of ecstasy. We overheard a guard say, “You know, that makes three days that he has taken nothing but water.” We are sure that such fanaticism has affected his mind. As we enter the cell we see some of Paul’s personal things lying on the floor by him, personal gifts Epaphroditus brought from the Philippians, as well as a good sack of money.

“Hello Paul,” we greet him. “Are you all right?”

Paul, **“Am I alright. Praise the Lord. When we went to the court hearing this morning, various people were witnessing to others about Jesus Christ. Some of the guards even whispered to me that they were Christians now because of my joy in prison. Some people were even arguing about Jesus. Some were trying to make the word Christian more obnoxious, trying to add to my burden. I just said, ‘Praise the Lord. The Name of Jesus is getting out.’”**

“But Paul you may die soon,” we say.

Paul, **“That is no concern to me. I am already in a strait between two, having a desire to depart and be with the Lord which is far better, but I know I will abide in the flesh some time yet, because you need me. I have to teach you how to think before I leave.”**

We say, “But Paul, how can you keep your mind on the Lord, when all these horrible things are taking place. These days are awful. You must come down from your fantasies and face reality.”

Paul, **“If *there is* therefore any comfort in Christ, if any consolation of love, if any partnership of the Spirit, if any *inside tendernesses*, and pities,**

Fulfill my joy, that you exercise same mindedness, having the same love, *your* souls together, exercising one mind,

Nothing according to self-aggrandizing intrigue or vainglory, but in humility of mind govern holding one another above yourselves.

Each one not *attentively* scoping the things of himself, but also each one *attentively scoping* the things of others;

Therefore exercise this mind in yourself, which *was* also in Christ Jesus,

Who, existing in the shape of God, governed *it* absolutely not something seized to be equal with God,

But emptied himself, taking the shape of a servant, and became in the likeness of men;

And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, becoming obedient as far as death, even *the* death of the cross.

Therefore God also exalted him to the highest position, and graced to him a name

above every name,

That in the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of heavenly things, and earthly things, and under the earth things,

And every tongue should acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”

Paul continues, **“Do not worry about Caesar. Get your mind on Jesus. Humble yourself, and let God exalt you! Brethren, rejoice in the Lord. I have counted all things loss for Christ. My total ambition is to have the total perfection of being absolutely filled with his resurrection life. I press toward the mark of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. I have not reached it yet, but I am not stopping until I do. I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me, and my God shall supply all my needs according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus. I have to go now. Salute the saints for me. The saints here salute you, especially the saints of Caesar’s household!”**

As we leave, we exclaim, “What did he say? Saints in Nero’s family. Wow! I did not know that! You know, I guess we don’t have the whole picture. I guess we have been making the bad reality big, and the good reality little. You know, I wonder if we have been listening to the wrong headlines?”

Between A.D. 61 and A.D. 63 Saint Paul wrote Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, and Philemon. If you read these letters with the memories of the headlines I have described in the life of Nero, you will realize Paul is listening to a different set of headlines from what the world is hearing. During 66 to 68 when he was back in prison, he wrote 1 and 2 Timothy, Titus, and Hebrews. Again, by reading Paul’s letters you would think he lived in a different world at a different time and place.

In the second letter to Timothy he wrote:

“I am now ready to be poured out as an offering, and the time of my departure stands upon me.

I have fought a beautifully good fight; I have finished the race; I have kept the faith;

Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give over to me in that day, and absolutely not to me only, but also to all those having loved his appearing.

Make earnest speed to come to me shortly,

Because Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia.

Only Luke is with me. Taking Mark, bring *him* with you, because he is useful to me for ministry.

And I have set apart and sent Tychicus to Ephesus.

The cloak I left in Troas with Carpus, coming, bring, and the scrolls, particularly the parchments.

Alexander, the coppersmith, showed me much evil; the Lord reward him according to his works,

From whom you also keep yourself, because he has greatly stood against our words.

In my first defense absolutely no one was alongside of me, but all forsook me; may it not be calculated against them.

But the Lord stood alongside of me, and empowered me, that through me the preaching of the gospel might be fully carried out, and that all the races might hear, and I was delivered out of *the* mouth of *the* lion.

And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and will save me into his heavenly kingdom, to whom *be* the glory forever and ever. Amen.”

I believe he wanted the books and parchments for that last book he knew he had to write. As he faced the last few days in 68 before execution, his heart went back to his Hebrew roots. The passions of his soul reached to his people whom he knew were as blind as he used to be. He knew they hated him, but he understood. He had done the same thing. But he must write a final letter that would circulate among the Hebrew believers, especially those on the verge of turning back. He hoped that even many unbelieving Jews would read it and come to Christ. Because he loved his people more than himself, he did not sign his name to it nor identify himself. He humbled himself right out of the picture, so that Christ could be exalted in more Hebrew hearts.

He could do this because he had been listening to the right headlines.

Which set of headlines do you read? The ones in the daily newspaper in your part of the world, or the ones written in the Word of God? What pictures do you see? In what world do you live? What are the sounds you hear? There is the bad reality. You can make it as big as you want to make it, and ruin your life. The bad reality is coming to you in the world's news constantly, newspapers, radio, television, gossip, and all worldly sources.

There is the good reality. The good reality is in the Word of God and in the voice of the Holy Spirit in your heart. You can make it as big as you want to make it, and deliver your life. You can see and hear poverty and defeat if you want to, or you can hear victory and abundance if you want to.

**You have to make a deliberate choice,
and put it into practice! Now!**

**I wonder what headlines you are hearing now,
and what headlines you will hear tomorrow?**

SPECIAL NOTE: This message is not your normal message format. It is not the kind of message you can take and expound from general knowledge. When I preached this message I memorized it word for word in order to maintain an uninterrupted presentation.

You may use this message in whatever way you feel led. If you want to, you can simply take the entire copy to the pulpit with you and read it word for word. If you practice reading it, and learn it real good, you can read it effectively and dramatically and still have a wonderful effect on your hearers. God bless you in whatever way you are led to use these materials for the glory of God!

SPECIAL NOTE:

When Jonathan Edwards during the Colonial days of American history preached the sermon, "Sinners In The Hands Of An Angry God," he read it word for word as a university professor would read a lecture, but the Holy Spirit brought the people's hearts under such conviction that they literally held to the back of the seat in front of them to keep from falling into hell. Jonathan Edwards was so formal in his presentation that at one point he asked the people to please quieten the weeping and wailing so he could continue reading his message. That was an unusual occurrence, but God used the reading of that sermon to begin the Great Awakening of the mid 1700s.

End of

The Pastor's Manual

Certificate of Pastoral Ministry

Upon completion of *The Heritage Bible Pastor's Manual* you will be awarded a *Certificate of Pastoral Ministry*. Simply complete the **Certificate Request Form** by going to <http://www.cathedraluniversity.com/pastorsmanual/index.asp> (copy and paste this address or simply go to www.cathedraluniversity.com and click on the picture of the Certificate and it will lead you to the **Request Form**).

Or write: The Cathedral University, 5918 Shenandoah Ave, Los Angeles, CA 90056 with an assertion that you have completed the study of **The Pastor's Manual**, including **your name and address**, and you will receive a beautiful eight and one-half by eleven inch **Certificate** suitable for framing.
The Cathedral University, Gwin Turner, President

